BBC BOOKS

The Sky at Night

Answers to Questions from Across the *Universe*

PATRICK MOORE
& CHRIS NORTH

Contents

Cover
About the Book
About the Author
Title Page
Foreword
Introduction

Observing
Naked-eye Observing
Telescopes
Astrophotography
Light Pollution
Radio Astronomy
The Amateur Scientist
Past and Future Skies

The Moon
Observations
Orbit and Tides
Eclipses
Formation and Impacts
Mysteries

The Solar System
Orbits and Rotations
The Sun
Planet Earth
Mercury, Venus and Mars
Jupiter
Saturn
The Outer Solar System
Asteroids and Comets
Magnetic Fields
From Beginning to End

Stars and Galaxies
Distances
Knowing Our Place
Binary Stars and Star Clusters
Birth, Life and Death

Supernovae
Galaxies

Cosmology
The Expansion of the Universe
The Big Bang and the Early Universe
Dark Matter and Dark Energy
Origin of the Elements
The End of It All
The Multiverse and Extra Dimensions

Other Worlds
Other Planets
Life Elsewhere
Calling All Life Forms…
Closer to Home

Manned Space Exploration
The Story So Far
The View From Above
The International Space Station
Dangers of Space Travel
The Foreseeable Future
A Moon Base
Living on Mars
Worlds Apart
The Distant Future

Space Missions
Space Navigation
Rockets and Propulsion Systems
Solar System Exploration

The Bizarre and Unexplained
Relativity and the Speed of Light
Gravity
Black Holes
Unexplained Phenomena

Patrick Moore and *The Sky at Night*

Glossary
References
Picture Credits
Index
Acknowledgements
Copyright

About the Book

Celebrating the 55th anniversary of The Sky at Night, this book collects questions sent in by viewers and fans, answered by Sir Patrick Moore and Sky at Night co-presenter Dr Chris North.

With sections on the solar system, cosmology, the bizarre and unexplained, space missions, the Moon, and more, this is an exciting journey into space for the novice astronomer and the lifelong stargazer alike.

Discover how scientists work out the gravity of planets, how we measure the distances to stars and how fast we're moving through space. Find out what the 'Great Attractor' is, what makes planets spherical, and the basic principles of space navigation. Learn how to start observing the sky, what event inspired Patrick to take up astronomy, and just how many of his cats are named after celestial bodies.

From comets to black holes, Orion to eclipses, and Mercury to meteors, The Sky at Night is the ultimate introduction to the wonders and mysteries of the Universe.

About the Author

Sir Patrick Moore, CBE, is a British amateur astronomer, researcher, radio commentator and television presenter, and author of over 70 books on astronomy. He is a former president of the British Astronomical Association, and co-founder and former president of the Society for Popular Astronomy. He is a specialist on observing the Moon, a Fellow of the Royal Society, and is one of Britain's best-loved and most popular television personalities.

Dr Chris North is an academic researcher at Cardiff University's School of Physics and Astronomy. His research primarily involves the design, build and operation of astronomical telescopes and instruments, though he also has a strong involvement in public outreach and education. He has worked on the Planck Satellite and the Herschel Space Observatory, and is one of the team behind Chromoscope, a popular online astronomy visualisation tool.

The Sky at Night

PATRICK MOORE
& CHRIS NORTH

BBC
BOOKS

Foreword

The Sky at Night is the world's longest-running programme with the same presenter. Every month, Sir Patrick Moore continues to extend this unique record, and I very much doubt he will ever be beaten by anyone else. The reason for *The Sky at Night*'s success is certainly Sir Patrick himself and the awesome subject that he so enthusiastically communicates.

The first programme was aired on 24 April 1957 and helped usher in the space race. Since then every possible aspect of astronomy, from comets to quasars, has been covered. Sir Patrick's good sense of humour helped him report on some unusual stories too, such as UFOs and little green men. Sir Patrick has always maintained that if an alien arrived in his garden, he would invite him into his study, sit him down and offer him a gin and tonic; a possibility I have never ruled out.

For the past ten years, Sir Patrick has invited the BBC into his home to film *The Sky at Night*. Transforming his study into the programme set you see on TV every month is nerve-wracking. There are piles of precious documents and manuscripts, not forgetting the multitude of remote controllers and spectacles. It is organised chaos and, unfortunately, it is my job to see it is all put back in the 'right' place.

Working on such a long-running programme, with such a rich heritage, has meant that milestones are being reached all the time. It seems only yesterday we celebrated fifty years of *The Sky at Night* with an edition titled 'Time Lord'. We went back in time and visited the set of the first programme, where we met a young Patrick, played by the impressionist Jon Culshaw. We also went forward in time to join Brian May, the Queen guitarist and doctor of astronomy, in his Martian observatory on top of Olympus Mons, while fellow presenter and leading astronomer Chris Lintott played cricket in a spacesuit. As I remember it, Chris blamed the thin Martian atmosphere for affecting his spin.

In 2011, *The Sky at Night* reached another landmark – its 700th programme. I have two memories from this unique show: Brian May and the Astronomer Royal Martin Rees passing each other behind the cameras, with the latter commenting he thought Brian looked just like Sir Isaac Newton; and Patrick reminiscing with 'Patrick' *c*.1982, aka Jon Culshaw. It was hard to know which Patrick to look at.

Now we are celebrating the 55th anniversary of *The Sky at Night*, and my tenth year of making the programme. It's been a pleasure, a privilege and an honour to work with such an exceptional presenter and on such a unique programme. I have many wonderful memories and look forward to gathering many more.

Jane Fletcher
Series Producer, *The Sky at Night*

Introduction

THIS BOOK BEGAN with the 700th *Sky at Night* programme – transmitted more than half a century after the first edition was broadcast back in 1957. We called for questions from viewers about things they particularly wanted to know, and the response was quite overwhelming. We had hundreds upon hundreds of questions, and we realised that put together they would make an excellent book.

Questions have been sent in by serious astronomers, by those who are just starting out in stargazing, and by those who are interested in the Universe at large. As ever, some of the best questions have come in from the younger viewers. The questions are from all over the UK, from across Europe – Ireland, France, the Netherlands, Greece – and also from Canada, the USA, even Australia. Luckily, most of them arrived on our desks in English!

When it came to answering the questions there were certain things we had to bear in mind. One of us (Chris) is a professional astronomer and cosmologist, while the other (Patrick) is an amateur whose expertise is the Moon and so would stay near home! At least it means our outlooks are slightly different. The first step was to take the questions and divide them into convenient groups, which was done by Chris. The next step was to work out who was going to answer which! Obviously, all the cosmological and technical questions were given to Chris, leaving Patrick with the less technical questions on the Solar System and the Moon. We hope we have achieved the right balance – at least you have plenty of choice.

Since the questioners have a wide range of backgrounds, the answers necessarily assume a range of pre-existing knowledge. For every question that is detailed and complex, there is another that seems much more basic. But one thing is certain – the more basic questions can in fact have the most complex answers. We have avoided mathematical formulae, as that takes us into a different realm, and we didn't feel it had any place here. This is a book we hope can be picked up, read and enjoyed by everybody.

When we were writing the book, we realised we were producing something that was in some senses rather new, and we have tried to include as many of the up-to-date results as possible, while acknowledging that astronomy is a very rapidly moving field. We hope that you will like the result. If not, let us know and we will try again!

Best wishes

Patrick and Chris

A number of different units are used to describe distances in this book, and also in astronomy in general. Here is a very brief conversion guide:

1 km = 0.621 miles

1 mile = 1.61 km

1 astronomical unit = 150,000,000 km (93,000,000 miles) [the distance from the Earth to the Sun]

1 light year = 9,460,000,000,000 km (5,880,000,000,000 miles) [the distance light travels in a year]

And finally, where we use the word ‘billion’, we assume its modern value of 1 thousand million (1,000,000,000).

Patrick with his 15” reflector, with which he mapped the Moon.

Observing

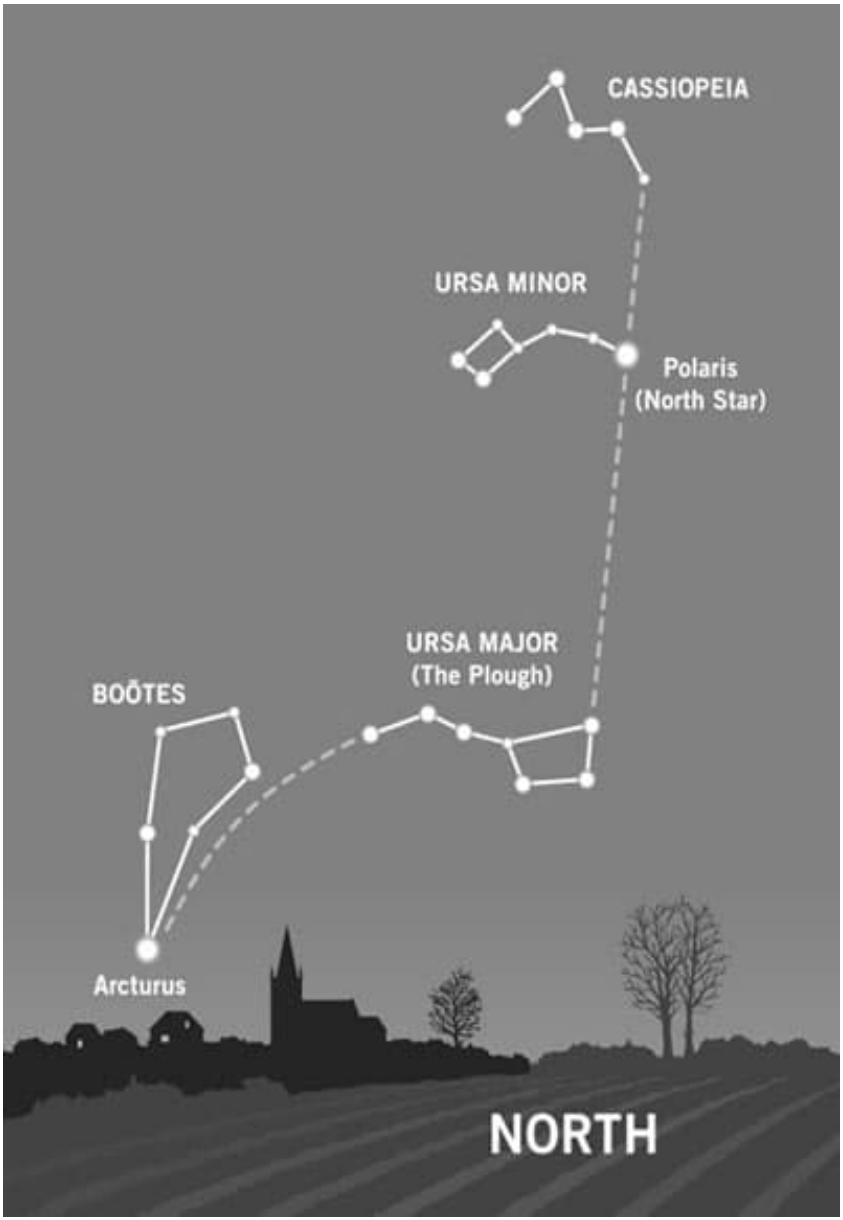
Naked-eye Observing

To someone who is much younger than *The Sky at Night*, how would you advise getting into amateur astronomy?

Rufus Segar (Worcestershire)

I [PM] BEGAN by reading a few very elementary books, getting the main principles into my head. I then went outdoors on a clear night and looked up at the stars. There seemed to be so many of them I did not know how to make a start on sorting them out. I always remember that the stars are so far away that their movements compared to each other are so slow they cannot be noticed over periods of many lifetimes. Consider the seven stars which make up the famous pattern called the Great Bear, or the Plough (or, in America, the Big Dipper). These stars always seem to stay in the same relative positions and so the pattern does not alter. Also, from latitudes such as Britain the Great Bear never sets.

My next step would be to take an elementary star map and start using the Great Bear as a 'pointer'. For example, the two end stars in the pattern point upwards to the North Pole of the sky, marked very closely by the star Polaris in the constellation of the Little Bear. At the other end of the Great Bear pattern, the three stars point downwards to a very brilliant star – orange in colour – which we call Arcturus in the constellation of the Boötes the Herdsman. You can see the way in which I am working, using the patterns of the constellations to navigate around the sky. In the winter skies there is another easily found constellation, Orion the Hunter, which is also invaluable as a pointer.



The Plough can be used to find stars and constellations all over the sky at all times of the year.

But before long an enthusiast is going to need something more powerful than his or her two eyes. My advice is to buy a pair of binoculars – they do not cost very much and they are of immense interest astronomically. They are able to show you the craters of the Moon, double stars, coloured stars, star clusters and many other

features of the night sky.

Once you become really familiar with the binocular sky, you may start thinking about a telescope. But in my view there is one important act to take before that: join an astronomical society. There is the national British Astronomical Association, but many towns and cities have astronomical societies of their own – for example, here in West Sussex we have the South Downs Astronomical Society which serves Chichester, Bognor Regis and the whole of the surrounding area. By joining a society, not only will you make many new friends, but you will be able to exchange your ideas and observations with other like-minded people.

Another facility we have in Chichester is the South Downs Planetarium. A planetarium is a large dome with a special projector that can show the stars, giving an amazingly realistic impression of the real sky. Quite apart from this, the planetarium can do things which would otherwise mean waiting for a long time. For example, if you want to stay in England and see a total eclipse of the Sun you must wait for around 80 years, but the planetarium can provide one at any moment! There are numerous planetaria in Britain, so I recommend that you visit one.

The Sun is so bright, and yet space itself is really dark. Why is that?

Helen Adams (Southport, Merseyside)

The only way for something to appear light is for it to either emit or reflect light. There is nothing in empty space to do this, and so we see it as dark – essentially just an absence of light. By contrast, the sky is very bright during the day, though this is simply due to the atmosphere scattering light from the Sun.

The fact that space is black was one of the first pieces of evidence for the fact that the Universe does not go on forever unchanging. If that were true, then in any direction we looked we would see a star. Look a little bit off to one side and there would be another star, possibly much further away. Although light travels at a finite (if very fast) speed, if the Universe were infinitely large and had been around in the same state for an infinite amount of time then we would be able to see stars at infinite distances. Such a situation would mean that the entire sky should be bright with the light of distant stars. The fact that the sky is black indicates that there are distances so vast that light has not yet had time to reach us.

This thought, often called ‘Olbers’ Paradox’, is normally attributed to a German astronomer called Heinrich Olbers in 1823, though he was by no means the first or last person to pose such a question. The answer came in the twentieth century with the advent of the Big Bang theory, which introduced an age to the Universe, and therefore a reason why we cannot see an infinite distance in every direction.

When I stand in the UK and face the Sun, it appears to move from my left to my right. If I am standing in Australia, does it go the other way?

Susan Coward (Athens, Greece)

Yes, it does, though only because you would have to face north to see it rather than south. In fact, it is rather disconcerting to observe the sky from further south, as many of the constellations give the impression of moving the wrong way. In fact, one of us [CN] was part of a group of astronomers who drove for half an hour in the wrong direction while in French Guiana, simply because we forgot that the Sun was

then in the north, not the south. There's probably a joke about how many astronomers it takes to navigate by the Sun!

What is the difference, if any, between the night sky observed from the North and South Poles and that from a site on the Equator?

Peter J Wilde (Mansfield, Nottinghamshire)

If you are observing from the North Pole, with the north celestial pole marked by the star Polaris, the Equator in the sky would lie along the horizon. From the South Pole, the south celestial pole would be above you. At either of these positions you can only ever see half the sky, though it would rotate around in a circle. Of course, you would also have much longer nights, lasting for months, and so you would have to wrap up warm! There are a number of telescopes that take advantage of the location of the South Pole to observe particular regions. On the Equator you would, in principle, be able to see the whole sky if you waited long enough.

The stars appear to move differently when seen from different latitudes. For example, from the Equator the constellation of Orion the Hunter would in fact rise vertically in the east, pass right overhead, and set due west. I [PM] can remember standing in Singapore, which is very close to the Equator, and seeing the Great Bear in one half of the sky and the Southern Cross in the other.

Why are there no really bright stars? If you go out on a clear night, there are lots of stars but all roughly the same magnitude to the eye. Logic says there should be some really bright stars that are either so big or so close that they could even be seen during the day.

Danny Sheehan (London)

The eye is a very impressive tool, especially when properly dark-adapted. The faintest stars visible are around 1,000 times fainter than the brightest, though all are very distant. Apart from the Sun, the closest star visible to the naked eye, Alpha Centauri, is around four light years away, but is not the brightest in the sky. That honour falls to Sirius, which is over twice as distant. There are other stars which are far more luminous in their own right, but which are hundreds of light years away and so nowhere near as bright as seen from Earth. All the stars are so very distant that they appear as tiny dots of light, even when viewed through all but the largest telescopes in the world. After all, space is very big, and one light year is around 10 million million kilometres (6 million million miles).

We denote the brightness of stars on a scale called 'magnitude'. This works somewhat like a golfer's handicap, with brighter stars having lower values. Bright stars are magnitude 1, slightly fainter ones are magnitude 2 and so on. Most people can see down to magnitude 6 with the naked eye, and the more powerful telescopes in the world can see down to magnitudes of around 30. The brightest stars can have magnitudes of zero, or even negative values. For example, Sirius is of magnitude -1.5. Some of the planets in our Solar System can be considerably brighter than this simply because they are much closer, though they are simply reflecting the Sun's light. The brightest planet Venus is around magnitude -4, and is visible with the Sun above the horizon, particularly near dawn and dusk. For comparison, on this scale the Sun is magnitude -27!

Just below and to the left of the constellation Orion there is a large star which is flickering brightly. When viewed through binoculars, you can see a kaleidoscope of colours, reds, blues, greens and yellows. Can you let me know what this fantastic sight is?

Susan Thompson (Burnley, Lancashire)

That is Sirius in the Great Dog. It is actually a pure white star, but seen from Britain it is always quite low down and so its light has to come to us through a rather thick layer of atmosphere. The distortions from the atmosphere make it flicker all manner of colours. Go further south to view Sirius and it looks brilliant white.

There is a minor mystery here. Several astronomers from a couple of thousand years ago described Sirius as a red star, but there is no sign of it being red now. I'm sure there is a mistake or mistranslation – stars don't change as quickly as that.

I've often seen the International Space Station with the naked eye as it crosses the night sky. Sometimes it is very spectacular, but how can I observe it at a higher magnification? As it moves so quickly, can its movement be tracked?

Bruce Canning (Cambridge)

The International Space Station is the brightest artificial satellite in the sky, and if the alignment of the solar panels is correct it can be brighter than Venus. It does move rather quickly, however, which means catching it through binoculars or a telescope is very difficult.

The International Space Station being approached by the Japanese HTV supply ship, seen from the ground by an amateur astronomer. Ralf Vandenbergh uses a 10" telescope and an

A pair of large binoculars may give an indication of a somewhat irregular shape, though a telescope would obviously give a better view. The trick with that, though, is to be able to move the telescope quickly enough to track it through the sky. A large field of view is well recommended. Telescopes will not have a default mode to track the Space Station, and I understand that most amateurs who image it do so by moving the telescope manually, rather than by automatically tracking its position. Images of the Space Station from amateur telescopes can be staggeringly detailed, with some showing a Space Shuttle docked!

My father observed what seemed to be a star exploding, not far from the Pole Star. It appeared, to the naked eye, to explode, and then disappear completely. Is this a common occurrence?

Miranda Taylor on behalf of Bryan Winman (Heckfield, Hampshire)

This was almost certainly a meteor coming straight towards you and exploding; it certainly was inside our Solar System and not a star. This can happen sometimes, and I agree it is most confusing.

The only other possibility is that it was some kind of artificial satellite. One family of satellites, called the Iridium satellites, have very reflective, flat surfaces. As they spin they reflect the Sun's rays down on to Earth in a beam a few miles across. These can be brighter than any star or planet for the few seconds that the reflection is directed to your location, though normally the satellites appear much fainter. Since these satellites are in polar orbits, they will appear to pass close to the Pole Star, and there is a chance that such an 'Iridium Flare' could occur nearby.

A cylindrical, green-coloured object was seen travelling fairly fast and not straight or level. It was slower and larger than a meteor. What could this have been?

Brian Cooper (Sheffield)

This sounds an awful lot like a fireball, or perhaps a satellite re-entering the Earth's atmosphere. Such occurrences are uncommon but not unheard of, and there is now a story of a fireball in the news every few months. As low-Earth orbit becomes busier, there will be more satellites in decaying orbits that will eventually re-enter the atmosphere and burn up.

Most of a satellite is destroyed when this happens, though it is possible that some parts would reach the surface. Since much of the Earth is covered in ocean, the majority of these chunks of space debris fall into the sea. If the spacecraft or satellite has the ability to control its trajectory, then the re-entry is designed such that as little as possible hits land.

The colour of the fireball would be due to the chemical composition of whatever is burning. For example, green could indicate copper. Such events are rare and normally very spectacular – you should count yourself lucky!

Telescopes

What is the best telescope for a beginner to start with, and what sort of things can be seen with it?

Peter Isles (Bristol), Sherri Smith (Basildon, Essex), Jos (Dorset), Chris Durkin (Three Legged Cross, Dorset), April Ryder (Shropshire), R Burford (Bath, Somerset), John Kavanagh (Liverpool), Robert Westacott (Ipswich, Suffolk), Roger Creed (Camberley, Surrey), Tom Clarke (Luton), George Salloway (Derby), John Heselden (Wiltshire), Andrew Meredith (Sunderland, Tyne & Wear) and James Davies (Crewe)

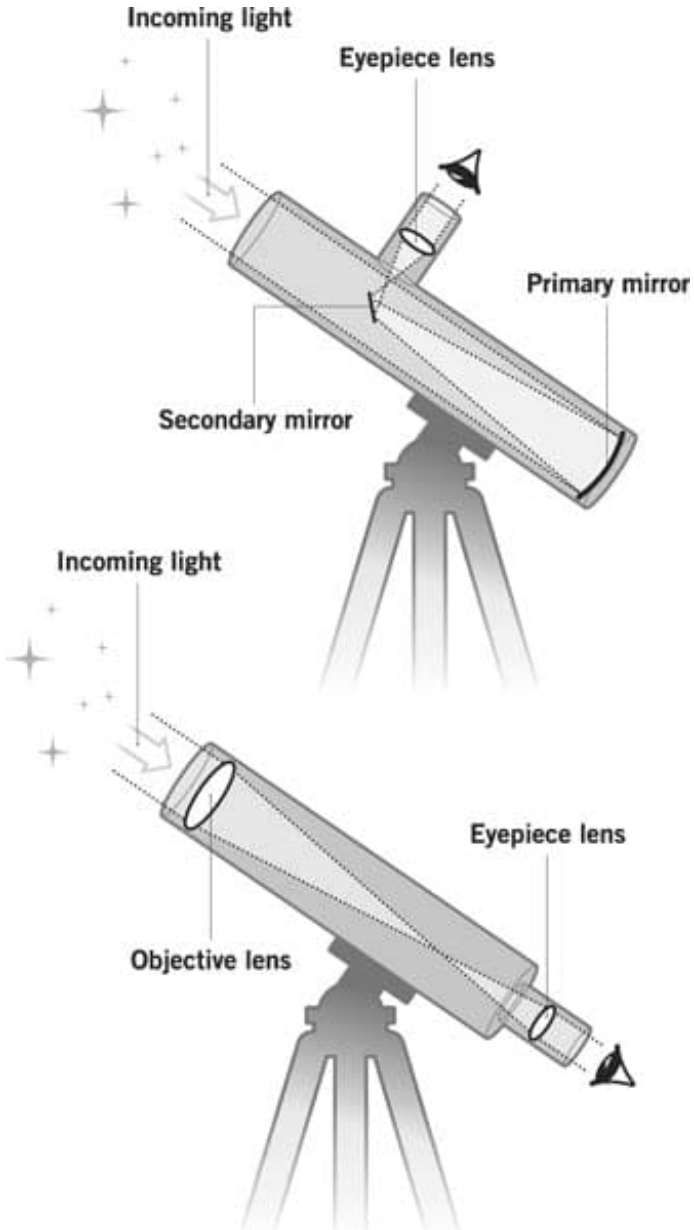
I will start by assuming that our beginner really *is* a complete beginner who knows absolutely nothing about astronomy. I repeat my earlier advice to do some reading and begin learning your way around the sky. An excellent tool for this is a planisphere, which shows what is visible in the sky at any time of the year and at any time of the night. There are a number of excellent pieces of software available as well. I am also very strongly of the opinion that, before considering a telescope, newcomers to astronomy should invest in a pair of binoculars. I have a very good pair of '7 × 50' binoculars (7 is the magnification and 50 is the diameter in millimetres of each of the small telescopes in the pair) – I believe they cost me £4 in a lost property office! Of course, binoculars come in many kinds, but those with bigger apertures and magnification can collect more light and show more detail.

But the questioners asked particularly about telescopes. Astronomical telescopes are of two main types: refractors and reflectors. A refractor collects its light by means of a specially shaped glass lens known as an 'object-glass' or objective lens. The light passes through the object-glass and the various rays are 'bunched up' to bring the light into focus. At the focal point an image is formed and magnified by a second lens known as an eyepiece. The eyepiece is interchangeable, and all telescopes will have several: one for low-power views, one for more detailed views, and possibly one of still higher power to use for special objects on very good nights.

My first telescope was a three-inch refractor, that is to say a refractor with an object-glass three inches across – it served me very well and still does. Obviously a mounting is all important, because a shaky mounting would mean that the object you are looking at would move around and produce a result that is of very little use. The simple tripod of my three inches is quite satisfactory.

I used to say that a refractor with an object-glass less than three inches across would be of very little use, and I advised against buying a telescope costing less than £100. Things are somewhat different now and it is quite possible to buy a useful little refractor at a cost of less than £100. It will show you a tremendous amount of detail on the Moon, it will show you the four main moons (or satellites) of Jupiter, and it will even give you a reasonable view of the lovely rings of Saturn. Of the other planets, Venus shows phases, or changes in shape, in a similar way to the Moon, although not much else can be seen there because the actual surface is hidden by Venus's dense cloudy atmosphere.

Looking out to the stars, your telescope will show you wonders of all kinds. In particular, search out the red stars, the star clusters, and the features we call ‘nebulae’ – Latin for clouds. Some nebulae are really gas clouds in which new stars are being formed. Other ‘nebulae’ are made up of stars and are themselves entire star systems, or galaxies, very similar to our own Milky Way. It will take you a long time to complete even a rough survey of the sky with your newly acquired telescope; there is so much to see! You can of course obtain a more powerful refractor with a larger object-glass, though this takes us away from the role of the absolute beginner. The larger the object-glass, the more light the telescope can collect and the fainter the objects it will show you, but using them takes more experience and it really is much better to start with something more modest.



Reflecting telescopes, *(top)*, use mirrors to focus the light, while refracting telescopes *(bottom)* use lenses. There are many variations on each type.

You could also consider reflecting telescopes. The reflector collects light using a curved mirror. A popular arrangement is the Newtonian telescope, first worked out in 1668 by Sir Isaac Newton. Here the light comes down an open tube and hits the

mirror at the bottom. This curved mirror reflects the light waves back up the tube on to a smaller flat mirror placed at an angle of 45 degrees. This flat mirror directs the rays to the side of the tube where they are brought to a focus, and the resulting image is enlarged by an eyepiece. In a Newtonian reflector you are 'looking into' the side of the telescope rather than along its length. There are many other kinds of reflectors but the Newtonian is the simplest. For example, a popular telescope amongst experienced observers is a Schmidt-Cassegrain telescope, which is more compact than a Newtonian, though considerably more expensive.

Now let us compare the advantages and disadvantages of these two types. A refractor has the advantage that it needs very little maintenance, and if properly cared for will last a lifetime. By comparison, a reflector tends to be much more temperamental. Generally speaking the mirror is made of glass coated with a thin layer of some very reflective material such as silver or aluminium. The mirrors have to be periodically re-coated, and this is not so simple a matter as might be expected. Against all of this, a reflector is generally cheaper than a refractor of an equivalent power in terms of the initial outlay. Today, all the world's largest telescopes are reflectors, though that is largely because it is much easier to make enormous mirrors (some of which are more than 8 metres across!) than it is to make massive lenses.

A four-inch or six-inch reflector will give endless pleasure and many amateurs now favour them. But it is certainly true that you do not need to spend huge amounts of money on elaborate equipment. A small reflector or refractor will give you the best possible start. If you do need any extra help then contact your local astronomical society because you will almost certainly find somebody ready and willing to help you.

How can I get the best possible view of the Messier objects, particularly the galaxies?

Mark Broster (Norwich)

Some of the Messier objects are decidedly elusive, and their shapes are not easy to make out. They were catalogued in the 1770s by the French astronomer Charles Messier, who was actually searching for comets – most of which look like fuzzy patches through a telescope! The Messier catalogue was compiled as a list of objects that were not comets, and most are star clusters, nebulae or galaxies.

Obviously, the larger and more powerful your telescope, the easier it will be to find them. When you have located your object, it is good practice to use 'averted vision', looking away from the actual object and using the most sensitive part of the eye – which is not in the centre. Some of the Messier objects are quite striking, such as the Whirlpool Galaxy (Messier 51), but others are much less so. Make absolutely certain that you have the right identification, and if you have the adequate photographic equipment, take a long-exposure photograph.

Could you explain the anomaly of the Blinking Nebula? I understand it is some kind of optical illusion, but how is the eye 'tricked'?

Kim Robinson (Leicester)

The Blinking Nebula is a planetary nebula, created when a dying star sheds its outer layers. The central star is still visible, and is much brighter than the surrounding

nebulosity. This makes the nebulosity rather hard to see through a small telescope, as the brightness of the star simply overwhelms the eye and prevents it from seeing the more diffuse regions.

To best see the nebula, an observer has to use 'averted vision' – looking slightly away from the star, such that it can be seen in peripheral vision. Without the central star overwhelming the eye's response, the nebulosity reappears. As the eye naturally moves around the field of view of a telescope, the nebulosity appears to blink on and off, hence its name.

This technique of using averted vision is useful in many situations, since the peripheral vision is more suited to seeing fainter objects. The centre of the eye can see in much higher resolution, but is actually somewhat less sensitive.

Is it better viewing the cosmos with two eyes using binoculars or with one eye through a telescope? Are there any binocular professional telescopes out there?

Gavin Hall (East Riding of Yorkshire)

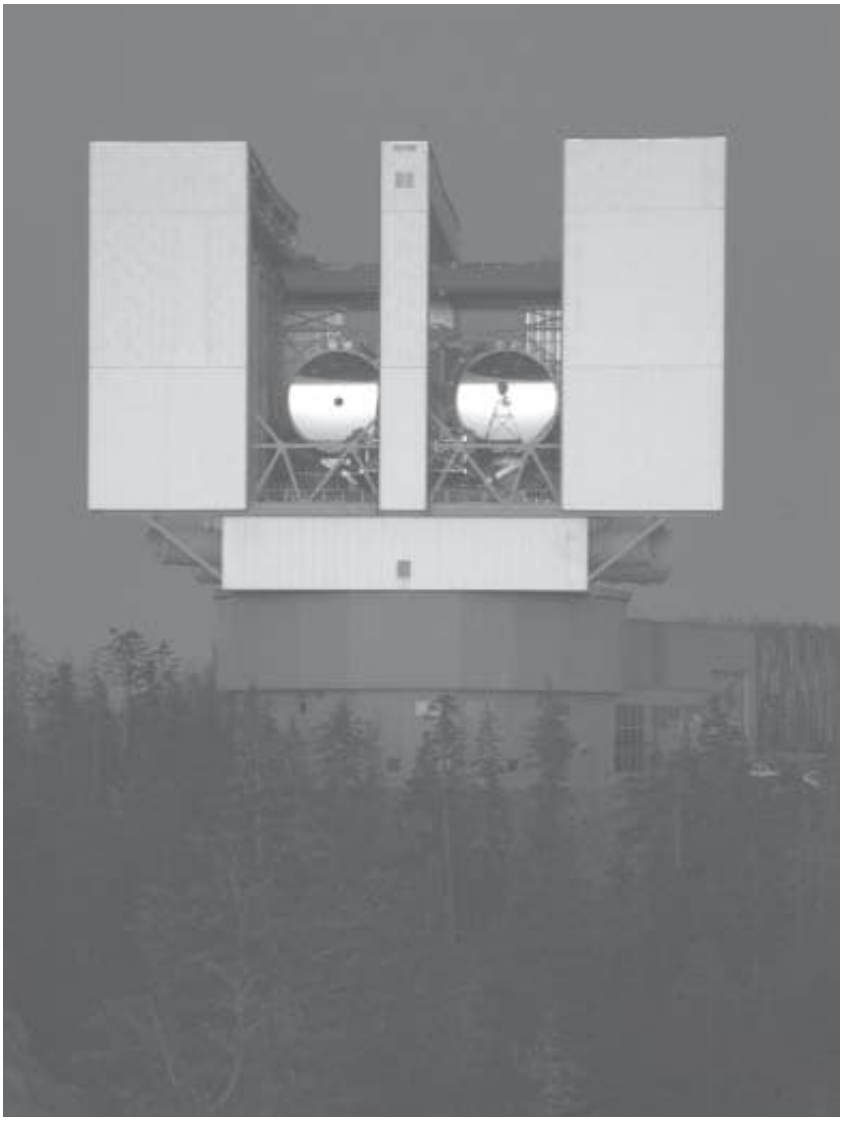
There are a number of commercially available telescopes that make it possible for the observer to use both eyes, though after all this is simply a pair of binoculars. A pair of binoculars consists of two small refractors joined together and capable of being focused either together or separately. It can be easier to observe with both eyes open, but it is much more difficult to put two larger telescopes together and still look through them with both eyes.

Of course there are some very large professional telescopes such as the Large Binocular Telescope, which can provide the resolution of a telescope of twice the diameter of the single one for less than the cost of a mirror twice the size, though the technical details become very complicated. And, since each of the two mirrors is 8.4 metres in diameter, this is certainly leaving the amateur field!

I have a three-inch (75mm) reflector telescope with a few eyepiece lenses, ranging from 20 mm to 4 mm. What can I expect to see with such lowly equipment?

Paul Boswell (Newhaven, East Sussex)

Such equipment is far from lowly, and is what many astronomers start with – both authors of this book in fact started with something very similar! A three-inch telescope is perfectly adequate for seeing a great deal of detail on the Moon, as well as the four largest moons of Jupiter and the rings of Saturn. It is also worth looking out for some of the brighter star clusters, such as the Beehive Cluster in the constellation of Cancer the Crab, the Double Cluster in the constellation of Perseus, or Messier 13 in the constellation of Hercules. These should all be visible through the viewfinder as fuzzy patches, making finding them through the main telescope much easier. And, of course, we must not forget the wonderful Pleiades, also known as the Seven Sisters. It is truly amazing to see those few stars visible with the naked eye turn into the dozens visible through a small telescope.



The Large Binocular Telescope with its twin 8.4-metre mirrors sitting atop Mount Graham in Arizona.

In terms of fainter objects, it should be possible to see the brighter nebulae, such as the Orion Nebula, and even a few galaxies, such as Messier 81, 82 and the Andromeda galaxy M31.

The best way of observing these objects is to start with the lowest-power eyepiece – that is the one with the longest focal length (in this case the 20 mm eyepiece). This will give a wider field of view, which is particularly useful for finding objects, and is generally easier to observe with. When you have found your target, switch to a

lower-power eyepiece, say around 10 mm in focal length, to get a better view of your object. Be careful when changing eyepieces, as it is very easy to move the telescope during the process, and remember that you will need to refocus it. The 4mm eyepiece is really rather powerful, and you should only use this for the best observing conditions, as it will not add anything on most nights – in fact, it might even give the impression of making a fuzzier image.

What are the different eyepieces for, such as the 25mm wide-angle eyepiece?

Graham Hoare (Coventry, West Midlands)

An eyepiece is all-important in an astronomical telescope. Trying to use a good telescope with a poor eyepiece is like trying to play a record on a machine with a poor-quality needle, or watching a film through the bottom of a milk bottle! The strength of the eyepiece depends on its focal length, which is the number associated with the eyepiece, normally given in millimetres. The magnification achieved is the focal length of the primary lens or mirror (for a small telescope this is probably somewhere in the region of one metre, though it depends on the design) divided by the focal length of the eyepiece you are using. The main point here is that one cannot use too powerful an eyepiece with too small a telescope. For example, I have a very fine three-inch refractor that I had when I was a boy and which I still use. Use this with an eyepiece with a power up to 100 and the results are excellent, but if I tried the power of, shall we say, 300, the resulting image would be so faint that it would be useless. Generally, the best maximum power for a telescope is about 50 per inch of aperture, and using a lower power can often give more pleasing results.

Patrick with his 12½" reflecting telescope, which is ideally suited to observations of the Moon and planets.

Is a motor drive on a telescope useful for a novice?

Alan Keys (Brighton, East Sussex)

A motor on a telescope is certainly useful, but it is by no means essential for a beginner.

Some motors only drive one of the telescope axes of motion, and these are for the purposes of keeping the telescope pointed at the same object as the sky rotates (though only if it has an equatorial mount and has been set up correctly). While this is a very useful addition to any telescope, it is far from essential for a beginner. It really is not necessary to buy expensive or elaborate equipment to start observing the skies.

More expensive computerised motors allow the telescope to be pointed at any target in its database. However, I always recommend learning your way around the sky first, otherwise you will find identifications difficult. I compare this to people who have been brought up using a mathematical calculator but have no idea how to carry out manual multiplication and division!

A sketch of Saturn made by Patrick in 1955 using his 12 ½" telescope.

In the twenty-first century, with advances in astrophotography for the amateur, is there still a place for sketching, and can the amateur sketcher still contribute?

Pete Mellor (Saddleworth Moor)

The answer is an emphatic 'Yes'! The sketcher can sometimes come across an unusual feature that the photographer may miss. In particular, the eye is adaptive and can take advantage of the best of the atmospheric conditions, while in contrast a long-exposure photograph will blur the image as the atmosphere fluctuates. Many astrophotographers take black and white images, using different filters to allow the assembly of a colour image. By contrast, the eye can bring out colour in the brighter objects instantly.

Quite above all this, sketching is a very good way to start observing and getting used to the sky. It requires time and patience at the eyepiece to become accustomed to the view, but this makes it an excellent way to become familiar with the sky as seen through the telescope. I suggest that you try it!

When I view images through my telescope, everything appears black and white. Why is it that images from the Hubble Space Telescope are always in glorious colour?

George Brown (Wester Ross, Scotland)

There are several answers to this. First of all, images from Hubble use colour processing, just like almost all astronomical images. Secondly, there is the sensitivity of the eye, or rather the lack of it. Objects seen through a telescope are usually very faint, and the eye is only really capable of seeing faint things in black and white. Mind you, there are some lovely coloured objects in the sky, and my own favourite is the double star Albireo (also called Beta Cygni) which has a golden yellow primary star together with a blue companion. And, of course, Mars is always red while Saturn is yellow.

I'm a Carl Sagan fan, and wondered if it is possible to see the asteroid 2709 Sagan from Earth?

Duncan Borrington-Chance (Bedfordshire)

The asteroid 2709 Sagan orbits the Sun at around twice the distance of the Earth, placing it in the main asteroid belt. Its magnitude is around 13.3, which means that it requires a large telescope to see it. It was discovered in 1982, not by Carl Sagan but by E Bowell of the Lowell Observatory near Flagstaff, Arizona. Its official name is 1982 FH, but it was named in honour of Carl Sagan, one of the leading astronomers of the twentieth century.

Astrophotography

How can I take a photo of stars, given that they move in the night sky?

Mark Bullard (London)

These are easily done with an ordinary camera capable of a long-duration exposure. Of course, the stars will come out as trails across the sky, but the results can be spectacular and the colours of the stars are often brought out very well.

Otherwise, you need a motorised drive to keep your telescope pointed in the same place, and possibly a guide scope to keep the stars in the same position in the image. This needs practice, but it is not very difficult to start getting excellent results. Much of the expertise is spent in processing the image.

Should *The Sky at Night* broadcast another 700 episodes, what photos or images could we expect to see in 53 years' time, and with what sort of clarity?

Jason Eddowes (Manchester)

It is rather difficult to look over half a century ahead. Large amateur telescopes may by then be equipped with adaptive optics, and be able to rival the best professional images of today. From professional telescopes, we may have images of Earth-like planets moving around other stars, and maybe the first stars ever born in the Universe. And, of course, we must remember that we can also expect new results from all parts of the electromagnetic spectrum.

A photograph of star trails taken by Stewart Watt from Thurso Castle over the course of 83 minutes.

Light Pollution

What is the best way to combat light pollution? Are there any tricks?

April Carlucci (London), Paul Foster (Clapham, London), Morgan James Morgan (Twickenham, Middlesex)

Light pollution is an increasing problem. One obvious solution is to take your telescope to a really dark site as far away as possible from artificial lights, but this is not nearly as easy as it used to be and, of course, it means that your telescope has to be portable. If you are limited to towns and cities, you will really have to confine yourself to brighter objects. There are filters which you can put into your telescope either to cut out unwanted light or to allow through only the wavelengths that you want. If you have a bright street light right on the edge of your garden, the best solution may be an air gun, but unfortunately this is illegal and therefore we couldn't possibly encourage or condone it!

I [PM] do, however, know an astronomer in this country who had a bright street light beyond his hedge. One night he went out and painted it green so it gave out almost no light. As far as I am aware the local council has not yet realised that the light gives out nearly no illumination!

Where are the best places around the UK to observe, away from light-polluted areas?

John Royle (Liverpool) and Aiden Stone (Rotherham, South Yorkshire)

There are various areas that are particularly dark, such as Kielder Park in Northumberland, or Galloway in Scotland. There are other isolated areas where there is not much light pollution due to a lack of people, for example one of the Channel Islands, Sark. But all in all, the only real solution for most people is to head for the remote areas where city lights are hidden from view, and this must mean a portable telescope. You may not have to travel far – a few trees or a small hill can be enough to hide the worst of the glare from a town.

I live in an area where light pollution only allows the brightest stars and planets to be seen. If I know my location, and the position of the object in the sky, is there a way of identifying it?

Brian Armstrong (Merseyside)

For the objects that do not move in the sky, a planisphere will provide the information you require, though they can take a little getting used to. For the most part, your location within the UK will not make much difference to what is visible. An easier solution may be one of several pieces of astronomical software. For

example, Stellarium is completely free to download and use and has a very simple interface.

When we are observing at night, we are in the Earth's shadow, but the Sun's rays are also shooting past the Earth in the direction we are looking. Why does this not cause any interference to the night sky?

Michael Bush (Sheffield)

For the main part, there is nothing for the Sun's light to scatter or reflect off, and so we cannot see it. However, there is a way in which it can cause interference, and there is one phenomenon that is always worth looking for. This is called the 'Zodiacal Light', and appears as a faint cone of light seen coming upward from the Sun's position, but when the Sun is below the horizon. It can best be seen after sunset or before sunrise, but the conditions have to be very good as it is very faint. It is due to the Sun's light illuminating very thinly spread particles of dust lying in the main disc of the Solar System.

Even more difficult to see is the Gegenschein, or Counterglow, which appears as a very faint patch of light exactly opposite the Sun in the night sky. It is due to light scattering directly backwards from dust located directly outwards from the Sun with respect to Earth, though I may say that I [PM] have seen it well only two or three times from England!

Radio Astronomy

It is often mentioned that radio telescopes can observe for 24 hours a day, unlike optical telescopes. Why is this so?

Chris Bond (Surrey)

A radio telescope is not affected by scattering or emission by the Earth's atmosphere, and is unaffected by cloud and mist. After all, the main thing that stops optical telescopes observing during the day is the fact that the atmosphere scatters the Sun's light so that it comes from all directions (and, of course, it is sometimes cloudy). There are other problems for radio telescopes, though, such as radio emissions from ground-based sources. For example, many radio telescopes have problems with the signals caused by emissions from mobile phones.

Over the last 50 years, more people have taken up astronomy, and there are many companies building and selling telescopes. Do you think that in the next 50 years there will be companies making radio telescopes for people to buy and set up in their back gardens?

Brian Woosnam (North Wales)

The technology in a lot of radio telescope hardware is much easier to manufacture than that in an optical telescope, but size is a problem. To be effective, the dishes have to be very large. It is possible to buy or construct a small radio telescope for a relatively low cost, and no doubt future companies will find a way around the issue of size. Perhaps in the future there will be a network of amateur radio telescopes working together, much like professional radio telescopes often do today.

The Amateur Scientist

What areas of science can amateur astronomers participate in?

Peter House (Penwortham, Lancashire), Bernard Ingram (Guildford, Surrey), James Brook (Sheffield) and Matthew Porter (Larne, Co Antrim)

Plenty! For example, amateurs are very well equipped to make observations of variable stars, simply because there are so many that the professionals can't observe them all constantly. Amateurs also observe asteroid movements and the surfaces of planets. The clouds on Jupiter and Saturn are always changing, and amateur work is invaluable for monitoring this. It has even been known for amateurs to discover supernovae in other galaxies.

In July 2009, amateur astronomer Anthony Wesley, based in Australia, was the first to observe a new dark spot on Jupiter, which he correctly identified as an impact mark. Amateurs tracked it over the course of days and weeks, and a few observations by the largest telescopes in the world confirmed that it was almost certainly the result of an asteroid striking Jupiter.

How has the role of the amateur astronomer changed over the history of *The Sky at Night*, and how do you envisage it developing over the next 50 years?

Ian Graham (Paris, France) and Martyn Hopkins (Peterborough, Cambridgeshire)

The amateur astronomer is just as important now as he or she was in the 1950s. The rapid development of technology means that amateurs can compete with much of what professional astronomers were doing only a decade or so ago. The average size of amateur telescopes has increased, and I suspect this trend will continue. This will allow the amateurs to see fainter and fainter objects, especially when combined with whatever the future of camera technology has in store for us.

A photo of Jupiter by Anthony Wesley, which was the first discovery of the impact mark from an asteroid.

In another 50 years, perhaps amateurs will be doing serious spectroscopy, detecting the compounds and elements present in space. While this will not be able to compete with professional telescopes, perhaps the spectrographs of the future will have the resolution that normal cameras have now.

But overall the amateur astronomer will probably continue doing what he or she has always done: marvel at the wonders in the sky and continue to observe.

We are looking to establish an observatory in the Falkland Islands. Given its location in the South Atlantic Ocean, what uses can you see for amateur and professional astronomy?

Linda and Duncan Lunan (Glasgow)

As a professional observatory, the Falkland Islands could do little to compete with the tremendous facilities in Chile, just a few thousand miles away, where some of the largest telescopes in the world are located. The Falklands are not particularly high and, being islands, probably do not have astounding observing conditions in terms of professional-quality facilities. The best observatories tend to be at altitudes of at least 2,500 metres (8,000 feet), as this puts them above the worst of the weather.

But as an amateur observatory, the Falklands could be a very useful addition to the worldwide network of amateur telescopes. There are two main advantages to setting up observatories around the globe. Firstly, there is the fact that no single location can see the entire sky well. Over the course of a year from the UK we can see the entirety of the northern sky, but only a fraction of the southern sky. We can never see below 39° south, even from the south coast, and anything below the celestial equator will never rise high above the horizon.

From the Falkland Islands, which are about as far south as the UK is north, the situation would be reversed, with the southern skies easily observable. There are very few observatories that far south, aside from a few professional observatories in Antarctica. An advantage that the Falkland Islands have is their longitude, positioned

close to South America. Apart from the very tip of South America, the only major landmasses that far south are Southern Africa, Australia and New Zealand, although there are a few other islands dotted throughout the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans. This would make an observatory sited there useful for monitoring transient events, that is to say events that change in a matter of hours. If such an event occurs in the southern skies, then having telescopes at a range of longitudes allows it to be monitored continuously. Such events might include strange occurrences in the atmospheres of Jupiter and Saturn or near-Earth asteroids passing by.

Past and Future Skies

How did ancient cultures measure the motions of the stars so accurately, including the precession of the Earth's spin axis?

Ian Downing (London) and Mick Scutt (Elsenham, Hertfordshire)

Some of the most ancient astronomers were the Babylonians and Sumerians, who lived in modern-day Arabia, more than three thousand years ago. The motion of the Sun, Moon and stars would have been known since ancient times, and the constellations around the zodiac were among the first to emerge. They would have known that different patterns of stars were visible at different times, but they would not have known why. It was these cultures who were the first to notice changes. They would have noticed that some of the planets appeared to move among the stars, particularly the brightest planet, Venus. This was known to be visible in the evening or morning, and the periodicity was noticed by the Sumerians. Of course, they didn't associate this with another planet, but with the actions of deities.

The Babylonians were aware of a number of cycles, such as those that govern the appearance of the Moon, and more importantly lunar and solar eclipses. These cycles were passed on to the Ancient Greeks, who were very methodical and logical in their astronomy. The most astonishing astronomical events would have been the eclipses of the Sun and the Moon – in fact many ancient cultures were terrified of them. Due to the different motions of the Sun and Moon around the sky, eclipses seem to be very irregularly spaced, but in fact they repeat themselves over a period of around 18 years. This period, called a Saros cycle, is the time it takes for the geometry of the Sun-Earth-Moon system to return to the same configuration. To take into account the rotation of the Earth, then one needs to use a triple-Saros, which is around 54 years. That means that if you observe an eclipse, then in 19,756 days (or 54 years, 1 month) an almost identical eclipse will be visible from the same place on the Earth.

One of the most fascinating remnants from ancient astronomy is the Antikythera Mechanism, which was built in the first or second century BC. Made from Bronze, it was found in a shipwreck off the coast of the Greek island of Antikythera in 1900. After much study it was realised that a sequence of around 30 very carefully arranged cogs could be used to predict the location of the Sun, Moon and planets on any given date. The makers presumably had no knowledge of the layout of the Solar System, and it was designed based on a geocentric model, but its accuracy is astounding. No similar device has ever been found, and it is essentially the oldest known scientific calculator.

In terms of the motions of the stars themselves, they were in general not measurable in ancient times over the course of a single lifetime. The Sun's position in the sky was well measured, and so the locations of the solstices and equinoxes could be charted. An equinox occurs when the Sun crosses the celestial equator, and its position in the sky was monitored by many ancient astronomers. It was the Greek astronomer Hipparchus who, in the second century BC, noted that the location of the

Sun at equinox had changed relative to the observations of his predecessors. The discovery of the 'precession of the equinoxes', which we now know to be caused by the rotation of the Earth's axis relative to the stars, marked a turning point in precision astronomy, and the ESA satellite *Hipparcos* was named after him – the strange spelling was because it was actually called the High Precision Parallax Collecting Satellite, or HiPParCoS.

Hipparchus took one of the first steps in removing the idea that the Earth was at the centre of all motion. He observed that the Sun moved with a varying speed throughout the year, and computed that the centre of the Sun's motion must be slightly offset from the location of the Earth. It would take over a century before scientists were able to overcome the establishment and overturn the theory that the Earth was at the centre, and establish that it moved in an ellipse around the Sun.

The Babylonians and Ancient Greeks were responsible for the first great leaps in astronomy, measuring the movements of the Sun, Moon and planets. More than two thousand years later, the likes of Nicolaus Copernicus, Tycho Brahe and Johannes Kepler made the next leap, removing the idea that the Earth was at the centre of the Universe. I [CN] would argue that we are now emerging from the third great leap in knowledge of astronomy and cosmology, becoming aware of the true scale of the Universe.

Where is the best place in the UK to see the Northern Lights?

Clive Calow (Dingley, Northamptonshire)

The only place with fairly reliable displays is Scotland. Once north of the border, displays are not uncommon, though there are not nearly so many as you get in northern Norway or Alaska. The main aim is to get somewhere really dark, and there are still places like that in Scotland.

So it's worthwhile keeping a regular watch, but don't be surprised if you have to wait for some time. If you go to a place such as Tromsø, north Norway, then you'll see the Northern Lights on most nights of the year.

How has the sky changed throughout the duration of *The Sky at Night*'s existence? Have any new objects arisen, and have there been any major changes in the position or appearances of stars or other objects in the night sky?

George Kristiansen (Upton, Lincolnshire)

Obviously, the stars and the planets don't change for periods much longer than *The Sky at Night*'s duration. We have had some comets, and one or two bright novae. Otherwise, things are very much as they were.

The most spectacular thing I've seen in *Sky at Night* times was probably the great comet Hale-Bopp, which really was a magnificent sight, and remained a naked-eye object for more than a year. I think we were all sorry when it finally bade us farewell. Never mind, it'll be back in 4,000 years!

Of course, some of the planets are always changing, notably Jupiter and Saturn. Jupiter has shown great disturbances in its belts during the last few years, and there has been a tremendous storm on Saturn. It's worthwhile keeping a constant watch.

Will stargazers of the future see star formations such as the Plough, Orion's Belt and the Eagle Nebula as we see them today?

Alan Cave (Staffordshire)

In the foreseeable future there'll be no detectable change, but of course come back in 10,000 years or longer and you'll see definite changes in the constellations. For example, the Great Bear will be distorted, as two of its stars (Alkaid and Dubhe) are moving through space in an opposite direction to the others. The stars are moving through space so slowly that the changes are very hard to see with the naked eye. Mind you, come back in a million years, and the skies will be very different.

Over time, the constellations will become distorted by the movement of the stars, and new patterns will become apparent. Even nebulae will change, as the stars in their centres form from the gas and dust, though this process takes many millions of years.

If we could go forward in time a billion years, how different would the sky look, and how many of the stars would no longer be in existence?

Stephen Andrews (Leigh, Lancashire)

Go forward as far as that and all the constellations will have changed so much that the sky will be unrecognisable. Moreover, some of our familiar stars will have changed beyond all recognition. Rigel in Orion will certainly have been through the Red Giant stage, and will probably have died in a supernova explosion. The same is true of many of the other massive stars in our galactic neighbourhood, though more stars will have sprung up in other locations around the sky.

If the Solar System were plucked out of the Milky Way and placed intact in an otherwise empty region of space, in what ways would we be poorer or richer?

Brian Wood (Cheltenham)

Well, we'd be very much poorer because we'd only see the bodies of our own Solar System. We could know nothing about the stars. In fact, our knowledge would be limited to a very small region, rather like going to London and looking no further than Victoria Station. It must be remembered that astronomy is one of the oldest sciences, with ancient civilisations continually revising and improving our understanding of the cosmos.

The Moon

Observations

I recall as a child in the late 1970s going to a friend's birthday party and seeing the Moon looking very large in the sky. I remember a lot of people commenting on how unusually big it was. What is the explanation for this optical illusion?

Chris Walling (North Wales)

IN FACT THE low-down Moon looks no larger than the high-up Moon, but it certainly gives that impression. The 'Moon illusion' has been known since very ancient times, and it was described by no less a person than Ptolemy, the greatest of the old observers.

The cause is not as straightforward as might be imagined. Ptolemy's explanation was that when the Moon is low down we are seeing it across 'filled space' and can compare it with objects such as trees and hillocks. When it is high up there is absolutely nothing to compare it with and it does not appear so large.

One of us [PM] once produced a *Sky at Night* television programme about this, together with the late Professor Gregory. On the night of a full moon we went down to Selsey beach armed with a mirror which would show us the image of the Moon. We could tilt the mirror to match the Moon's altitude. The idea was to see whether the low-down Moon looked particularly large. We found that it did, although it was really exactly the same size. We also enlisted the help of various holidaymakers on the beach, and asked them to estimate the size of the full moon by picking up a pebble and seeing how far away it would have to be to match the size of the full moon. Everybody got it wildly wrong – next time the Moon is full try it for yourself, and you will see what I mean.

All in all, Ptolemy's explanation seems to be the correct one. The Moon illusion is very marked, but it is an illusion and nothing more.

What exactly is a 'Blue Moon'?

Paul Duff (London)

There are two answers to this, both quite straightforward. If there are two full moons in a calendar month the second is called a blue moon. This is not unusual; the Moon's synodic period (i.e. the interval between successive full moons) is 28.5 days. If a full moon falls on 1 February during a Leap Year, there is bound to be another before the end of the month 29 days later. Owing to the nature of our calendar, blue moons can also occur during other months.

Why blue? It doesn't look blue! The name is due to the misrepresentation of an article in an American journal, the *Maine Farmers' Almanac* in 1937. Why an article in an obscure periodical became so widespread is not clear – but it did, and is still

being used even today.

Yet one can have real blue moons. On the evening of 26 September 1950 one of us [PM], observing from East Grinstead in Sussex, noted that 'the Moon shone down from a slightly misty sky with a lovely shimmering blueness – like an electric glimmer, utterly unlike anything that I have seen before.' The sight was not confined to East Grinstead; over the next 48 hours people in various parts of the world reported not only blue moons but even blue suns! Giant forest fires were raging in Canada; vast quantities of dust were hurled into the upper atmosphere, and it was this dust that caused the eerie effects. They lasted for almost a week.

Does the distance of the Earth from the Sun vary according to the phase of the Moon?

Matthew Craven (Rochester, England)

There is no direct connection between phase and distance, but of course at New Moon the Moon is on the sunward side of the Earth and it is then slightly closer to the Sun than the Earth is. At Full Moon the Earth is between the Moon and the Sun and is slightly closer to the Sun than the Moon is. But remember, the Moon is only about a quarter of a million miles from the Earth and the mean distance of the Earth from the Sun is 93 million miles, so these effects are not very great.

All kinds of efforts have been made to link the Moon's phases with other phenomena such as weather. I [PM] once carried out a long study trying to see if there were any link between lunar phases and the weather in my home town of Selsey, and I found absolutely nothing. I think it is fair to say that any effects of this kind are negligible.

We always see the same side of the moon, and never the dark side. If this is true, how has the Moon remained in this neutral state over millions of years? Is this coincidence or is there an explanation?

Matthew Craven (Rochester, England)

There is indeed an explanation. It is also important to talk about the Moon's 'dark side'. The Moon takes 27.3 days to go once around the Earth, or more accurately around what we call the 'barycentre', the centre of gravity of the Earth-Moon system but, as this barycentre lies well inside the Earth, the simple statement 'the Moon goes around the Earth' is good for most purposes. The Moon spins on its axis in exactly the same time; a 'day' on the Moon is 27.3 times as long as ours. The Moon keeps the same face to the Earth, but not to the Sun.

The reason is tidal friction. In the early history of the Solar System, the Moon was much closer to the Earth than it is now, but it has slowly receded. It has been in the state for a very long time – before the space age, we knew nothing about the far side of the Moon, which is always turned away from us. When it became possible to send rockets around the Moon, however, we were able to obtain information about the far side, which turned out to be just as mountainous, cratered and lifeless as the side we have always known.

All the major satellites for the other planets behave in the same way, with 'captured' or 'synchronous' rotation. By now we have complete maps not only of the near side of the Moon but the far side as well.

Orbit and Tides

Why is the Moon 400 times smaller than the Sun and also 400 times closer, making it appear the same size in the sky?

Stuart Abel (Bournemouth, Dorset)

This is pure coincidence, nothing more than that! It is a very fortunate one for us, because it means that otherwise we would not see total eclipses. People have often questioned why this should be so, but it just happens. It is also interesting to note that this situation is not duplicated anywhere else in the Solar System. If you could go to Jupiter (which you cannot!), the satellite Io would appear larger than the Sun, but not exactly the same size, so the effect of an eclipse would not be so spectacular.

In fact, if you could go to any other planet you would not find the same situation. For example, Mars has two satellites, Phobos and Deimos, but both these would appear much smaller than the Sun if you could go to Mars and look. If they passed between Mars and the Sun they would appear as small disks crossing the Sun, and such an image was captured by the Mars rover *Opportunity* in 2004.

What would the Earth be like if we had two moons?

Emma Marie Lea (Brighton, East Sussex)

It would depend on the size of the second moon, and it would probably be much further away from the Earth than our present Moon. Of course it would make its presence felt. For one thing, we would have much brighter nights if the two moons were full at the same time. More importantly, the second moon would cause tides just as the present one does, and the whole situation would become remarkably complicated!

The Full Moon photographed by Jamie Cooper.

Of course, there are planets with several moons. Mars has two Moons, Phobos and Deimos, but these are less than 20 miles in diameter. The giant planets have whole families of moons. Jupiter has four large satellites and a whole swarm of smaller ones; Saturn has one very big moon (Titan) and several of a fair size, as well as over 60 very small ones. Uranus has four major moons, and Neptune one, though both have a number of smaller ones.

Do lunar eclipses have any effect on earthquakes? What about other planetary alignments?

Anthony Atkinson (Northallerton, North Yorkshire)

No, an eclipse of the Moon has no effect whatever upon earthquakes. There have been many suggestions that the planets may line up and cause effects upon the Earth, but these effects are so small that for all practical purposes we can forget about them.

Of course, we did have a massive earthquake off the coast of Japan after a lunar eclipse in December 2011, but this was sheer chance.

Is the Earth-Moon system a binary planet system? If not, why not?

John Stoney (Malvern, Worcestershire)

This is a particularly interesting question. The Earth and the Moon rotate round their common centre of gravity known as the 'barycentre', but the Earth is 81 times as massive as the Moon and the barycentre lies well inside the Earth's globe. The most common definition of a binary planet system is that the centre of mass must lie outside the surface of both objects, and so by this definition the Earth and Moon do not form a binary system.

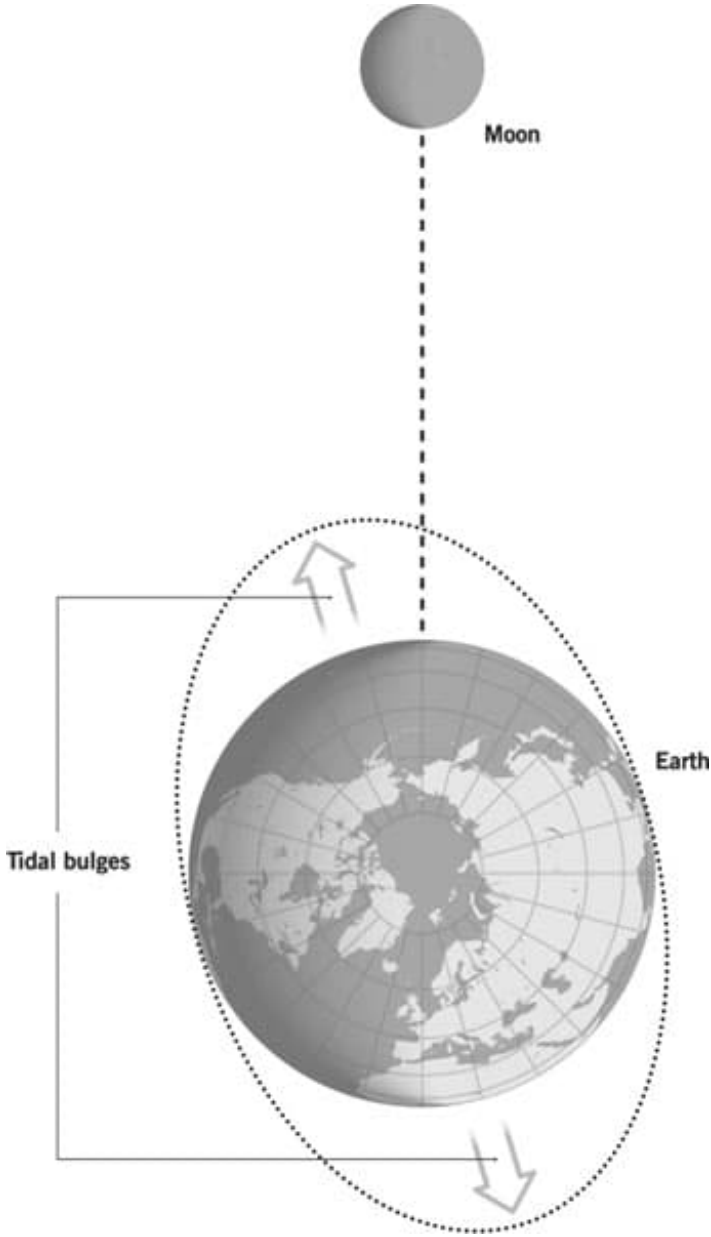
There are only a few examples of true binary systems in the Solar System, the vast majority of which are asteroids. The largest and most famous of these is Pluto and its largest satellite, Charon. Charon is around half the diameter of Pluto and around one-tenth the mass, and the barycentre lies well above the surface of Pluto.

Out of the all the satellites of eight major planets in the Solar System, our Moon is the largest relative to its host planet. Although there are several satellites larger than the Moon (three in Jupiter's system, one in Saturn's), all these move round much more massive giant planets. So the Earth-Moon system is unique and I [PM] regard it as a double planet rather than a planet and a satellite.

Why do we have two tides in a 24-hour period, when the Moon only orbits once every 24 hours?

Nigal (Conwy, Wales)

The theory of the tides is remarkably complex. On Earth, both the Sun and the Moon cause notable tides, but those of the Moon are much stronger. Imagine the whole Earth covered with a shallow uniform ocean and both the Earth and the Moon are standing still. The Moon's gravitational pull is heaping the water up on the nearest side where the force is strongest. This is all very well, but at first sight it is not so easy to see where there should be a second high tide on the far side of the Earth. It is slightly misleading to say, as many books do, that the solid globe is simply being pulled away from the water, so for a moment let us assume that we have a situation in which the Earth and the Moon are alone in the Universe, and are falling towards each other because of their mutual gravitational pulls. Taking the matter a step further, imagine that it is the Moon which is standing still, and the Earth is being drawn towards it. The point which is closest to the Moon would be subject to a greater accelerating force than the average, and so the water will bunch up around it. The result would be a high tide. On the far side, the reverse will happen. The acceleration will be less than the average, and so the water in that region would tend to be 'left behind' so bulging away and causing a similar high tide. Of course, the Earth is not falling towards the Moon, but remaining at the same distance as they both orbit their common centre of gravity (or barycentre) once every 27.3 days. In addition, the Earth is spinning round once in 24 hours. Obviously, the water heaps – that is to say the high tides will not spin with it, but will keep 'under the Moon'. Therefore, each bulge will seem to sweep right round the Earth once in 24 hours, and every region would have two high tides and two low tides a day.



NOTE: Distance between Earth and Moon not to scale.

The gravitational pull of the Moon creates tides on both sides of the Earth.

There are many complications, but the basic picture is what we have given here. For example, if you look at the location of the Moon at high tide, you will notice that it is not directly overhead – in fact it is probably very close to the horizon. That is

because the viscosity of the water causes it to be pushed ahead of the point directly under the Moon.

There are tides caused by the Sun as well and, while these Solar tides are much weaker than those of the Moon, they do have an effect. When the Sun and the Moon are pulling in the same 'sense' as full moon and new moon, the tides are strong, and we call these spring tides, although they have nothing to do with the season of the spring. At half moon, the solar and lunar tides are pulling against each other, and we have what are called neap tides.

There are tides in the land too, but these may be disregarded for most purposes because the land is solid rather than liquid, and land tides are really weak.

The Moon is receding from the Earth, but what is pulling them out of orbit?

Diane Clarke (Thamesmead, London)

I am afraid this is all a bit complicated, but we will make it as simple as we can. The crux of the matter is what is termed angular momentum. The angular momentum of a moving body around a point or axis is a measure of the amount of rotation, or spin, that it has. It is obtained by multiplying together its mass, the square of its distance from the centre of motion, and the rate of angular motion – that is to say the rate of axial rotation. According to a well-known principle, angular momentum can never be destroyed; it can only be converted. If therefore the axial rotation is slowed down, as happened in the Earth-Moon system because of tidal forces, something else had to increase, and this 'something' was the distance between the two bodies.

The process is not complete even now, because the Moon's tidal pull on the Earth is still braking our rotation. Each day is approximately 0.00000002 seconds longer than its predecessor, though there are also irregular fluctuations unconnected with the Moon. Also, the Moon is still receding from us. The rate of increase is only 1.5 inches (4 centimetres) per year, however, so that we need be in no hurry to study the Moon before it disappears into the distance!

In fact, the Moon will not go on receding indefinitely. If it could move out to 350,000 miles, it would start to draw inward again, because of tidal effects due to the Sun, and would eventually be broken up into a swarm of particles – but this will not happen, because long before the critical period both Earth and Moon will have been destroyed as the Sun swells out to become a red giant star. In the meantime, we may be sure that nothing dramatic will happen to the Moon for a good while.

How far from the Earth was the Moon 400 million years ago (early Devonian) and how high were the tides then compared with today?

David Leather (Ilkley, West Yorkshire)

At present the mean distance of the Moon is 238,000 miles (the orbit is, of course, slightly eccentric). Today most astronomers believe the Moon was caused by a giant impact on the original Earth, and initially the Moon and the Earth were very close together. Tidal friction has resulted in the recession of the Moon at the rate of 1.5 inches (4 cm) per year. The Devonian period, so called because rocks of this period are well seen in Devonshire, began about 408 million years ago, following the Silurian period, during which life was developing. At the start of the Devonian there were early land plants, together with amphibians, insects and spiders. The Devonian

was a warm period, and Greenland, North West Scotland and North America were probably joined.

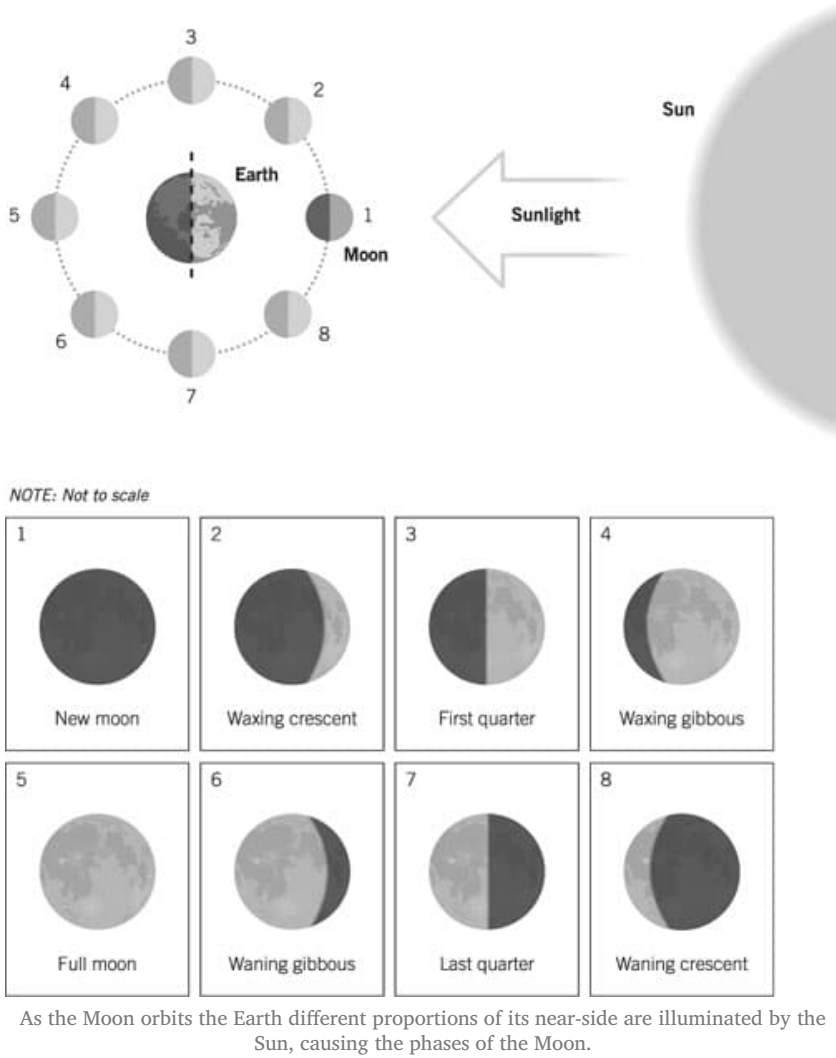
The Moon had receded to a distance of roughly 200 thousand miles, and went around the barycentre once in approximately 18 hours so that its days were much shorter than they are now. Because the Moon was closer, the tides were around half as high again as those of today. It took some time for these tides to become more moderate, which they did in the following period known as the Carboniferous, when the coal measures were laid down and the first reptiles appeared.

Why do we sometimes see the Moon and the Sun in the same part of the sky?

Alan Thomas (York)

The best way to explain this is to imagine that the Sun stays motionless in the sky while the Moon makes its journey around the Earth over the course of a month (actually 27.3 days). If this was so, anyone on the Earth would see the Moon and the Sun close together once every orbit. If the Moon passes directly over the Sun the result is a solar eclipse.

Of course all three bodies are moving, but we on Earth see the Moon and the Sun in the same part of the sky. It is difficult to see the Moon when it is near the Sun, but when it is further away we see it quite clearly. As the Moon moves around its orbit we see different amounts of its illuminated surface, and we call these the phases of the Moon.



As the Moon orbits the Earth different proportions of its near-side are illuminated by the Sun, causing the phases of the Moon.

Do erupting volcanoes, meteor strikes, nuclear explosions, rocket launches, etc. affect the orbit and/or speed of revolution of a planet/satellite?

Frank Ward (Leicester)

Let us begin by considering earthquakes. If they are very violent, such as the Japanese earthquakes of 2011, they can have tiny effects upon the Earth's rotation period, but these are so small that for all practical purposes they can be ignored. For example, the Japanese earthquake of 2011 shortened the length of a day by just under two millionths of a second – no need to adjust your watches! Volcanoes can also have very minor effects; nuclear explosions, rocket launches, etc. are far too weak to have any measurable effects on movement around the Sun, or the speed of

rotation.

A meteor is a tiny particle which burns away in the Earth's upper atmosphere; we see it as a shooting star. It is of dust-grain size, and can have no effect at all. But in the past the Earth has been struck by much larger bodies and most astronomers believe that the Moon was formed when the Earth was hit by a body about the size of Mars. If this happens again, the results would be very serious from our point of view, but the chances of this now seem to be extremely small. In very recent times there have been bodies of considerable size which have hit the Earth such as the Siberian impact of 1908, but even this was much too small to knock the Earth out of its orbit. One might as well try to stop a charging hippopotamus by throwing a baked bean at it!

We don't often hear of Cruithne, the Earth's second 'moon' discovered in 1986. Is it still performing its irregular path in relation to the Earth, and why have there been no missions to investigate it?

Eric Hayman (London)

The asteroid called 3753 Cruithne is a perfectly ordinary asteroid, discovered in 1986 by Duncan Waldron. Is simply happens to have a rather unusual orbit. It is very small, about 3 miles (5 km) in diameter, and spins around once in 27 hours. Its brightest apparent magnitude is 15, which means that it is fainter than Pluto. I [PM] have seen it with my 15-inch telescope but not very easily.

The strange thing about the orbit is that in some ways it is similar to that of the Earth. Its average distance from the Sun is almost exactly the same, at one astronomical unit, but its orbit is much more eccentric than the Earth's, and also is tilted at an angle of almost 20 degrees. Its distance from the Sun ranges between 1.3 astronomical units and 0.6 astronomical units. This means that it seems to accompany the Earth around the Sun, and makes periodic close approaches but there is no danger to the Earth. It has been said that Cruithne follows a path relative to the Earth like a kidney bean, though it can also make close approaches to Mars.

Although the orbit appears to be related to the Earth, this pattern will not continue indefinitely; there is no real point in sending a mission to it, because we know enough about it to realise there is nothing unusual about it apart from its orbit at this present moment.

There are one or two others asteroids of the same type, such as 54509 YORP and 1998 UP1. But let's all be clear – Cruithne is an ordinary asteroid with an unusual orbit, and not a second Earth satellite. Clyde Tombaugh, who discovered Pluto in 1930, made a very careful search for minor moons of the Earth. He failed to find any, and it now seems safe to say that we have no second satellite with a diameter of more than a foot or two.

Mars has four known asteroids sharing its orbit, of which the largest is 5261 Eureka. So far as we know, Venus has none.

Eclipses

During a lunar eclipse, does the Earth cast a perfect shadow on the Moon?

Simon Franklin (Leeds)

When the Moon is eclipsed, it passes into the shadow cast by the Earth. The Earth's shadow has two parts: the 'umbra', within which the Earth obscures the entire Sun, and the 'penumbra', within which the Earth only obscures part of the Sun's disc. The edge of the Earth's umbral shadow on the Moon is very obvious; during a total eclipse the entire Moon is shadowed. An eclipse does not happen at every full moon, because the Moon's orbit is not in the same plane as that of the Earth.

When the eclipse is total, all direct sunlight is cut off from the Moon, but the Moon does not (usually) disappear completely because the light is bent or refracted onto the lunar surface by the Earth's atmosphere. Since blue light is scattered away more easily by the Earth's atmosphere, the surface of the Moon appears red. The French astronomer Danjon has given a scale for lunar eclipses ranging from 0 (very dark) out to 4 (coppery or orange red, with a bright, bluish rim). Of course all light reaching the eclipsed Moon has to pass through the Earth's atmosphere, and everything depends on the atmospheric conditions. After a volcanic eruption, for instance, a great deal of dust has been sent into the Earth's upper air, and this blocks the light onto the eclipsed Moon so that the eclipse is 'dark'.

Lunar eclipses do not have the glory of solar eclipses, and to be honest they are not important, but they are always worth watching and have a quiet beauty of their own.

Why do eclipses of the Moon only seem to occur at full moon?

Andy Parker (Leeds)

Simply because this is the only time when the Earth, Sun and the Moon are all lined up, with the Earth in the mid position. This means that only then can the Earth's shadow fall upon the Moon. The slight tilt of the Moon's orbit means that they don't occur every month.

During the last total eclipse of the Sun visible from the UK, I turned and saw a beautiful planet in the sky. I will never forget the sight, it was absolutely amazing! Why do we not hear about seeing the planets during an eclipse?

Linda Parker (Christchurch, Dorset)

When the Sun is totally eclipsed, it is certainly possible to see the bright planets and the brightest stars. But during totality, why waste time in looking at them? This is a very special occasion; so one can see the Sun's corona and prominences, and it is

probably the most magnificent sight in all nature. It doesn't happen very often, though, and if you stay in Britain the last total eclipses were those of 1927 and 1999 (though in 1954 the eclipse was total very briefly over Northern Scotland). The next UK eclipses will be on on 3 September 2081, in the Channel Islands, and in 2090 in Southern Ireland and Cornwall, so if you would like to see one sooner then a plane ticket will in all likelihood be required.

If you want to search the stars and planets during totality there is no reason not to, but remember that totality ends very suddenly, and as soon as the bright surface of the Sun reappears it is as dangerous as when it is not eclipsed at all. Our advice – don't bother about stars and planets; spend your time marvelling at the Sun.

A photo of total solar eclipse, taken by Alan Clitherow from Turkey in 2006 during *Sky at Night* filming. With the full glare of the Sun obscured, fine structure is visible in the solar corona.

The Earth is not in a circular orbit and its distance from the Sun varies. What happens when an eclipse occurs when we are at our closest to the Sun?

Paul Spencer (Worthing, East Sussex)

It is correct that the Earth's orbit around the Sun is not quite circular, and as its distance from the Sun varies so does the apparent diameter of the Sun as seen from Earth. Similarly, the Moon moves around the Earth (or, more accurately, around the centre of gravity of the Earth-Moon system), but again not in a circular orbit, so that its apparent diameter varies.

The most important factor is the Moon's variable distance from the Earth, which can range from 250,000 miles to less than 230,000 miles. If an eclipse of the Sun happens when we are closest to the Sun and the Moon is at its furthest from the Earth, the Moon doesn't appear large enough to cover the Sun completely so, if the lining up is exact, a ring of sunlight is left showing around the dark disk of the Moon.

This is called an annular eclipse; the name ‘annular’ comes from the Latin *annulus*, meaning ‘ring’. An eclipse of this kind is fascinating to watch, but not as magnificent as a total solar eclipse because neither the corona nor prominences can be seen. Is it important to remember not to look directly at the Sun through any kind of telescope during an annular eclipse, because the ring of sunlight left showing makes the Sun just as dangerous as it is when there is no eclipse at all.

Are there any other places in the Solar System where eclipses can be seen?

Chris Grey (Guildford, Surrey)

Yes, but there is no other case where the observer of the surface of another planet can see a satellite just big enough to cover the Sun. For example, consider someone standing on the ‘surface’ of Saturn (which, of course, cannot be done, because the surface of Saturn is gaseous). All Saturn’s major moons out as far as Titan appear bigger than the Sun as seen from Saturn, so that when they pass in front of the Sun they hide it completely. In contrast, from the surface of Mars the largest Martian moon Phobos looks too small to cover the entire disc of the Sun. Therefore there is no other place where there are total eclipses as we see them from Earth, and so the Earth is the only place that solar prominences can ever be seen with the naked eye.

Formation and Impacts

Why is Earth's Moon round, when the moons of some other planets are irregular in shape, and how did it form?

Sally Ward (Brora, Sutherland)

The Earth's Moon is so large that it is 'differentiated' – that is to say it has a core and an outer shell. To develop in this way a body has to be large enough and dense enough, and some of the satellites of other planets are not. Generally speaking, any body more than 200 miles across is liable to be a globe. The gravity on the surface of such a large body is strong enough to flatten out any large irregularities.

The only major satellite which is completely irregular in shape is Hyperion, one of the satellites of Saturn. Its maximum diameter is over 200 miles, but it is of very low density. It seems to be composed mainly of water ice and only a little rock, so that it is not dense enough to be differentiated. There have been suggestions that Hyperion is half of a larger body which broke up. This is not impossible – but if so, where's the other half?

In terms of the Moon's formation, there have been endless arguments about the origin of the Moon, and even now we cannot pretend that we are quite sure.

The first widely accepted theory, proposed in 1878, was that of GH Darwin (son of Charles Darwin). The Earth and the Moon were originally combined and rotated so quickly that part of the globe broke away and became the Moon. Some later authorities, notably O Fisher, believed that the basin left by the departing Moon is now filled by the Pacific Ocean. All this sounds plausible, but there are fatal mathematical objections. A thrown-off mass would not form a lunar-sized globe; also, the Moon's diameter is one-third that of the Earth, but the depth of the Pacific Ocean is negligible compared with the diameter of the Earth. Darwin's theory is now universally rejected.

HC Urey put forward the 'capture theory': the Moon was formed in the same way as the Earth from the solar nebula and was originally an independent planet, but after a while the two became gravitationally linked. However, this would require a very special set of circumstances, and cannot explain why the Moon is so obviously less dense than the Earth. Again, Urey's theory has been rejected.

In 1984, W Hartmann and DR Davies proposed the Giant Impact theory. This involved a collision about four thousand million years ago between the Earth and a body about the size of Mars. The cores of the two bodies merged, and debris was spread around, subsequently accreting to form the Moon. At the time of the collision, so much energy was set free that the outer part of the young Moon was melted to form a deep global magma ocean. Over the next 100 million years, the dense elements in the young Moon sank to form the core, while the lighter elements rose up and floated to make up the surface – a process known as 'differentiation'. Following this came the period of Heavy Bombardment, when both Earth and Moon were pelted by smaller bodies moving around the Sun, with a result that both were

cratered. We still see the craters of the Moon but most of the craters of the Earth have been eroded by the action of wind and water, as well as the motion of the tectonic plates.

It is this theory which is now generally accepted, but there are still difficulties, and some authorities are very doubtful about it. At one stage Harold Urey commented that, since all theories of the Moon's origin were so unsatisfactory, science had proved that the Moon does not exist!

Was the Moon's orbit in the same direction as the Earth's rotation after its formation?

Chuck Atkins (Portland, Oregon, USA)

Probably but, as we have seen in other questions, we are by no means sure how the Moon was formed. If the Giant Impact theory is right, everything was rotating in the same direction, but of course it is very difficult to see just what happened when the impact occurred.

There are no other major satellites in the Solar System that move around their primaries in the direction opposite to that in which the primary is rotating, with the exception of Triton, the large satellite of Neptune; there seems no doubt whatever that Triton was an independent body in the Kuiper Belt which was captured by Neptune, and is therefore a special case. To be candid, this is really as much as we can say at the moment.

If the Moon is covered with evidence of meteorite damage, why do we not see meteorites hitting it now?

Jason Gillingham (Kettering, Northamptonshire)

We have to remember that all craters of the Moon are very old by terrestrial standards. There has been very little major bombardment for at least a thousand million years, but the Moon has no atmosphere, and so the craters produced by the impacts are still visible, whereas most of the craters that must have been formed on the Earth have been eroded away.

If there are impacts, even small ones, continuing to the present day, then they should be observable with telescopes and modern recording equipment. Flashes have been recorded, some by experienced observers, and even photographed, though we have never seen craters produced where the flashes have been seen. Also, one would expect a major impact to produce a cloud of dust which would be visible for some time before sinking to the surface, and nothing of the kind has ever been observed.

It has often been said that there are visible impacts on the Moon at times of meteor showers. There is considerable disagreement here. One of us [PM] is of the opinion that a shooting star meteor, which is of sand-grain size, is far too small to cause a flash visible from the Earth; other observers believe that we really are seeing tiny bodies impacting the Moon. The jury is still out.

Has the creation of a Moon crater ever been observed and, if so, when was the last one?

Peter Barton (Doddinghurst, South Essex)

We have never observed the formation of any large crater and, as we have noted, all the large lunar craters are very ancient. However, we have created our own craters. The lunar probes SMART-1 and LCROSS were deliberately flown into the Moon, with the impacts being imaged by telescopes around the world, as well as by satellites in orbit around the Moon. There are small pieces of rock flying through space, some of which hit the Moon, and since the Moon has no atmosphere we must expect tiny craters to be formed all the time.

There are some interesting historic reports of changes on the Moon, however, including an event witnessed in 1178. This was described in medieval chronicles by Gervase of Canterbury and, according to J Hartung (1976), the translation from the original Latin reads:

> In this year, on the Sunday before the Feast of St John the Baptist, after sunset when the moon had first become visible a marvellous phenomenon was witnessed by some five or more men who were sitting there facing the moon, and as usual in that phase its horns were tilted toward the east; and suddenly the upper horn split in two. From the midpoint of this division a flaming torch sprang up, spewing out, over a considerable distance, fire, hot coals, and sparks. Meanwhile the body of the moon which was below writhed, as it were, in anxiety, and, to put it in the words of those who reported it to me and saw it with their own eyes, the moon throbbed like a wounded snake. Afterwards it resumed its proper state. This phenomenon was repeated a dozen times or more, the flame assuming various twisting shapes at random and then returning to normal. Then after these transformations the moon from horn to horn, that is along its whole length, took on a blackish appearance. The present writer was given this report by men who saw it with their own eyes, and are prepared to stake their honour on oath that they have made no addition or falsification in the above narrative.

The 'horns' to which they refer are simply the points of the crescent Moon, and what they describe seems to fit with what might be expected from a fairly large impact. In his investigations, Hartung came to the conclusion that these men may well have been witnesses to the formation of the crater Giordano Bruno. This crater is in the same area that the description identifies (near the upper tip of a waxing crescent Moon), and seems to be one of the younger craters on the Moon, estimated at around 800 years old. Its youth is indicated by its relatively bright appearance and the presence of rays emanating from it, which would be eroded over time by subsequent impacts.

The interpretation of the description is that the men, who may or may not have been experienced astronomers, saw a flash as material from the impact was illuminated by sunlight, which they interpreted as flames and sparks. The dimming of the entire crescent Moon could have been due to a shroud of dust temporarily surrounding the Moon, though it is surprising that this happened so quickly and it may have simply been clouds in the Earth's atmosphere.

Of course, the observations are probably impossible to prove. The formation of a crater would have created a shower of bright meteors in the Earth's atmosphere, something that would certainly have been of note at the time. The lack of evidence for such a shower is not promising for the hypothesis, but it is very tempting to imagine that we could have a written record of such a remarkable event.

What would happen if an asteroid crashed into our Moon rather than the Earth?

Frank Duckworth (Washington, Tyne & Wear)

If a large asteroid impacted the Moon, it would make a very large crater! This has certainly happened in the past: the huge Mare Imbrium certainly has an impact origin, for example. But the age of the Heavy Bombardment is over and, though there is no reason to suppose that a major impact will occur in the future, the Earth is properly more likely to be hit than the Moon, because of its greater gravitational pull.

It is impossible to predict when this will happen, if it ever does, but it certainly cannot be ruled out.

Is the greater cratering on the far side of the Moon due to the fact that the Earth shelters the facing side?

Andy Cook (Yate, Bristol)

The difference in cratering between the Earth-turned and far sides is due to quite a number of factors. Of course, the fact that the Earth shields the facing side is one, and the Moon has kept the same face turned towards the Earth since a long time ago in the story of the Earth-Moon system. Also, in those far-off days, the Moon must have had some kind of atmosphere, though this would have quickly disappeared. The interior of the Moon was also active, with vulcanism going on everywhere, and the end result is that the two sides are quite different. On the far side, there are no major seas of the type such as the Mare Imbium on the Earth-turned side. Studies of the Moon's interior have shown that the crust is significantly thicker on the far side. There are several possible explanations for this – that the difference in the tides experienced on the two faces caused the difference in structure, for example – but it is not yet clear which is right.

Mare Ibrium, one of the 'lunar seas', was formed by a huge impact billions of years ago and subsequently filled with lava. This volcanic material appears darker than the surrounding terrain, as clearly shown in this image by Julian Cooper.

Recent computer simulations have suggested that the thicker crust on the far side could have formed from the impact of a second moon. This second moon could easily have been formed in the same impact that formed the Moon we see today, and it is possible that it could have ended up in a stable orbit for tens of millions of years. Eventually, however, that orbit would have become unstable and the second moon, which is assumed to be somewhat smaller, would have hit our Moon from behind (at least from our point of view). If at the time of the impact our Moon was still in the process of cooling then it would still have had a small molten mantle below the surface. The simulations indicated that the impact of a second moon could have coated the far side with the same sort of material as seen in the crust, and shifted the mantle to the near side.

While this theory would explain the observations, it is hard to prove. The material from the second, smaller moon would have cooled more quickly and therefore would appear older. The proof (or otherwise) could come from the results of the twin satellites of the GRAIL mission, which went into orbit around the Moon at the start of 2012.

Mysteries

'Lunar swirls' are found on the Moon, usually directly opposite large impact basins. Why are they still visible today when the impact basins were formed billions of years ago?

Geoff Roynon (Isle of Dogs, London)

These features are decidedly mysterious, and we do not yet have a full explanation of them. There are not many of these swirls, and it seems that they are associated with impacts which occurred when the Moon's core was still molten. There is little doubt that magnetism was involved; the Moon has no detectable overall magnetic field now, but it is likely that there used to be one when the core was still molten. It was not molten for very long, however, as the Moon's small size means that it has cooled much more rapidly than the Earth.

Conspiracy theorists tell us that the Moon landings were staged. Surely, the lunar rover and launch platforms can still be seen by telescopes on Earth?

Jason Taggart (London)

When we hear about these conspiracy theories, the instinct is to look around for men in white vans! Quite honestly, it would be more difficult to fake the landings than actually do them. What can one say about people who believe that men never landed on the Moon? If ignorance is bliss, they must be very happy.

Actually, the rover and other signs of man's activity cannot yet be seen by Earth-based telescopes because they are too small, but they have been photographed by the Lunar Reconnaissance Orbiter from lunar orbit. They are quite unmistakable. Surely these pictures should have killed the conspiracy theory once and for all? But there are some people who will never be convinced, and arguing with them is like to trying to eat tomato soup with a fork!

If there was one thing you could have an answer to regarding lunar observations, what would it be? What has had you scratching your head after all these years?

Adrian Asbury (Tamworth)

My answer [PM] is the cause of the elusive outbreaks which we call transient lunar phenomena (or TLP for short). For a long time, it was thought that these observations were faulty, probably because they were made by amateur observers, but they have also been seen by professional astronomers paying close attention to the Moon. It is almost certainly quite wrong to say TLP are due to volcanic activity. I am certain that they are real, however, and the famous French astronomer Audouin

Dollfus has actually photographed them. My own theory is that the rising Sun can heat and uplift dust off surfaces on the Moon, and this is the main cause.

There are some areas much more susceptible to TLP than others, and the most famous of these is the brilliant crater Aristarchus, which is one reason why I would like a future mission to be sent there.

How likely is it that a telescope will be constructed on the far side of the Moon, and what would the benefits be?

Paul Bertenshaw (Ashby de la Zouch, Leicestershire)

There are many advantages to having a telescope on the surface of the Moon. There is no light pollution, and no atmospheric disturbance. If all goes well, and the world leaders agree to work together, this could well happen within the next decade or two. (Whether it actually will, however, is a matter of much debate.)

But going onto the far side has other advantages, too. There would be absolutely no disturbance from anything we can see from Earth and, more importantly still, the far side of the Moon would be the ideal place for a radio telescope. On Earth, radio telescopes are being increasingly disturbed by commercial and private transmissions; it was once said, by the Astronomer Royal, that 'unless something were done, radio astronomy from Earth will be limited to the entirety of the twentieth century'. This has not happened, but certainly radio astronomers would be immensely relieved to have a completely 'radio quiet' site.

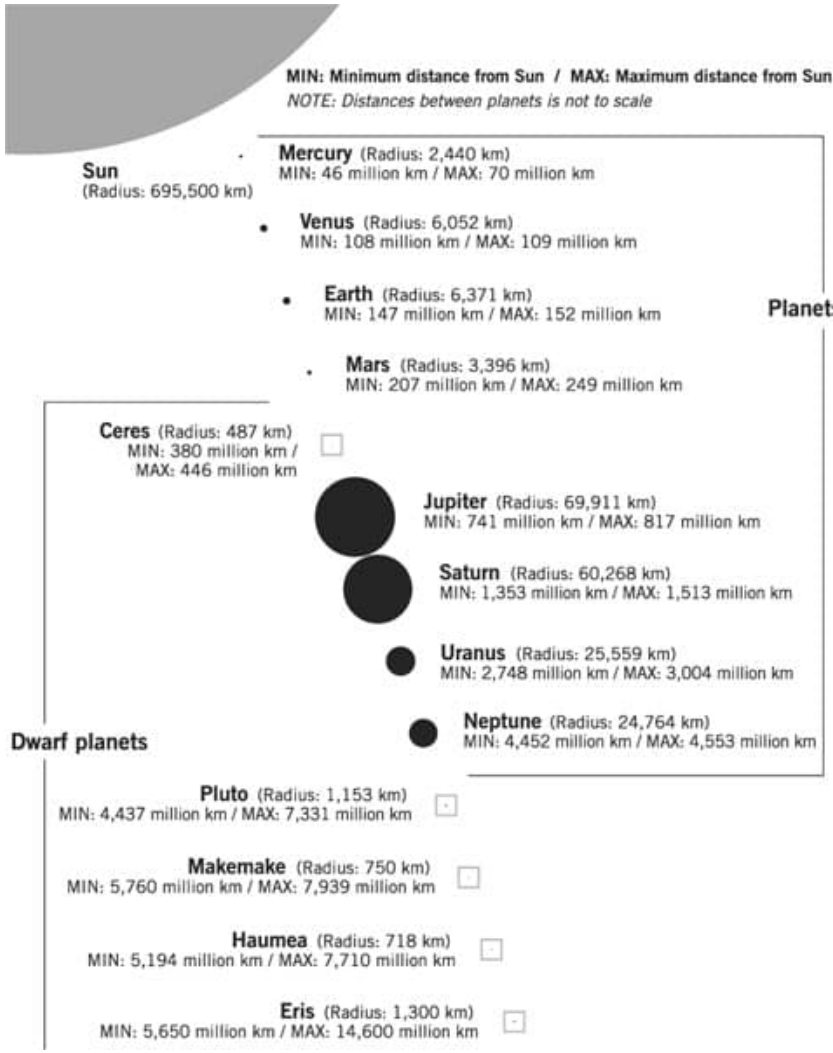
Neither does there seem any crushing reason why this should not be accomplished. Landing a radio telescope on the far side of the Moon should not be a great deal more difficult than landing one on the near side. Of course, this requires full international cooperation, and we can only hope that this will be forthcoming. If it is, then we may hope that in the foreseeable future a radio telescope on the Moon's far side will lead on to all manner of new discoveries. (En passant, where better to listen out for signals coming from some remote world light years away? This may seem far-fetched, but stranger things have happened!)

The Solar System

Could you describe the sizes and distances from the Sun of the planets in our Solar System?

Tom Williamson (Northumberland)

YES, THIS CAN certainly be done. We must remember in our Solar System there are tremendous differences in size and mass, with Jupiter, the largest planet, being more massive than all the others put together. To explore this, let us use a scale based on London. We will place the Sun just outside the Houses of Parliament at Westminster, and make it a globe 600 feet in diameter – which is a little less than the length of the Houses of Parliament. The planets can now be filled in on the same scale. First, we have Mercury at 2 feet in diameter, about the size of a large beach ball, and at a distance from Westminster of 4.75 miles. That's about as far as Hampstead Heath, or Wimbledon, so there is immediately a sense of the immense distances between the planets relative to the sizes of them and the Sun. Venus would be 5.25 feet in diameter and 9 miles away, taking us out to Croydon, or Mill Hill. The Earth is a little bigger, at 5.5 feet in diameter, and 12.25 miles away (somewhere near Barnet), while Mars is 3 feet in diameter and 18.5 miles distant (in St Albans). This puts us outside the M25 ringroad. The 'Asteroids', or Minor Planets, are tiny globes ranging from the size of a grain of sand to five inches in diameter, at an average distance of 30 miles (around the region of Slough or Luton).


MIN: Minimum distance from Sun / MAX: Maximum distance from Sun
NOTE: Distances between planets is not to scale
Sun
(Radius: 695,500 km)
Mercury (Radius: 2,440 km)
MIN: 46 million km / MAX: 70 million km
Venus (Radius: 6,052 km)
MIN: 108 million km / MAX: 109 million km
Earth (Radius: 6,371 km)
MIN: 147 million km / MAX: 152 million km
Mars (Radius: 3,396 km)
MIN: 207 million km / MAX: 249 million km
Planets
Ceres (Radius: 487 km)
MIN: 380 million km /
MAX: 446 million km
Jupiter (Radius: 69,911 km)
MIN: 741 million km / MAX: 817 million km
Saturn (Radius: 60,268 km)
MIN: 1,353 million km / MAX: 1,513 million km
Uranus (Radius: 25,559 km)
MIN: 2,748 million km / MAX: 3,004 million km
Neptune (Radius: 24,764 km)
MIN: 4,452 million km / MAX: 4,553 million km
Dwarf planets
Pluto (Radius: 1,153 km)
MIN: 4,437 million km / MAX: 7,331 million km
Makemake (Radius: 750 km)
MIN: 5,760 million km / MAX: 7,939 million km
Haumea (Radius: 718 km)
MIN: 5,194 million km / MAX: 7,710 million km
Eris (Radius: 1,300 km)
MIN: 5,650 million km / MAX: 14,600 million km

Our Solar System (not to scale!), showing the eight planets and five dwarf planets.

Jupiter, the giant of the Solar System, is larger than a house at 60 feet in diameter, and 64 miles away – about as far as Selsey or Northampton. Saturn, the ringed planet, is 51 feet in diameter and 117 miles away, reaching as far as Bristol and Lincoln. Uranus, 22 feet in diameter and 236 miles away, would be in the Lake District, while Neptune, 19.5 feet in diameter and 370 miles away, would be over the Scottish border in Edinburgh.

Beyond Neptune, we have hundreds of much smaller bodies, of which the brightest but not the largest is Pluto. Before 2006, Pluto was generally regarded as a planet but has now been changed to the status of a dwarf planet. On our scale it would be nearly 500 miles away from our central Sun. That places it at the same distance as John O'Groats in northern Scotland or, going the other way, in the south of France.

We must not forget the moons or satellites which revolve around most of the planets. Of the large satellites, the Earth has one (the Moon), Jupiter has four and Saturn one; all the other satellites are smaller. One satellite in Jupiter's system, Ganymede, is actually larger than Mercury and two other satellites, Jupiter's moon Callisto and Saturn's single large moon Titan, are very nearly the size of Mercury. Both Jupiter and Saturn also have a large collection of smaller moons. Most other satellites in the Solar System, such as the two attendants of Mars, are indeed tiny. One of the Martian Moons, Deimos, is actually less than 10 miles in diameter, and on the scale we've used here would only be about a sixteenth of an inch across (about 1 mm).

Why are there no small-sized planets, such as the size of a football?

Philip Quinn (Rugby)

There are lots of very small objects in the Solar System, but we don't call them planets. Instead, we call them asteroids. The largest asteroids are hundreds of kilometres in diameter but there are much, much smaller ones around as well. They can be as big as boulders, or indeed as small as a football. The smaller you go, then typically the more objects of that size there are, and the Solar System in fact contains a healthy supply of tiny grains of dust.

Is it possible to get a planet as large as the Sun?

William Edwards, age 12 (Beckenham, Kent)

Planets form by accreting, or attracting, matter from a cloud of gas and dust that surrounds a star. It is possible for an object to continue accreting until its centre becomes hot and dense enough for nuclear fusion to start in its core. Nuclear fusion is what powers the Sun and provides the light we see. If an object grew so large that nuclear fusion started, then we would call it a star rather than a planet, and such a system would be become a multiple-star system. Brown dwarfs are somewhere in between stars and planets.

Why are the planets spherical?

Gerry Mooney (Birmingham) and Tony Roberts (Shoreham by Sea, West Sussex)

That is essentially because of gravity. The mass of the planet is so high that everything gets pulled down to get as close to the centre as possible. The most compact possible shape is a sphere, and anything more than a few hundred kilometres in diameter will be spherical. Of course, even the Earth is not completely spherical, as there are mountains and valleys covering its surface. These are possible because the forces pushing them up are strong enough to overcome the pull of gravity, but it's usually only temporary. For example, the Himalayan mountains were created when the tectonic plates of India hit those of Asia, forcing material up into the highest mountains on Earth. The relative motion of these plates has now ceased, and over time gravity, ably assisted by the wind and weather, will gradually pull the mountains down.

Smaller objects have a lower gravitational pull and so the mountains can be higher. The highest mountain in the Solar System is Olympus Mons on Mars. At around 25 kilometres tall, it is six times the height of Mount Everest.

If all the planets in the Solar System were formed from the same cloud of material, by a similar mechanism, why are they so different, in particular Saturn?

John A Tomkins (Skelmersdale, Lancashire)

We can split the eight planets in the Solar System into two groups. First, there are the solid, rocky planets of Mercury, Venus, Earth and Mars, and then we have the giant planets of Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus and Neptune. This is a relic of the time when the planets were forming from the disc of material swirling round the Sun.

The Sun was also forming at the same time, and in its life it went through a very energetic phase that astronomers call the 'T Tauri' phase (named after the first star observed to exhibit this behaviour, found in the constellation of Taurus). The energy released from the star blows away the gas from the inner Solar System, meaning that only rocky planets can form from the heavier elements that remain. They can hold on to thin atmospheres, some of which were created by volcanoes.

The outer planets formed in a region where there was lots of gas, and so could grow much larger.

Orbits and Rotations

Why do planets orbit their star in an ellipse, rather than a circle?

David Gay (Hull)

It's first important to clarify that a circle is simply a special case of an ellipse, specifically one that has zero eccentricity. It was Johannes Kepler who showed that objects all orbit in ellipses, rather than perfect circles, which helped to explain their movements more accurately. The orbits are very nearly circular, though, and if you drew a circle a metre wide with chalk, the Earth's orbit would deviate from a perfect circle by less than the thickness of the chalk.

Even if you found yourself with a God-given power to place the planets into perfect circles, it wouldn't last. Although the Earth's orbit is dominated by the Sun's gravity, the small tugs from the other objects pull it around a small amount. The largest effects are from Jupiter and Saturn, but even some of the larger asteroids have a measurable effect.

Whenever we see the Solar System on screen or in books, it looks very flat. Just how accurate is this and what observations led to it?

Chris Levett (Sheffield, South Yorkshire) and Edward Wright (Skelmersdale, Lancashire)

The path of the Sun through the sky is called the ecliptic, and it has been realised for millennia that the planets follow roughly the same path through the sky. Even before it was acknowledged that the Sun is at the centre of the Solar System, rather than the Earth, the planets were known to be orbiting in the same plane.

The orbits of the eight major planets all lie pretty much in this 'ecliptic plane'. Relative to the Earth's orbit, the others are only tilted by a few degrees at most. This alignment originates from their formation, as the planets formed from a disc of material orbiting the Sun. The planets themselves, however, can be tilted at a range of angles relative to their orbits; for example, the Earth is tilted at around 23 degrees and this is what is responsible for our seasons. Uranus is tilted almost completely over on its side and Venus is flipped upside down. Most of the moons of the planets are aligned roughly with the equators of their planets, though there is more variation here than with the orbits of the planets around the Sun. For example, our own Moon's orbit is tilted at around 20 degrees to the Earth's Equator, and by around 5 degrees to the ecliptic plane, which is why we do not get solar and lunar eclipses every month.

The minor bodies of the Solar System are different. While most of the asteroids in the main asteroid belt lie in the same plane, many of the small outer bodies do not. A classic example is the dwarf planet Pluto, which lies in the Kuiper Belt – a band of relatively small icy, rocky bodies that orbit at the distance of Neptune and beyond. Pluto has an orbit that is tilted by around 17 degrees to the Earth's, though many of

the other objects are more tilted. Most comets, for example, are thought to lie in the Oort cloud, a roughly spherical cloud at a great distance from the Sun (although they would have formed closer in and been sent out there by interactions with the giant planets). Many of the comets we see from Earth come from the Oort cloud, and so can have very high inclinations relative to the planets. Comet Hale-Bopp, for example, which graced our skies in 1997, has an orbit tilted by around 90 degrees.

A question from my son: what caused the planets to rotate in the first place?

Rob Manning (Fleet, Hampshire)

A very good question, which can be rephrased as 'what makes the world go round?' Contrary to what some people would have you believe, it's not money! The planets are rotating because nothing has stopped them. They formed from a disc of material orbiting the Sun. As the material collected together to form planets, the rotation of the material was carried into the rotation of the planets.

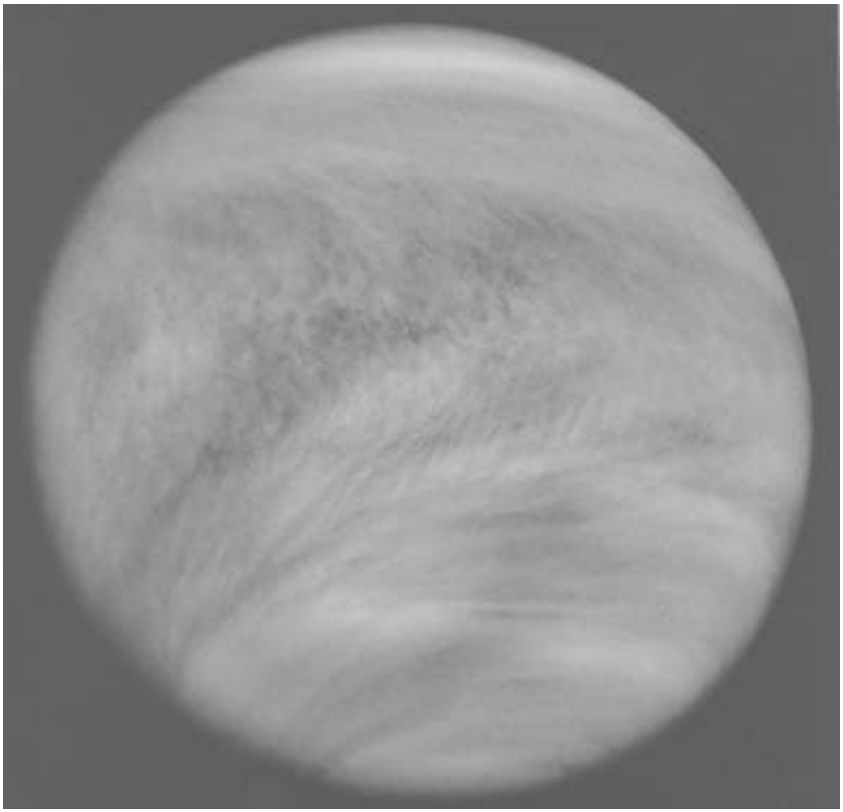
Such rotation is hard to get rid of, though forces such as those responsible for the tides can slowly stop the rotation. The tides that the Earth causes on the Moon have already stopped the Moon rotating relative to the Earth, and the same is true of most of the other moons around other planets. Given long enough, the Earth will stop rotating relative to the Sun, though before that can happen the Sun will swell to a red giant and die.

Do any planets appear to spin the wrong way?

Jonathan Sawyer (Reading, Berkshire)

Almost all the planets in the Solar System spin in an anticlockwise direction when viewed from above the North Pole of the Sun, but there are two interesting exceptions.

Firstly there is Venus, which rotates in the opposite direction, although much more slowly than the other planets. It orbits the Sun in 224 Earth days, but it spins on its axis in 243 Earth days. This means that the Sun would rise in the west and set in the east, with the time between two sunrises being around 116 Earth days.



The cloud tops of Venus as seen by the *Pioneer Venus Orbiter* in ultraviolet light as it orbited the planet in 1979.

The reason for this is not entirely clear, though there are fairly convincing theories out there. It is likely to be due to the tides created on Venus by the Sun, which would try to make its day equal in length to its year, essentially stopping its rotation. However, Venus's thick, gaseous atmosphere is far less susceptible to the tidal friction that affects solids and liquids. The rotation of the atmosphere would therefore not decrease as quickly, and it is so dense that it has enough mass to prevent the planet's rotation from stopping altogether.

It is possible that over the past few billion years of the Solar System's history the rotation of Venus has varied wildly. The same could happen to Earth though since we are further from the Sun the effect is weaker, and much smaller than the effect of the Moon on the Earth's rotation. While the tides on the Earth act on the oceans, the tides on Venus act on its very thick atmosphere.

The second interesting example is Uranus, which is tilted over at around 90 degrees – almost completely on its side! Rather than orbiting the Sun like a spinning top, Uranus can be thought of rolling around like a snooker ball. The reason for this is not entirely clear, but is suspected to be due to one or several impacts with another body.

Do the planets gradually drift away from the Sun, towards the Sun, or stay in situ?

Paul Smith (Alfreton, Derbyshire)

The planets are relatively fixed in their orbits at the present time, but this has not always been the case. The planets formed nearly five billion years ago from a dusty disc of material surrounding the Sun. The interaction of the planets with the disc caused their orbits to shift. A planet on its own would tend to move inwards through the disc, thanks to drag provided by the dust, but there can be drastic effects from other planets.

It is generally assumed that the planets formed in different places than we see them today, with the inner planets possibly forming closer to the Sun and moving out. Jupiter may have moved inwards then outwards, while Uranus and Neptune could have swapped places. Such gravitational interactions can have a significant impact on smaller bodies, perhaps even sending them flying out of the Solar System all together. In fact, some theories even suggest that there could have been five giant planets originally, but that one was booted out by the others in the early stages of the Solar System's existence.

We know that many other solar systems have giant planets like Jupiter, or sometimes even larger, orbiting very close to their star. Since these could not have formed there, they must have migrated inwards, and if this had happened to such an extent in our Solar System then the Earth would very likely not be here today. An important question is what stops the planets moving inwards. Since much of the movement is thought to be caused by interactions with dusty material in the proto-planetary disc, one factor would seem to be that they stop moving when the supply of dust is exhausted, having been used up in the formation of planets, moons and asteroids, though whether the timing of this is coincidental or not is unknown. Another possibility is that the presence of Saturn prevented Jupiter from migrating inwards any further.

In our Solar System we orbit the Sun, but does our Sun have an orbit and does this affect the Earth?

Keith Haysom (Keynsham, Somerset)

Technically speaking, the Earth does not orbit the Sun. Rather, they both orbit the centre of mass of the system, called the barycentre. Since the Sun is nearly a million times more massive than the Earth, the centre of mass of the Earth-Sun system is very close to the centre of the Sun, and so the statement in the question is a very good approximation.

But the more massive planets, particularly Jupiter, have a larger effect on the Sun. The centre of mass of the Sun-Jupiter system is actually near the surface of the Sun, and so the Sun could be thought of as rolling round a point in space once every 12 years, while simultaneously spinning on its axis every 25-30 days. It is this sort of motion that has allowed many of the planets outside our own Solar System to be detected, by looking at the 'wobble' effect they have on their parent star.

Of course, the Solar System is much more complicated than just the Sun, Earth and Jupiter, and so the motion of the Sun is rather complex. The dominant motion is due to Jupiter, but the other large planets, particularly Saturn, also have an effect.

The Sun has an orbit of its own around the centre of the Galaxy, which it completes in around 200 million years. It also moves up and down a little, which causes it to pass through the centre of the galactic disc once every few tens of millions of years. With more stars and dust clouds in the centre of the disc, there could be small effects on the Earth. For example, one theory is that such a passage through the Galactic plane would increase the chances of the Sun passing close to another star, which could send comets in from the Oort cloud. Such theories are very hard to test, not least because the Oort cloud has yet to be directly observed.

The Sun

Who was the first to realise that the Sun was just another star, like the thousands you could see in the night sky?

Bart van der Putten (Amsterdam, the Netherlands)

This is an interesting question, as it involves making the mental leap about what our own star is, but the leap was probably the other way, with people learning that the stars are similar to our Sun. The first thoughts about this are hard to find, though there are lots of myths about the deities assigned to the Sun. For the 700th *Sky at Night*, Dr Lucie Green did some digging and traced it back as far as the sixteenth century, to an Italian monk, philosopher and astronomer called Giordano Bruno.

Bruno held similar views to Copernicus, namely that the Earth went round the Sun, but he took it one step further. He believed that the Universe was infinite and that the stars were all suns in their own right, but much, much further away. He even theorised that they all had planets orbiting them. While his ideas were ridiculed at the time, some believe his contribution to have been an important step in our understanding of cosmology.

The actual proof that the stars were the same as the Sun didn't occur until the advent of spectroscopy in the nineteenth century. The German physicist Joseph von Fraunhofer discovered dark lines in the spectrum of the Sun and stars, and in 1859 Gustav Kirchhoff linked these with the absorption of light by certain elements. The fact that the Sun and stars looked similar meant that they had similar chemical compositions, and in the 1880s Edward Pickering compiled a catalogue of the spectra of over 10,000 stars.

Not all stars were found to be the same, and the classification of stars was developed by Annie Jump Cannon of Harvard College Observatory in the early twentieth century. The seven types of star that are normally used are O, B, A, F, G, K, M, remembered by the acronym 'Oh Be A Fine Girl, Kiss Me'! These are listed from hottest to coldest, and the Sun is in the middle as a G-type star. The addition of three classes of brown dwarf stars, L, T and Y, has left astronomy lecturers struggling to find a better mnemonic. If you think of one, do let us know…

Is it true that the Sun becomes four million tonnes lighter every second?

Jon Culshaw (London)

Indeed it is, purely because of the fusion taking place in its core. Every second, 600 million tonnes of hydrogen are turned into 596 million tonnes of helium. That means that 4 million tonnes goes missing every single second, and that mass is converted into energy – giving us sunlight.

But there's no need to worry about the Sun losing weight. It might be losing 4 million tonnes every second but, since it's total mass is two thousand million million

million million tonnes, there's plenty left!

Over what timescale does a solar prominence actually occur: a minute, an hour, a day?

John Moore (Peterborough, Cambridgeshire)

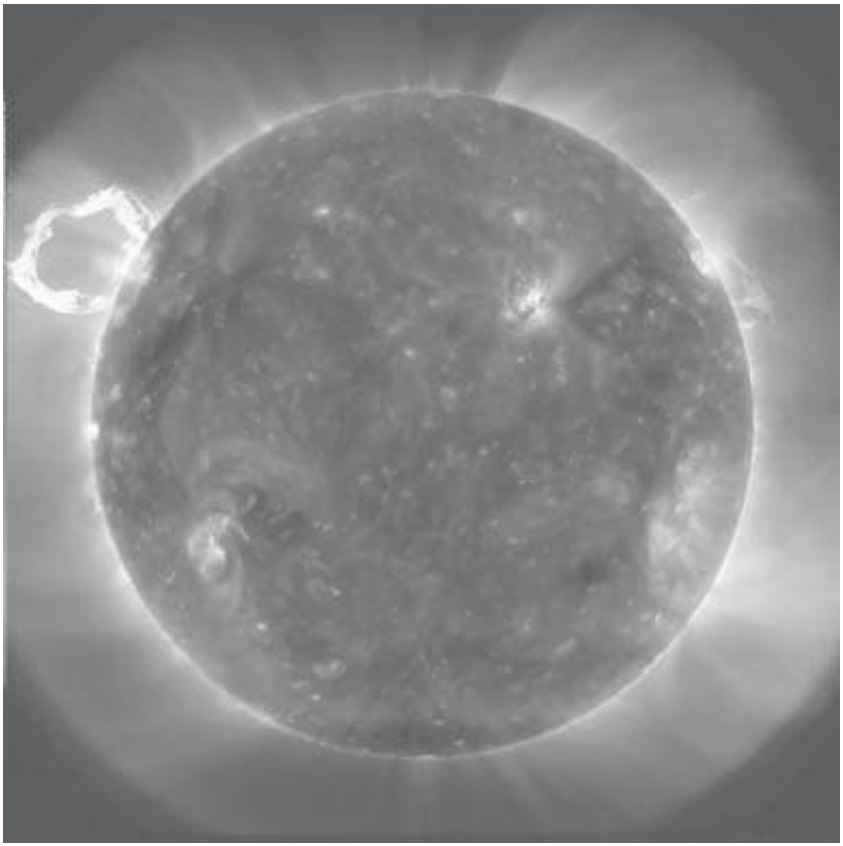
Solar prominences are one of the most beautiful phenomena on the Sun, and possibly in the Solar System. They can stretch for hundreds of thousands of kilometres, many times larger than the Earth. Considering their vast size, they form surprisingly quickly, sometimes in as little as around a day. Once formed, they can last for anywhere from a few hours to weeks, hanging above the surface of the Sun. They are best seen by looking at 'hydrogen alpha' light, which is emitted by hot hydrogen gas, and we are able to see them from a range of different angles as the Sun rotates.

The prominences can erupt with little or no notice, however, and this is related to how they are formed. The prominences are made of hot, ionised hydrogen gas, which is suspended in huge arcs by loops in the Sun's magnetic field. The magnetic field changes and evolves over time, and if it destabilises it can suddenly change into a new configuration. The material in the loop continues to follow the field, with some falling back into the Sun and some being thrown up and away from the surface. Depending on the energy released, the material can either fall back down or be ejected out into space.

Why is the solar corona so much hotter than the photosphere?

Alison Barrett (Kettering, Northamptonshire)

The photosphere of the Sun tends to be called its surface, as that is the point beyond which we cannot see. Just above the surface is a much fainter region called the 'corona', which can be considered to be the Sun's atmosphere. While the photosphere is at a temperature of thousands of degrees, the corona is much, much hotter. What we have to remember is that the scientific meaning of temperature is not the same as what we call 'heat' in day-to-day life. Scientifically, temperature depends upon the speed the atoms move around – the quicker the movement, the higher the temperature. The amount of heat given off depends on how much stuff there is at that temperature, so we have to take density into account. Consider a firework sparkler of the kind we use on 5 November. Every spark of the sparkler is at a very high temperature, but each one carries so little heat that they do no damage if they touch your hand. Conversely, the temperature of a red hot poker is much lower, and yet we are very reluctant to grasp a glowing poker.



A view from the Solar Dynamics Observatory of an enormous solar prominence. The prominence is many times larger than the Earth.

The atoms and molecules in the Sun's corona are moving very quickly, and this means the temperature reaches millions of degrees. But the corona is also very rarefied, thousands of times less dense than the air we are breathing. This means there is very little actual heat given off by the corona, despite the high temperature. The vast majority of the energy that makes its way to Earth is from the photosphere, and in turn that energy originates in the fusion reaction taking place in the Sun's core.

There are still many theories as to why the corona has a higher temperature than the solar surface or photosphere. It seems that magnetic events are involved, linked to the explosions on the surface of the Sun, called 'solar flares', but we do not yet have the full story.

If we could hear the sound the Sun makes, what would it sound like?

Nev French (Essex)

We cannot hear any sounds from the Sun simply because sounds audible to human

hearing cannot travel through the almost perfect vacuum of the Solar System. The fact that space is not *completely* empty means that sound waves, which are simply variations in density, can travel, but at incredibly low frequencies.

Within the Sun, the situation is somewhat different as it is much denser. The Sun does vibrate as pressure waves travel through it. These have an effect on the surface of the Sun and are evident through observations of the speed at which small regions of the surface are moving towards or away from us. An analysis of the movement of the surface of the Sun can be used to deduce its interior, which is something called helioseismology. As the name suggests, this is very similar to the way in which seismologists on Earth use the propagation of shockwaves caused by earthquakes to determine the structure of the interior of the Earth.

The dominant frequency in the Sun corresponds to an oscillation with a period of around five minutes. This is the time it takes a sound wave to travel from the surface of the Sun to the centre and back out again, although since the density varies with depth the waves do not travel along straight paths. There are smaller effects as well, but this five-minute period would be the dominant sound.

So if you had an appropriate set of headphones and ears tuned to sounds thousands of times lower than those we normally hear, then you would hear a dull drone from the Sun, varying over the course of hours as the surface writhes. The tone would be around 15 octaves below middle C!

Planet Earth

Why don't the earliest sunset and latest sunrise coincide with the shortest day?

Bill Northrop (Epsom, Surrey)

If the Earth were in a perfectly circular orbit around the Sun then this would be the case. However, the Earth's orbit is not a perfect circle, and its distance from the Sun ranges from 147 million to 152 million kilometres (91 million to 94 million miles), a variation of around two per cent either way. At its closest to the Sun, called perihelion, the Earth moves slightly faster round its orbit than at its farthest, called aphelion.

We think of the Earth spinning on its axis once every 24 hours, but in fact it takes just 23 hours and 56 minutes. A solar day, which is the time from sunrise to sunrise, takes a little longer because the Earth moves around its orbit and the planet has to rotate a tiny amount more to bring the Sun back over the horizon. At perihelion, when the Earth is moving fastest around its orbit, it has to rotate a tiny amount further relative to the Sun to make another sunrise, delaying the next sunrise by a small amount. It just so happens that the Earth's perihelion is around the start of January, which is coincidentally close to the shortest day in the northern hemisphere.

The difference is small, however, and the change in sunrise and sunset times over the period in question is only a few minutes, and also depends on your location. In the period of December 2012 to January 2013, for example, the shortest day occurs on 22 December, on which day in London the sun rises at 08.04 and sets at 15.54. The earliest sunset in London is a week before, occurring at 15.51, and the latest sunrise about a week later, at 08.06. Perihelion occurs on 5 January 2013.

A similar effect occurs six months later, when the longest day in the northern hemisphere happens to coincide with aphelion, when the Earth is furthest from the Sun. Of course, we should not forget that for those in the southern hemisphere this will be the other way around as their seasons are reversed.

The Moon creates tides on the Earth, but is it possible for the other planets to have similar effects?

Christian Fisher (Fleetwood, Lancashire)

The gravitational pull of the other planets is much weaker than that of the Moon. The only other measurable tides are caused by the Sun, and are roughly half the size of the tides due to the Moon. The next largest tides are caused by Venus, but even at its closest they are 500,000 times weaker than those due to the Moon, and the effect from the other planets is smaller still. So if the tide due to the Sun and the Moon was a metre high, the change due to Venus passing closest to us in its orbit would create an additional tide of around five microns, or five thousandths of a millimetre. I think

you'll agree that such a tide is completely negligible and for almost all purposes can be completely ignored!

Whose idea was it to decide to view the Earth as we do, with Australia down under, and so on?

Peter Tierney (Ireland)

That, I'm afraid, has very little to do with astronomy and more to do with politics. Most of the world maps were originally drawn by Europeans, who put Europe in the middle and at the top of the map. The poles are easy to define as the axis around which the Earth rotates, but what is much harder is the reference point in terms of longitude. Today, we measure longitude relative to the Greenwich Meridian, sometimes called the Prime Meridian. Even this convention was political, being chosen over other alternatives that passed through Paris and Antwerp.

How far does the Earth rotate in a single day? One might assume 360 degrees, but in one day the Earth travels a small distance around the Sun.

David Vickers (Wirral, Merseyside)

In one day, the Earth moves one 365th of its orbit around the Sun, which corresponds to around one degree. This means that the Earth must actually rotate by about 361 degrees to face the Sun again. The length of our day is based on the Sun, and is called the solar day. While the time between two consecutive sunrises varies throughout the year (being longer in the winter and shorter in the summer), on average they are 24 hours apart. This is distinct from the 'sidereal day', which lasts around 23 hours and 56 minutes, and corresponds to the time it takes for the Earth to rotate on its axis once relative to the distant stars. In one year, there is one more sidereal day than solar day.

Setting aside the maths for now, if the Earth had a sister planet on the exact opposite side of the Sun, is it possible that we'd have missed such a planet?

John van Dieken (Fife, Scotland)

There are a number of space probes that have travelled far enough from Earth to be able to look back at its orbit. Many of the missions to other planets have looked back at Earth's location, and so can see the point on the other side of the Solar System. In 1990, the *Voyager 1* spacecraft took a 'family portrait' of six of the planets from its vantage point six billion kilometres away from the Sun, providing an image of our own 'pale blue dot'. The *Cassini* probe has also been able to record the Earth as seen through the rings of Saturn, which is a stunning image.

But the best view of anything opposite the Earth would be provided by the two STEREO spacecraft. While they are designed primarily to observe the Sun, they are also looking at the surrounding area in order to track solar flares and coronal mass ejections. The two probes are orbiting the Sun at slightly different speeds relative to the Earth, so that one gradually pulls ahead while the other falls behind in its orbital path. Launched in 2006, their gaze has swept around until they are now almost exactly opposite each other. Their constant vigil not only allows astronomers to track

material coming from the Sun, but also provides an excellent way of finding and tracking asteroids and comets. If there were anything opposite the Earth, they would definitely have seen it.

There is a gravitational 'sweetspot' opposite the Earth, just a touch closer to the Sun than the Earth, called a Lagrange Point. In principle, an object placed there would orbit exactly once a year, but it would be incredibly susceptible to perturbations from other objects, and would not stay there for long.

Does the Earth hold the record for the lowest known temperature?

Sandy (Scotland)

The coldest known natural temperature in the Solar System is actually on the Moon, near the edge of Hermite Crater near the Moon's north pole. At a chilly minus 248 Celsius, just 25 degrees above absolute zero, this makes it much colder than the equator of Pluto, which is a positively balmy minus 189 Celsius. The low temperature is due to the fact that this northerly region of the Moon very rarely sees sunlight, thanks in part to the crater walls that leave it in shadow.

The coldest place that we know of in space was at the core of the Planck satellite, which had detectors cooled down to a tenth of a degree above absolute zero, at minus 273.05 Celsius. On Earth, key parts of some ultra-low-temperature physics experiments are less than a billionth of a degree above absolute zero!

If the Sun stopped working on 1 April, how quickly would all life disappear from the Earth?

Robert Gillespie (Brighton, East Sussex)

If the Sun were to suddenly be switched off, which would certainly be an impressive April Fool's prank, there would obviously be a significant effect on the Earth. The majority of the warmth and light we receive comes from the Sun, and so it would obviously get rather cold and dark. The darkness would happen instantly, though the ground and atmosphere would retain some heat. Consider a night following a summer's day, when the temperature in the UK might only fall as low as 15 Celsius or thereabouts. It would take some time for the temperature to drop significantly, though other areas of the Earth might notice a larger effect.

The Sun has an important impact on our weather. It is the heating of the air by sunlight that creates clouds and weather systems. The effect of suddenly removing the solar heating could have drastic consequences, though since we do not fully understand the effect of the Sun on the weather when it is behaving normally, it is hard to predict what might happen were it to suddenly turn off.

Over longer timescales, we can think of the Antarctic plains, where the temperature can drop as low as minus 80 Celsius in midwinter. Certainly, the oceans would freeze and the land areas would be covered by a thick layer of ice as all the water vapour in the atmosphere would freeze out. With no heating from the Sun whatsoever, the temperatures would likely drop much lower than that. Very inhospitable, though not bad for some naked-eye observing – the skies would be clear, but you'd have to wrap up warm!

The icy temperatures would kill off almost all life on land or near the ocean's surface, probably in a matter of days or less. In built-up areas, pockets of humanity

might survive, buried deep under the ice. Artificial heating and lighting might be possible for a while, but securing a source of fuel might be tricky.

The only source of energy, aside from burning fuel, would be from the ground itself. Some regions, such as Iceland, currently get much of their power from geothermal energy, and this might continue to be possible. It would certainly not be possible to maintain anywhere near the current population, creating a rather post-apocalyptic scenario.

Not all life would necessarily die, though, as there is some that does not require sunlight. There are 'black smokers' on the sea floor that are populated by a variety of life. At depths of several kilometres, the sunlight does not directly reach the sea floor, but there is a huge amount of energy supplied from these volcanic vents. This energy maintains a surprisingly advanced ecosystem which includes creatures not unlike shrimps, all of which survive solely on the geothermal energy, though they do rely on a liquid ocean which is only present due to sunlight. At the risk of some wild speculation, the heat might be sufficient to prevent small volumes of water from freezing, allowing at least the more basic life forms to survive.

Other forms of life have no direct reliance on the Sun at all, such as microbes that live deep within the rock. These microbes live a very sedate lifestyle, and it is their discovery that led to experiments which proved that some life forms can hibernate in deep space for significant lengths of time. Perhaps, if this is the case, then life might once again begin to thrive on the Earth if the Sun got turned back on.

If it were an April Fool, of course, the Sun would presumably turn back on at midday, so the main effects would be having to keep the central heating on for a little longer than normal!

What stops the Earth and Moon colliding due to their gravitational pull?

Ken Barraclough (Sheffield, South Yorkshire)

The Moon is kept in orbit around the Earth by its speed. If it were suddenly stopped dead in space, then gravity would cause it to fall towards the Earth, which would create rather a large splash! One can think of being in orbit as continually falling, but moving so quickly that by the time you've fallen a metre downwards you've moved so far sideways that the curvature of the Earth means that the ground has receded by a metre. That's easier to imagine for an astronaut in orbit at an altitude of a few hundred kilometres, but the same is true of the Moon at a distance of a few hundred thousand kilometres.

From time to time, we observe transits of Mercury and Venus across the face of the Sun. Would it be possible to observe similar transits of Earth from Mars?

Richard Allen (East Grinstead, West Sussex)

Yes, it would, though there has not yet been a telescope or camera sent to Mars that is capable of capturing the image. Mars' orbit is only tilted to the Earth's by a little under two degrees, compared with over three degrees for Venus and seven degrees for Mercury. That would make the Earth transits from Mars a little more regular than those we see of Venus, with the next one due to take place in 2084 – I wonder if anyone will see it?

Mercury, Venus and Mars

Could Mercury be the remnant core of a 'hot Jupiter' planet in the early Solar System?

Robert Jones (Staffordshire)

Mercury is an oddity because it contains such a large quantity of iron given the rather diminutive size of the planet. There have been numerous theories proposed over the years to explain this, with the most widely accepted in recent years being that Mercury may be the core of a larger planet. Such a planet could have been hit by another large object, removing much of the outer layers and leaving just the inner layers. The original planet would not have been a 'hot Jupiter' like the giant planets we see in other solar systems, but could have been a larger rocky planet not unlike the Earth.

This theory has recently been thrown into doubt, however, by measurements made by the *Messenger* probe, which is in orbit around Mercury. *Messenger* discovered that there were more volatile elements present on the surface of Mercury than should be present if the planet had been subjected to a massive impact. These elements, which include potassium, thorium and uranium, would have been removed by the high temperatures involved in the process, reacting to form other compounds.

These new measurements point instead towards the planet having formed of material with a slightly different composition from the other planets, most likely because of its proximity to the Sun. There are still a number of mysteries surrounding the origin of Mercury, but missions such as *Messenger* are starting to provide a few clues.

How has Venus managed to retain its atmosphere, despite the strength of the solar wind to which it is exposed, while Mars has lost its atmosphere?

Alex Andrews (Oxford)

To compare these two planets, it's actually easier to relate them to Earth. First, let's look at Mars, which has lost most – but not all – of its atmosphere. There are two important differences between Earth and Mars: Earth is somewhat larger and more massive than Mars, and also has a global magnetic field caused by the molten core. The larger mass helps the Earth to hold on to more gas, which might otherwise be stripped away by the solar wind coming from the Sun. The magnetic field means that the planet and its atmosphere are much better protected from the energetic particles in the solar wind. So we can understand Mars. Most of the particles don't reach the Earth's surface, and the few that get close help create the Northern Lights.

Venus, however, is a lot more difficult to understand, and we're not yet sure that we do. The planet is about the same size as the Earth but closer to the Sun, so the higher-intensity solar wind should strip off more of the atmosphere. In addition,

Venus has no magnetic field, and therefore no protection – so how has it kept not just an atmosphere, but an incredibly thick one?

We believe that the reason is that the atmosphere is actually too thick, which sounds rather peculiar. On the sunward side of Venus, ultraviolet light from the Sun hits the molecules in the top of Venus's atmosphere and strips off their electrons. These incomplete atoms form an ionosphere which is positively charged, and we have one here on Earth. The difference is that Venus's atmosphere is so thick that the ionosphere creates a much stronger barrier than the Earth, and shields what's below from the Sun's radiation – without the need for a magnetic field. It's not perfect, though, and the Venus Express satellite has measured the stream of atmosphere being stripped off and pushed away from the Sun. This might not mean that Venus is going to lose its atmosphere, as it could be regenerating it. The variation of the concentration of sulphur dioxide in its atmosphere, combined with the detection of hot regions on its surface, leads to the conclusion that Venus probably has active volcanoes on its surface. The gases emitted by these volcanoes could replenish the gas that is lost to space.

The fact that we have three planets that in terms of size and mass are so similar, but which are actually so different, is very interesting. Could Earth-like planets in other solar systems actually be like Earth, or will some be more like Venus?

Why does Venus rotate on its axis in the opposite direction to the other planets?

Tim T (Nottingham)

Venus spins on its axis in the opposite direction to the other planets, though it does so very slowly. In fact, it takes Venus longer to spin on its axis than it takes it to orbit the Sun. The reason for this is not entirely clear, though there are a few possibilities.

One is that a series of impacts caused the planet to stop rotating in a clockwise sense and start rotating in this 'retrograde' manner. Another is that its thick atmosphere experiences strong tides caused by the Sun, which have caused it to stop rotating. Measurements by astronomers in the 1960s, updated by orbiting spacecraft such as *Venus Express*, have established that the atmosphere is rotating incredibly fast, taking just four Earth days to complete one revolution compared with the 243 days it takes the planet itself to rotate.

Does Mars have volcanoes?

Hannah Thomas (Basingstoke, Hampshire)

There are no active volcanoes on Mars, though there are lots of extinct examples. The most famous is Olympus Mons, which is the largest mountain in the Solar System at almost 25 kilometres high. There are also volcanoes in the Tharsis region of Mars, which can sometimes be picked out by a modest telescope thanks to clouds that appear around their peaks.

Almost all the volcanoes on Mars were formed by hotspots in the planet's mantle, causing magma to swell up and break through the surface. This also happens on Earth, though the majority of our volcanoes are caused by the movement of tectonic plates. An example of hotspot volcanoes on Earth are the Hawaiian islands in the middle of the Pacific Ocean, where the motion of the tectonic plates has lead to the

creation of a chain of volcanoes.

There is no evidence of similar tectonic motion on Mars, and the planet is not largely geologically active. There is some evidence, namely the presence of methane in the atmosphere, which could indicate that there are weak geological processes still taking place today, though not powerful enough to create volcanoes.

What evidence is there that the solar wind is responsible for the loss of the Martian atmosphere?

Alex Mackie (Stirlingshire)

A number of spacecraft have visited Mars and detected a stream of ionised particles being stripped from its ionosphere. This is an upper layer of the atmosphere that contains particles that are ionised by radiation from the Sun. The solar wind can strip the particles from the atmosphere, carrying them away from the Sun. Such a flow of particles can be measured by instruments on the *Mars Express* spacecraft. The results show that Mars is losing particles from its upper atmosphere at a rate of up to one kilogram per second, with increases coinciding with increases in the strength of the solar wind.

If Mars had been a little bigger and Venus a little smaller, could we have had three Earth-like planets in our Solar System?

Karen Cappleman (Kent)

It is certainly possible that the two planets would be more hospitable if Mars were closer to the Sun and Venus were a little further away. But the distance from the Sun and the mass of the planet are not the only things that determine the thickness of a planet's atmosphere.

A larger planet can generally maintain a thicker atmosphere due to its larger gravity, and since Mars is one-eighth the mass of Venus this would seem to be a reasonable explanation. But that doesn't explain why Saturn's moon Titan, which is only slightly smaller than Mars, has such a thick atmosphere. There are clearly other processes at work than simply gravity.

The solar wind, a stream of charged particles flowing from the Sun, can strip planets of their atmosphere, which is what appears to have happened on Mars. Earth's magnetic field offers protection from the solar wind by deflecting the charged particles, but Venus has no magnetic field. Instead, it would appear that the solar wind ionises Venus's thick atmosphere to such a degree that the planet's ionosphere creates a protective barrier that deflects the worst of the solar wind.

Perhaps Venus used to have a stronger magnetic field, allowing its atmosphere to become thicker, but which died away over time. Impacts from asteroids and comets may also play a factor, since these can cause the atmosphere to be blown away. Mars, being closer to the main asteroid belt, may have experienced more impacts in its early life than Venus.

So if Venus and Mars had switched places early on in the history of the Solar System, then it's possible that we would have three more Earth-like planets, but it is also possible that they would still have ended up being inhospitable. Since we only have one solar system to study in enough detail, we shall have to wait until we have found enough that we can make a proper statistical analysis to investigate the

various effects.

Jupiter

Sometimes Jupiter is described as a failed star. Is that right?

Jon Culshaw (London)

We don't think so, as we believe that stars and planets form differently. A star is a pure condensation of gas, with the pressure and density in the centre high enough to allow nuclear fusion to take place. Our understanding is that Jupiter probably has a rocky core at its centre, possibly about the size of the Earth, and that the gas accreted at a later stage.

Besides, describing something like Jupiter as a failed star is a little unfair – it would be like calling a shrub a failed tree!

How is longitude assigned to the other bodies, especially if they have a moving atmosphere?

Derryck Morton (Devon)

Assigning longitude to other bodies is actually done in a similar way to that on Earth – by picking a reference point and sticking to it. On Earth, the consensus was to use the Greenwich Meridian, while on the Moon it was the centre of the Earth-facing side. Other solid bodies have similar reference points set, even asteroids, and this is often a particularly notable crater or other unmoving feature.

Planets with rapidly changing atmospheres, such as Jupiter, are more difficult to map. The main body of Jupiter rotates in 9 hours 55 minutes, as measured by the rotation of its magnetic field. The clouds rotate at slightly different speeds, with those near the equator rotating faster than those at higher latitudes. The difference means that the cloud patterns change over the course of a rotation, and there are certainly differences if measured from night to night. To provide a consensus for observers, Jupiter is given three coordinate systems, imaginatively called System I, System II and System III. The first relates to the equatorial cloud features, the second to the clouds nearer the poles, and the third to the rotation of the planet itself (measured by the rotation of its magnetic field). While this is not a perfect solution it does provide a way for astronomers to compare notes without too much difficulty. The challenge is that to make a map one needs to know the current positions of the longitude coordinate systems relative to one another.

I understand that there are electrical storms in Jupiter's atmosphere. Would these be accompanied by sound, and if so would there be a difference in the sound that we hear on Earth?

Peter Salter (Great Yarmouth, Norfolk)

There are indeed electrical storms in the atmosphere of Jupiter, discovered in 1979 by the *Voyager 1* spacecraft. The radio waves produced by the spark were detected along with an image of flashes on the dark side of the planet. In 2000, the *Cassini* spacecraft flew past Jupiter on its way out to Saturn and took pictures of lightning storms, which coincided with the locations of storm clouds.

A lightning strike heats a column of air to tens of thousands of degrees for less than a thousandth of a second, and the resulting shockwave is what causes the sound of thunder. The frequency of the sound is dependent on the properties of the shockwave, which depend on the pressure and density of the atmosphere and on the energy released. The atmosphere of Jupiter changes rapidly with altitude, as the pressure and density both increase, and so the frequency of the sound generated would depend on your altitude. In the upper layers of the atmosphere, the sound generated would probably have a lower frequency than the sound we hear on Earth.

Thunder and lightning can have effects on an atmosphere other than making people jump and blowing up televisions. In particular, the energy of a lightning strike can have an effect on the chemical composition. Experiments have been conducted for decades, starting in the 1950s, to try to artificially create life. This was attempted by generating sparks in a prebiotic soup similar to that which existed on the early Earth. While artificial life has yet to be found, such experiments generate a surprising variety of amino acids, which make up proteins. Comparable experiments with gases similar to those found in Jupiter's atmosphere show that, while there is more energy released, the abundance of hydrogen suppresses the chemical evolution. So I wouldn't start hoping for the discovery of any floating microbes of gas-cloud creatures listening to the low rumbles of Jovian thunder.

When *The Sky at Night* started, there were nine planets and very few moons (Jupiter had 12, for example). What do you think will be the state of play in another 50 years?

Rob Johnson (Liverpool)

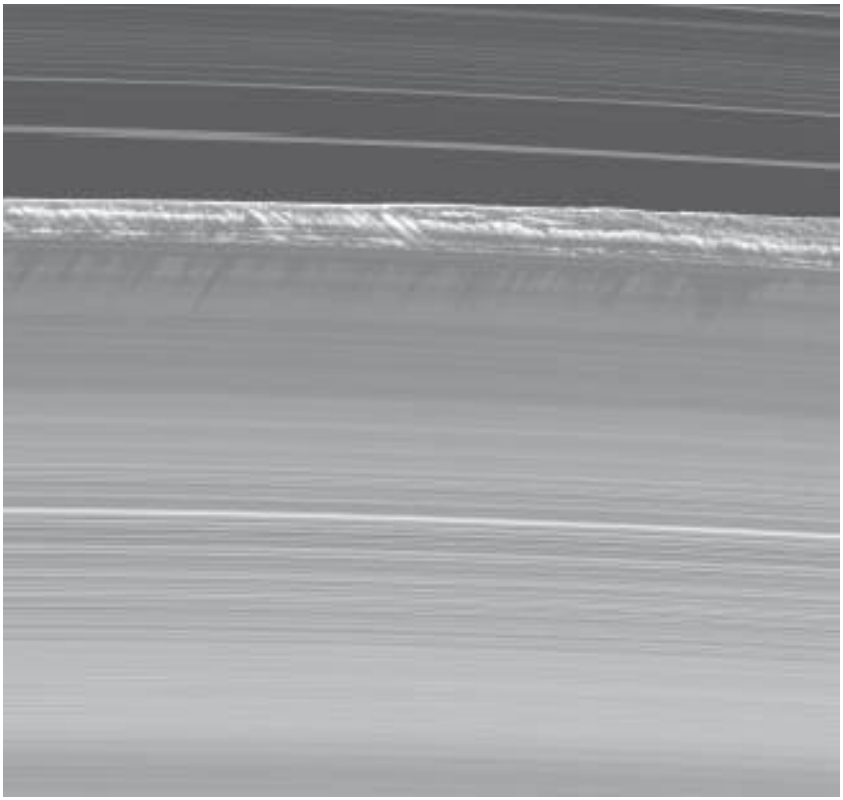
In 1957 there were twelve moons of Jupiter, nine of Saturn, five of Uranus and two of Neptune. Over the decades, the numbers gradually rose as telescopes became better and more observations were made. There were several jumps, for example when the *Voyager* spacecraft visited the outer planets, allowing a much closer view of the systems.

Perhaps surprisingly, more recent visits by spacecraft have not been as productive as one might imagine. The *Galileo* spacecraft did not discover any new moons of Jupiter, though the *Cassini* probe has allowed the discovery of eight Saturnian moons. The most efficient method for finding moons of the outer planets has been to conduct surveys of the regions of sky around these planets. A number teams have made discoveries, though one led by Scott Sheppard has been particularly fruitful in the last decade or so. The majority of the new satellites discovered are the so-called irregular satellites, which are often very small with diameters of a few kilometres or less, and with orbits that are significantly tilted to the equator.

There are now more than 60 known moons of both Jupiter and Saturn, almost 30 orbiting Uranus and more than a dozen around Neptune. It is likely that most of the moons of Jupiter and Saturn have been discovered, though observations of Uranus and Neptune are far less sensitive to the smaller moons, simply because of the enormous distances of these planets from Earth. It is likely that Uranus and Neptune

both have sizable populations of small moons, though perhaps not quite as many as the larger gas giants of Jupiter and Saturn.

An easier way of finding these small moons may be to use infrared telescopes, which would look for their heat signatures rather than their reflected light. Infrared astronomy is still a relatively immature field, though the results of the WISE mission and at the Herschel Space Observatory indicate that it has a very promising future. In another 50 years, I [CN] would hope that large infrared telescopes would have been placed into orbit and knowledge of moons around Uranus and Neptune advanced significantly.



The rings of Saturn in springtime, illuminated edge-on by the Sun. The shadows are cast by ring particles disturbed by the passage of moons. The *Cassini* probe's observations of the rings have shown that the rings are incredibly thin.

Saturn

Why are the rings of Saturn almost entirely made up of water ice and not rocky materials?

Carl Harris (Cwmbran, South Wales)

That simply reflects the composition of the Solar System at that distance from the Sun. The outer planets have a much higher abundance of what are called 'volatile compounds', such as methane (carbon and hydrogen), ammonia (nitrogen and hydrogen), carbon monoxide (carbon and oxygen) and water (oxygen and hydrogen).

Closer to the Sun, these compounds are broken up by the young Sun's intense light and so could not condense into planets. That is why the inner planets are made

of elements and compounds with higher melting points, such as metals. Since these heavier elements are much rarer, the inner planets are much smaller. It is in fact the inner planets that are unusual rather than the objects in the outer Solar System.

The point beyond which these ices can form is called the ice line, or sometimes the frost line or snow line, and it lies three or four times further from the Sun than the Earth. This places it between the orbits of Mars and Jupiter, within the asteroid belt. The easiest ice to form is water ice, with methane and other ices only forming within the atmospheres of the planets, where they are shielded from the Sun's light.

Saturn's rings are made of material which either formed from a moon that broke up, or from material that was unable to form into a moon. They are therefore made of the same stuff as the moons of Saturn, primarily of water ice with small amounts of rocky material.

Why do Saturn's rings have such a flat, circular shape?

Ellen Hartmeijer (Amsterdam, the Netherlands)

The rings are likely to have formed from one of two processes: either a moon broke up, or it was impossible for a moon to form due to tidal forces. The age of the rings has been a long-running debate, with recent evidence suggesting that they have been around since shortly after the formation of the Solar System.

Gravity causes a cloud of material to fall inwards, but the centrifugal force caused by rotation means that it stays inflated in the plane of the rotation. This is the same reason that galaxies and solar systems form discs. With particles as small as those in the rings, most being less than a thousandth of a millimetre in size, the process is much quicker.

The true thinness of the rings was discovered in 2009 during the most recent equinox on Saturn, when the rings were viewed edge-on from Earth. The *Cassini* probe, orbiting Saturn, gathered remarkable images of shadows cast by one part of the rings on another. As well as showing streams of ring particles pulled upwards by some of Saturn's moons, the images revealed that the rings are just tens of metres thick.

Are Saturn's rings perfectly circular, or actually elliptical and just very close to being circular?

Peter Williams (Carmarthenshire, Wales)

With no external forces, the orbit of small objects around a planet or star will eventually become circular. But most objects do not orbit in isolation, and that is certainly true of ring particles. The orbits of the particles are affected by Saturn's moons, pulling them into slightly elliptical orbits. The perturbing forces of the closer moons, such as Prometheus and Pandora, create waves and amazing spoke-like structures.

Is Saturn's moon Prometheus causing the distortion of the debris in the planet's outer ring?

Anne Edwards (Beckenham, Kent)

There are a number of moons that orbit close to Saturn's rings, and these are often called 'shepherd moons'. Prometheus and another small moon, Pandora, orbit either side of the F ring, which is the narrowest of the distinct divisions of the rings. Other sections of the rings have similar shepherd moons, such as Atlas which patrols the outer edge of the A ring. Other moons are the cause of gaps in the rings, such as Pan which orbits in the Encke Gap within the A ring.

The rings of Saturn are as mysterious as they are wonderful, which makes them particularly fascinating. I [CN] often think it is a shame the rings have such boring names, having simply been assigned letters in alphabetical order of discovery.

What is the cause of the hexagonal feature near Saturn's north pole?

Nigel Asher (UK)

The clouds at Saturn's north pole are dominated by a hexagonal feature, which looks surprising regular. Its origin was a mystery at first, though it now seems that it is the result of the wind speeds at those high latitudes. If there are two bands of cloud moving at different speeds then this can set up a wave-like motion. This wave just so happens to experience almost exactly six oscillations in one revolution around the planet, and so the hexagon feature is formed.

The feature requires the wind speeds to be varying in just the right way, and so such regular patterns are unusual. Laboratory experiments have shown that in different circumstances there could be a different shape there, perhaps a septagon (with seven sides) or maybe even a triangle.

Are there tides on Titan caused by Saturn's gravity? What types of sedimentary features are likely to be produced by flowing hydrocarbons on Titan?

Ben Slater (Claverdon, Warwickshire)

Titan is tidally locked to Saturn and so has one face towards it at all times, just as our Moon does to the Earth. However, there are seasons on Titan, and these create changes in the water cycle. The *Cassini* probe has seen clouds in the atmosphere as well as lakes, which are detected through their radar reflections.

The lakes are filled not with water, which is frozen at these temperatures, but of a mixture of ethane and methane. The lakes have been observed to fill up after clouds have passed and then empty again, showing that there is flowing liquid on the surface. When the liquid drains away, it will leave a sedimentary layer behind, and there are channels cut through the soggy lake beds. It seems that on Titan the lakes have beaches, though the hazy atmosphere and freezing temperatures make it a little unsuitable for sunbathing!

Why is it that gas giants have a large number of moons, while terrestrial planets such as Earth do not?

Edward Ignasiak (Enfield, Middlesex)

The moons of the gas giants almost certainly fall into two different categories. The larger ones probably formed along with the planets, such as Jupiter's large moons Io, Europa, Callisto and Ganymede. When the core of Jupiter formed out of the disc of

material around the Sun, these moons would have formed at the same time. The same is almost certainly true of Saturn's larger moons, such as Titan and Rhea. Most of the other moons around Jupiter and Saturn are much smaller, and we believe that most of these would have been asteroids that have strayed too close and ended up being captured into orbit. Some of these moons are very peculiar indeed, with many having orbits that are tilted at relatively large angles, and some even orbiting backwards.

Of course, the outermost planets, Uranus and Neptune, are nowhere near the asteroid belt, so where did their moons come from? Those that didn't form in situ are probably captured from the Kuiper Belt, which is a little further out from Neptune and contains objects such as Pluto. Beyond the Kuiper Belt there is the Oort cloud, which is populated by comets, and it's possible that some of the weirdest moons are comets that were captured as they made their way in towards the inner Solar System. Take, for example, Saturn's moon Hyperion. With such a heavily pitted surface, not unlike a sponge, it is quite clearly very different from its companions. The question is why – is it because of something that happened to it, or is it because it originated in a very different part of the Solar System?

Surely one of the oddest moons in the entire Solar System, Hyperion has a bizarre sponge-like appearance.

The Outer Solar System

In spite of the very cold temperatures on the outer edges of our Solar System, how can Neptune's largest moon, Triton, generate the ice geysers first seen by the *Voyager 2* spacecraft in 1989?

Gerard Gilligan (Liverpool Astronomical Society)

This is one mystery that still remains from *Voyager*'s flyby of Neptune. The towering geysers were a big surprise but, since we only got that one brief glimpse over twenty years ago, it's very hard to be certain. We have limited amounts of additional information as well, such as the fact that it is known to have a very tenuous atmosphere, and that the surface appears to be rather young. This indicates that there may be a source of vapour, which the geysers would provide, and also that the geysers would be replenishing the surface material over time.

There are two main possibilities that are generally considered. First of all, the geysers could be created in a similar way to volcanic activity on the other planets, using energy from an internal heat source. Triton is pretty small, but there could be small amounts of radioactive material which could keep it warm. Out at this distance from the Sun, there would only need to be a slight temperature difference to create the geysers we can see. Rather than the heat melting rock, as on Earth, the heat would melt the ices on the surface – hence its name of 'cryovolcanism'.

The other option is that the Sun's light can penetrate the nitrogen ice on the surface and increase the pressure of gases beneath. In the places where the ice is thin, the gas could break through – not unlike the outgassing that occurs on the surfaces of comets to create their tails. This is supported by the fact that all the geysers seem to be clustered on the sunlit side of the Moon.

What we don't think is happening is that there is a sub-surface ocean like those thought to exist on Saturn's moon Enceladus and Jupiter's moon Europa. These oceans rely on heating due to the tidal forces between the moon and the planet, but Triton is so far from Neptune that there would not be sufficient heating to create the observed effect. All in all, a very interesting world, and one well worth visiting if we ever send a probe out to Neptune.

Is it true that Pluto has not made a full orbit since records began?

Darren Donaldson (Rosyth, Scotland)

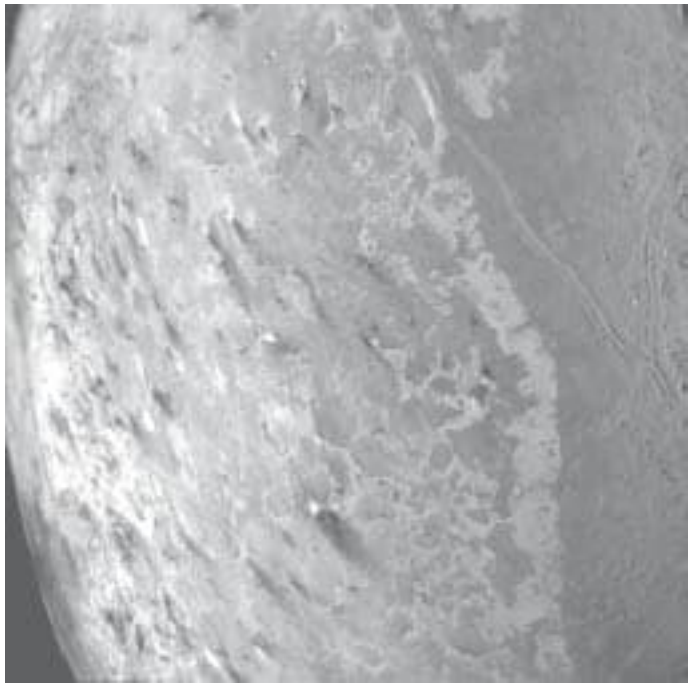
Pluto was discovered in 1930 by Clyde Tombaugh. Orbiting between 30 and 50 times further from the Sun than the Earth does, Pluto takes 248 years to complete one revolution. It has therefore only moved a third of the way round its orbit since its discovery.

Of course, from Pluto's point of view it's made many orbits, having been touring the outer Solar System for billions of years.

Is there enough mass in the Kuiper Belt to form a real planet or two, and if so why has this not happened yet?

Chris Stinson (Nuneaton, Warwickshire)

Although there are a few large objects out in the Kuiper Belt, these are few and far between. It seems that the entire mass of the Kuiper Belt is a fraction of the mass of the Earth, probably below ten per cent. The reason that the objects have not clumped together is that when they hit each other the fragments simply fly apart – they are moving too fast to be brought together by their mutual gravity. Some of these fragments end up drifting into the inner Solar System, where they make up about half the comets that are discovered.



The dark streaks seen in *Voyager 2*'s image of Triton are thought to be caused by cryovolcanoes, or ice geysers.

What are your thoughts on the declassification of Pluto?

Roy Jackson (Selsey, West Sussex)

Our thoughts on the classification of Pluto have no impact on anything aside from which part of a list it appears in. Whether we call it a planet or a dwarf planet, Pluto will still be there. In fact, most professional astronomers would probably say that they don't care what we call it.

The decision from the International Astronomical Union (IAU) in 1996 was prompted by the fact that we were discovering more Pluto-like objects, and that they

seemed to be different from the rest of the planets. The intention was to derive a scientific definition of a planet, though this would seem to be impossible; there will always be borderline cases. Grouping Pluto in with other similar objects seems the most sensible option, and there is little use in being emotional about it.

It is worth bearing in mind that Pluto is not the first planet to be demoted in this way. When Ceres was discovered in 1801 by Guiseppe Piazzi it was classified as the fifth planet from the Sun. By 1830, the Solar System had eleven planets: Mercury, Venus, Earth, Mars, Vesta, Juno, Ceres, Pallas, Jupiter, Saturn and Uranus (Neptune and Pluto were yet to be discovered). When more objects were discovered between the orbits of Mars and Jupiter it was realised that they were all similar and as a result they were demoted to 'minor planets' or asteroids. I suspect there was somewhat less of a public outcry about the declassification of Ceres in the nineteenth century than there was of Pluto in the twenty-first.

In 1996 there were many alternative naming schemes proposed, but the final decision from the IAU was to make a distinction between the eight planets and an increasing number of dwarf planets. The official designation of a planet is now:

> A celestial body that (a) is in orbit around the Sun, (b) has sufficient mass for its self-gravity to overcome rigid body forces so that it assumes a hydrostatic equilibrium (nearly round) shape, and (c) has cleared the neighbourhood around its orbit.

A dwarf planet is officially:

> A celestial body that (a) is in orbit around the Sun, (b) has sufficient mass for its self-gravity to overcome rigid body forces so that it assumes a hydrostatic equilibrium (nearly round) shape, (c) has not cleared the neighbourhood around its orbit and (d) is not a satellite.

Is the surface of Sedna made of red ice?

Rebecca Taylor (Chichester, West Sussex)

We don't know exactly what Sedna's surface is made of. From observations with the Keck and Gemini telescopes it seems to be one of the reddest objects in the Solar System, but it is not completely covered with ice. Sedna orbits in a huge ellipse between 76 and more than 900 times the distance of Earth from the Sun. It has orbited alone for billions of years, possibly sent out there by interactions with other planets – perhaps even one we have yet to discover. Over time, the solar radiation has broken down the methane and nitrogen ice, creating dark reddish-brown substances called tholins.

The term 'tholin' was coined in 1979 by Carl Sagan to describe molecules that could not be identified, and originates from the Greek word for 'muddy'. The substance is not unlike tar, and in fact Sagan nearly called it 'star-tar'!

***Voyagers 1* and *2* are on the verge of leaving the Solar System. What will they experience when they do so, and what lies in store for them over the next few millennia?**

Ed Davis (March, Cambridgeshire)

The *Voyager* spacecraft are wonderful missions. After showing us so much about the planets and the outer Solar System, they are now exploring the very edge of the Solar System. At almost 120 times as far from the Sun as the Earth, *Voyager 1* is the most distant man-made object ever, with *Voyager 2* not far behind at just shy of a hundred times the Earth-Sun distance.

The two probes are travelling in different directions, with *Voyager 1* heading up out of the plane of the Solar System and *Voyager 2* travelling in a downwards direction. This provides in situ measurements of the very limits of the Solar System in two different directions. This region is dominated by the solar wind and the effect of the interaction between the solar wind (the constant stream of charged particles emitted by the Sun) and the interstellar wind (a similar stream flowing between the stars).

The solar wind blows a bubble round the Sun, called a heliosphere and, as the Solar System moves through the Galaxy, this bubble pushes a shockwave ahead of it, much like the bow shock of an ocean liner. The outermost region of the heliosphere is called the heliosheath, and both *Voyagers* are in this region. There are now indications that *Voyager 1* is approaching the heliopause, the point at which the solar wind is stopped by the interstellar wind. It is marked by a change in direction of the particles and also the magnetic field. It was expected that the transition would be smooth, but it appears that the region is much 'frothier' than expected, with magnetic fields coiled tightly around regions of higher and lower particle density.

The *Voyager* probes are not unduly affected by the magnetic turbulence, as it is only the sensitive instruments on board that allow the flow of particles and the magnetic field to be detected. It is expected that *Voyager 1* will cross the heliopause and enter true interstellar space in the next five to ten years. All that the mission teams have to hope for is that the nuclear power generators on board do not dwindle and fade enough to cause them to turn off the instruments before we learn all we can about the very edge of the Solar System.

Once they've passed into interstellar space, they really will be in the unknown. Neither spacecraft is targeted at a specific star, though in around 40,000 years *Voyager 1* will pass within a couple of light years of the star AC+79 3888, and in around 260,000 years *Voyager 2* will zoom by Sirius at a distance of a little over four light years. The two craft are destined to wander through the Galaxy for eternity, though in many, many millennia they may end up being caught in orbit around another star. That is, of course, unless an alien spaceship uses them for target practice!

Is there any evidence, say from the WISE mission, that in the far reaches of the Oort cloud there could be a brown dwarf or even a dim red dwarf? Could future surveys such as Pan-STARRS or LSST prove otherwise?

Alan Davis (Winchester, Hampshire)

It is still possible that there is a very faint star or planet orbiting at a great distance from the Sun, though it would have to be very faint to not be found. There have been numerous claims over the decades that 'Planet X' or a brown dwarf has been found, though none have been proved true so far. In the 1980s, the IRAS infrared satellite detected a very faint anomalous source, though Planet X was only ever one of a large number of possibilities and has since been ruled out.

Having said that, the WISE mission surveyed the entire sky at infrared

wavelengths and managed to discover a new ultra-cool brown dwarf at a relatively close distance of around 15 light years. The fact that we didn't know these stars existed means that there could still be close objects which have not been found. If there is a brown dwarf orbiting near the outer limits of the Solar System, the WISE should see it, though it would only be able to detect objects with their own heat source; the reflected sunlight at such huge distances is too faint for WISE to pick up.

Asteroids and Comets

Why does the asteroid belt exist, and not another planet?

Ken Barraclough (Sheffield, South Yorkshire)

The asteroid belt is simply too close to Jupiter for a larger planet to form. With the huge gas giant so close, any larger proto-planets that started to coalesce from the rubble were ripped apart the next time Jupiter came past. What is left in the asteroid belt, however, would not form a large planet even if it could. The largest object is Ceres, which is less than a thousand kilometres across, and the total mass is equivalent to less than a thousandth that of the Earth.

Jupiter's impact on the asteroid belt may also be the reason that Mars is so small, having prevented any larger bodies from forming which might otherwise have contributed to the bulk of early Mars.

How do comets move through the sky?

Michael, age 4 (Marple Bridge, Greater Manchester)

Comets move slowly across the sky in the same way that planets do, with the Sun's gravity keeping them going round in their orbits. When they get close to the Sun, the bright sunlight starts to evaporate their surface, forming the comet's tail. This tail does not point backwards like a rocket, but instead directly away from the Sun, though sometimes they can curve round. The tail is always more impressive when the comet is closest to the Sun, when the sunlight is at its most intense.

Is it possible to estimate how many comets were needed to hit the Earth and fill its oceans with water? How much other material did they bring?

Mark Bullard (London)

The presence of oceans on the Earth sets it apart from the other planets, though their origin is not completely clear. The most widely accepted theory is that the early Earth was a hot, dry place, and that the oceans were deposited by comets or meteorites. The oceans cover more than two-thirds of the Earth's surface, amounting to 1.4 billion billion tonnes of water, or a volume of 1.5 billion cubic kilometres, which is a lot of bathtubs.

Comets seem a likely possible source. Often referred to as dirty snowballs, they are composed of rock and dust bound together by water ice, along with other frozen compounds such as methane, carbon dioxide and ammonia, all of which were common in the early Solar System. The solid nucleus of a comet is very small, with the largest being tens of kilometres across, but their diffuse atmosphere, or 'coma', can be much larger. This coma is comprised of gases that are released from the

surface by sunlight, and is incredibly tenuous – the closest approach to nothing that can still be anything!

The small size of comets means that hundreds of billions of them would have been needed to supply the Earth's oceans. This sounds like a lot, and it is, but around three to four billion years ago there was a period of the Solar System's history called the Late Heavy Bombardment. Small objects such as comets and asteroids were swarming the Solar System and impacted with many of the planets and moons. Many of the craters on the Moon come from this period, for example, and most of the water delivered to the Earth by comets would have arrived at this time.

The evidence for the Earth's water having originated in comets has been attributed to the chemical composition, in particular the ratio of hydrogen to deuterium (also called heavy hydrogen). The water currently on the Earth is richer in deuterium than the material that the Earth would have formed from, and so is thought to have arrived at a later date. One source could have been comets, though the composition of the water in most of the comets studied does not match the composition of the water on Earth. The only currently known exception is comet Hartley 2, which formed in a different place to the other comets observed. While the other comets formed in the region of Jupiter and Saturn before being flung out, Hartley 2 is one of those that formed in the Kuiper Belt. It is possible that the water on Earth was delivered by comets that formed in the Kuiper Belt, rather than those that formed further in. Since only a few comets have been measured in the appropriate way the truth is not yet known.

Comets are not the only possible source; many meteorites are found to have the same composition as the oceans and so are another possibility. A big factor in the discussion is whether the composition of the Earth's oceans has changed with time, though this is not certain.

Water is not the only thing comets and asteroids provide. Recent analysis of meteorites has shown that they have complex chemistry in them, thought to originate from reactions between the basic chemicals and sunlight. Some have even been found to have amino acids and the molecules that make up DNA, though we've yet to find any alien microbes actually riding a comet!

Where does the water in comets come from?

Dave Annear (Newquay, Cornwall)

Comets are left over from the very early Solar System, and are formed of the material that made up the nebula from which the Sun and planets formed. The comets formed in the outer reaches of the Solar System, where water ice was able to form grains. These grains accreted material and combined with rocky material to form the comets. The exact composition of the comets depends on where they formed, as those further out would have started to condense earlier. Those formed closer in would have taken longer to start condensing in the slightly warmer environment, and so have the composition of the solar nebula at a slightly later stage in its evolution.

Which comet that enters our Solar System goes farthest out into space?

Gerald Hutt (Okehampton, Devon)

Comets are split into three main groups, called short-period comets, long-period

comets and single-apparition comets. Short-period comets are those that have orbital periods of less than 200 years, while long-period comets have periods ranging up to millions of years. Single-apparition comets are those that will only ever be seen once, as they are travelling so fast that they will escape the Sun's gravity.

The fate of comets is rather difficult to predict, however, as there are many other contributing factors. Their orbits are calculated by noting their position very precisely over months or years and comparing that to what would be expected due to the Sun's gravity. A complication is that comets experience other forces as material is ejected from their surfaces by the pressure of sunlight. The loss of material is relatively slow and so these forces are small, but it adds uncertainty to the determination of their orbits. A more predictable, though equally complex, problem is the effect of the other planets. Comets that pass close to the gas giant planets can be set inwards to the inner Solar System, but also outwards into interstellar space.

Take, for example, comet Arend-Roland, formally known as 'C/1956 R1 (Arend-Roland)'. This made its closest pass to the Sun in April 1957, and was the subject of the first-ever episode of *The Sky at Night*, broadcast on 24 April 1957. The predictions of its orbit put it on a slightly hyperbolic path (i.e. one that would take it out of the Solar System), though there were still some uncertainties over the non-gravitational forces.

It does not seem likely, however, that these comets actually originate from outside the Solar System. Instead, they originate in the outer Solar System and are put on escape trajectories by encounters with the planets. Comet C/1980 E1, for example, used to be on a nice sedate orbit around the Sun, taking more than 7 million years to complete an orbit. It ranged from just inside the orbit of Jupiter to more than 77,000 times as far from the Sun as the Earth. This all changed in 1980, when it came within around 30 million kilometres of Jupiter. This relatively close encounter increased its speed so much that it will never return, unless it encounters another object on its way out. This comet is the fastest-moving natural object to be discovered leaving the Solar System.

How near to the Earth would an asteroid have to pass in order to cause any adverse effect?

Gillian Ann Jackson (Bedfordshire)

Compared with the Earth, asteroids are incredibly small and there is no danger posed by one passing close to the Earth. The largest asteroid, Ceres, is less than a thousand kilometres across and just only a millionth of the mass of the Earth. The vast majority are much smaller, with many being tens of metres across or smaller.

There are thought to be around a thousand near-Earth asteroids larger than one kilometre across and at least 20,000 larger than 100 metres across. While this may sound like a lot, it is worth remembering that the Solar System is absolutely huge compared to these asteroids and the Earth, and the chances of them hitting are very slight.

It is not unknown for asteroids to hit the Earth. Most of these are very small, and tens of thousands of tonnes of material falls to the Earth every year, primarily comprised of objects a few grams in mass. However, asteroids do not need to be particularly large to have a noticeable impact. In 1908, an object assumed to be around 30–50 metres across blew up above the Earth's surface before it hit the ground. This flattened trees over an area of 2,000 square kilometres in Tunguska,

Siberia, though there were no eyewitness accounts. A similar-sized object hit Arizona around 50,000 years ago, creating a crater around a kilometre across and 200 metres deep, which is commonly called a 'Meteor Crater'.

Larger impacts can have more serious consequences, as the dinosaurs discovered 65 million years ago, but these are incredibly rare.

In July 2002, a friend and I spotted what looked like an enormous asteroid skim off the atmosphere. Would it be possible to track it down after all this time?

Scott Hamilton (London)

It is likely that what you saw was in fact a very small asteroid, or possibly a fragment of space debris, burning up in the Earth's atmosphere, rather than skipping off. If it did skim off the atmosphere, which is possible, then tracking it after many years would require very accurate knowledge of its position. The predicted orbit is very sensitive to the precise speed and direction of the object, and without these the object is impossible to find again.

Is the UK investigating Earth-crossing asteroid detection and response methods?

Robert Ince (Preston, Lancashire)

There are a number of national and international projects to monitor near-Earth objects, such as the Spaceguard project. These tend to focus on two different strategies: finding and monitoring near-Earth objects, and developing strategies for what to do should we find one.

There are now a number of telescopes that are monitoring the skies in search of such objects, a notable one being PanSTARRS. There is also a vast network of amateur telescopes which are continuing to make discoveries. Thousands of new asteroids are discovered every month, and it is now thought that we have discovered 90 per cent of the near-Earth objects more than a kilometre across.

There are a number of proposals as to the course of action to take should we discover an asteroid or comet on an impact course. Most involve trying to change its orbit, though they are likely to take considerable time to implement.

The world has certainly woken up to the threat posed by near-Earth objects, and the skies are now being monitored. It will probably take the discovery of a serious threat for significant action to be taken over plans for what to do in the event that we discover an object on a collision course.

If sunlight touching an asteroid can move it in space, has the Earth been moved by light touching its surface?

Stephen Marshall (Cramlington, Northumberland)

Sunlight can have an effect on any object it touches, though the extent of the effect depends on the object's size. Tiny grains of dust and ice are pushed away relatively easily, as seen in comets' tails, but the effect on larger objects is much smaller. The pressure caused by the solar radiation is much lower for a dark, absorbing surface

than a bright, reflective one, and the adjustment of an asteroid's orbit by changing its reflectivity is one possible way of deflecting an object on a collision course.

All the large objects in the Solar System, from asteroids up to planets, have reached a balance in terms of the pressure from sunlight. Changes in solar radiation are very small, and so the outward pressure does not vary by significant amounts. A larger effect would have been present in the early Solar System, when the molecules and dust grains that would later form the Earth were being pushed outwards. Since the lighter molecules would have been pushed out more easily, you could argue that sunlight changed the composition of the Earth by removing some of the lighter elements.

Is it right that I might find small meteorites in the sludge in the gutters of our church roof, and if so how would I identify them?

Jessica Allen (Ipswich, Suffolk)

You may indeed be able to find meteorites in church gutters, as they are as likely to land on a roof as on any other area of the Earth's surface of a similar size. You might expect a meteorite to simply punch through a roof, but they can be moving surprisingly slowly.

You'll need to look carefully, though, as most meteorites are very small. The smaller ones would be easy to mistake for a bit of wind-blown dust, though larger objects would be harder to explain away with terrestrial explanations. If you do find something interesting, then the best thing to do is to send it to a local university or museum.

In 1965, I [PM] was lucky enough to find a meteorite. A fireball was seen hurtling through the skies over the UK and exploded over the village of Barwell, Leicestershire. I drove up there and asked the owner of the largest farmhouse if I could have a look around. He kindly agreed, and I found a fragment of rock protruding from the ground in a most unusual manner. The seven-inch fragment showed signs of scorching, which allowed me to identify it as a meteorite rather than any old lump of rock.

I took it to a local museum, which already had a number of fragments, one of which had entered a house via an open window and was found nestling coyly in a vase of artificial flowers! The agreement was that I would keep the fragment for display and leave it to the Science Museum in my will, which I have done. It now sits on the mantelpiece in my study.

How do we determine the age of a piece of rock, such as a meteorite?

Ingrid van Dam (Tilburg, the Netherlands)

Rocks and meteorites are aged using radioactive dating, using the decay of long-lived radioactive isotopes that occur naturally. These isotopes, such as uranium, decay to stable isotopes with long half-lives, sometimes measured in billions of years. In one half-life, half of the atoms will have decayed, and so by comparing the quantities of the un-decayed and decayed atoms the age of the rock can be calculated.

The oldest rocks found on the Earth are up to four billion years old but, since they were laid down in lava flows, the Earth must have formed before that. One problem with the radiometric dating methods is that they are 'reset' when the rock is melted

again. Older ages are gathered from studies of individual crystals, pushing it back to around 4.4 billion years.

Dozens of meteorites have been aged and found to be just over 4.5 billion years old, giving an accurate measurement of when the Solar System was formed.

Magnetic Fields

Do the north and south poles of planets act the same as the poles of magnets? Would two planets on a collision path with their north poles facing each other push each other away, or are they too weak?

Les Stringer (London)

The magnetic field of a planet is much, much weaker than the gravitational field. While the fields can have effects on the tiniest of particles, such as those in the stellar wind, they have no effect on larger objects. That is because while individual particles, such as protons and electrons, have an electric charge, large objects such as planets and asteroids do not. They have almost exactly the same number of positive charges and negative charges and so are electrically neutral.

Most planets don't have particularly strong magnetic fields, as these are caused by the movement of conductive materials below the surface. On Earth, the core constantly rotates, causing the magnetic field, but Mercury and Mars have both long solidified. Venus rotates too slowly to generate enough of the dynamo effect required to create a magnetic field.

Magnetic fields can only exist with a moving electric charge, i.e. an electric current, so why is electricity not taken into account in astrophysics?

Les Fulford (Llandrindod Wells, Powys)

Electric and magnetic fields are essentially two aspects of the same phenomenon, called the electromagnetic field. A stationary charge creates an electric field, while a moving charge creates a magnetic field. Large objects such as the Earth, the Sun and asteroids are electrically neutral, and so create no overall electric field.

There can be moving charges without an overall electric charge. Consider the centre of the Earth, where the metallic core is rotating. The movement of the charges in the core creates a magnetic field, but overall the core is electrically neutral. Another example is the solar wind, which is a stream of protons and electrons being driven from the Sun. Each particle has a charge and so reacts to the fields, but since there are the same number of positive particles as negative particles, the solar wind is electrically neutral.

On larger scales, magnetic and electric fields are extremely important when we want to understand the forces on ionised gases around planets, the solar corona, the radiation from neutron stars, and the alignment of dust grains in the spiral arms of galaxies. For many bodies, however, they can be ignored for understanding what is going on.

From Beginning to End

Since the Earth is around a third the age of the Universe, how has there been time to form all the elements in nature?

Ron Sexton (Cam, Gloucestershire)

There may be many elements in nature, but they are not very abundant compared to hydrogen and helium. The Universe as a whole is 75 per cent hydrogen and 25 per cent helium, with very small amounts of other elements. The heavier elements, such as carbon, oxygen and iron, are created in the cores of stars, or when massive stars explode at the end of their lives.

The Sun is around five billion years old, so there was an eight-billion-year period of the Universe before the Sun formed. While eight billion years is not long enough for a star like the Sun to live and die, more massive stars live for much shorter periods. The first stars were probably much more massive than the Sun, living for just millions of years, and it is in these most massive of stars that the majority of the heavier elements are produced.

The Earth itself is not composed of 75 per cent hydrogen, and the most abundant element is in fact oxygen. That is because in the early Solar System the intense light from the Sun prevented hydrogen from condensing and pushed it into the outer regions. Beyond around four times the distance of the Earth from the Sun, there is much more hydrogen and the composition of the giant planets reflects this. On Earth, the chemistry is dominated by iron, oxygen, silicon and magnesium, which are some of the elements that make up most of the planet.

During its formation, the Earth became differentiated, meaning that many of the heavier elements, particularly iron and gold, sank to the centre. That left oxygen, silicon and magnesium to make up the bulk of the Earth's crust and mantle. Around 160 parts per billion (by weight) of the entire bulk of the Earth are made of gold, for example, but in the crust that decreases to one part per billion. Gold is not the rarest element in the Earth, but it has the advantages of not corroding and looking rather shiny when polished, something which has appealed to humans for thousands of years.

Which came first, the gas giants or the solid, rocky planets?

Rosemary Davis (Bristol)

The planets would all have begun to accrete out of the material in the early Solar System at roughly the same time, though we believe some formed faster than others. The exact processes involved are a matter of much debate, with some believing that the gas giants form in a way similar to stars, as clumps of gas growing from the proto-stellar disc, while others suggest that the cores formed first.

Most of the material in the Solar System is made of hydrogen, with a smaller

amount of helium and relatively tiny amounts of the heavier elements such as oxygen, carbon and iron. The hydrogen would have been mainly in the form of gases, such as methane, ammonia and water, while the heavier elements would have formed dust grains that built up into larger and larger rocks.

The intense radiation from the young Sun, however, would have split the Solar System into two main regions. In the cold outer regions, the material can clump together freely, with the gas sticking to the dusty clumps and growing into small, gassy proto-planets. In the inner Solar System, where the Sun's radiation is somewhat more intense, the gas is broken down and blown outwards. That leaves just the relatively small amounts of the heavier elements in the form of dust and asteroids. The boundary between these two is called the ice line, or sometimes the frost line or snow line, and today lies somewhere in the asteroid belt.

In the outer Solar System, the gases condensed onto the surfaces of the small proto-planets and froze, helping these proto-planetary cores grow rapidly. The large quantities of hydrogen and helium increased the mass of the proto-planets and let them grow even faster, forming planetary cores several times the mass of the Earth in just a few million years. In the inner Solar System, this gas is not present, and so the planets formed more slowly, taking perhaps ten million years or so. Since there is less material in the inner Solar System overall, thanks to the removal of the lighter gases, the inner planets are also much smaller. Initially, the material would have been composed of rocks, which gradually grow in size until a relatively small number of large objects dominate. These larger ones would have merged together to form the planets we know, with most going into the Earth and Venus, while the smaller planets, Mars and Mercury, would have been made of the 'leftovers'.

The real bulk of the gas giants, particular Jupiter and Saturn, only grew when they became massive enough that they could start accreting gas from the surrounding disc, reaching their present size in ten million years or so. The real problem for scientists studying planet formation is when the ice giants of Uranus and Neptune formed. These have large solid cores, more than ten times the mass of the Earth, which could not have formed at such large distances from the Sun. Instead, the consensus is that the cores formed closer to Jupiter and Saturn, but were then flung into the outer Solar System when the gas giants started to grow even larger. It has even been proposed that Jupiter migrated inwards briefly, and that this could be responsible for Mars' rather diminutive nature.

The details of how we think the planets formed are the result of computer simulations, and depend on the initial state of the disc around the young Sun. As computers get better, the simulations become more sophisticated, and I [CN] would not be surprised if our ideas of how the planets form evolve further. As we observe many more other solar systems at a range of stages of formation, we are starting to build up a better picture of how ours may have formed, both in terms of the processes involved and the conditions that existed to begin with.

When will life on Earth end, and why?

Granville Grey (Loughborough, Leicestershire)

By far the most significant factor in the continuation of life on Earth is the Sun. We humans could blow ourselves to kingdom come and eradicate all the larger species on Earth, but even then the insects and microbes would still survive.

It seems that the key is the presence of liquid water, which is only possible in a

narrow range of distances from the Sun called the Goldilocks zone. The Sun is very gradually warming up as it ages, and so this zone is very slowly moving outwards. In one or two billion years, the oceans will boil off due to the heat and the Earth will probably become uninhabitable. It is possible that some very basic forms of life will be able to survive, and the process is certainly slow enough that some may evolve to handle the searing heat, possibly by sheltering underground, though this is unlikely. The most likely fate of the Earth, however, is that it will be consumed when the Sun turns into a red giant in a few billion years. At that point, all life on Earth will certainly be unable to exist!

When the Sun turns into a red giant, it will become less massive. Does this mean that the Earth will move into a larger orbit, giving a bit of extra time before being consumed?

Ronald Mallier (Warrington, Cheshire)

The Sun will slowly lose mass as it turns into a red giant. Part of the reason for that is that it is constantly burning its nuclear fuel, converting it to energy. Every second, four million tonnes of the Sun disappears, being converted into sunlight by nuclear fusion in the Sun's core. But the Sun is really very massive, and that process has little effect. A more dominant effect is the solar wind, which will increase in strength as the Sun ages. In the last few hundred million years of its life, it will lose over a third of its mass, growing to two hundred times its current diameter.

This mass loss will cause the orbits of the planets to spiral outwards, and would seem to indicate that the Earth will escape a fiery death. However, as is so often the case, there is a catch. As the Sun expands and its surface gets closer, the tidal forces on the Earth will cause its orbit to decay and for it to spiral inwards. The spiral is likely to take just a few million years, which is short enough for it to spiral into the surface of the Sun before the star shrinks again.

Even Mars will probably not escape this fate, due to a combination of its orbit spiralling in and evaporation by the intense sunlight. Some studies indicate that even Jupiter will be partially evaporated by the ultra-luminous Sun, so even the moons of Jupiter may not be a sensible place to stop.

When the Sun is at its most luminous, the Goldilocks zone will have moved out into the Kuiper Belt, and so perhaps mankind will be living on Pluto. Of course, that won't last either because the Sun will then fade into a dim white dwarf, leaving the rest of the Solar System a frozen wasteland.

We've all been told about the fate of the inner rocky planets when the Sun dies. But what will happen to the gas and ice giants of the outer Solar System?

Baz Pearce (Bolton, Greater Manchester)

When the Sun enters its later phases of life, it will do two things. Firstly, it will grow much larger, with its surface reaching out to roughly where the Earth's orbit is now. Secondly, while its surface will actually cool slightly, the Sun will output a lot more energy – in its final stages its energy output will be around 10,000 times its current level. This is all due to the exhaustion of the supply of hydrogen in the Sun's core, meaning that it has to burn helium instead. We expect this to happen in a few billion years, and that this giant phase will last for around a billion years.

During that time, the conditions in the Solar System will be much warmer. While the inner planets will either be consumed by the Sun or become completely uninhabitable due to the heat, the outer planets will remain intact. There will probably be smaller effects, however. For example, the increased solar radiation and the stronger solar wind might blow off some of their atmospheres, while the increased temperature could change the chemistry and composition of the atmosphere.

What is particularly interesting is that the temperature on some of the moons of Jupiter and Saturn might actually become bearable for humans. This might make them suitable refuges for mankind, though the atmosphere would remain unbreathable. Once the giant phase of the Sun's life is over, however, it will dim to a tiny white dwarf, surrounded by a gorgeous planetary nebula. The Solar System will become desperately cold, and if anyone is still here that'll be the time to up sticks and find a new solar system.

Stars and Galaxies

Distances

What method is used to measure the distances to the stars, and how do we know that it is right?

Jonathan Phipps (Shropshire)

WHEN COMPARED TO human scales, the stars are almost unimaginably distant. Even the closest star is somewhere around 40 million million kilometres (25 million million miles) away. Written out as a number, it seems even further: 40,000,000,000,000 km! Even light, which travels at a staggering 300,000 km per second (186,000 miles per hour) takes around four years to cover such a vast distance. If a jet plane could travel in space, it would take around five million years to get there. Such large distances require a new unit of measurement, and in astronomy we use the light year, which is the distance light travels in a year: ten million million km (six million million miles). It then becomes easier to say that the closest star, Proxima Centauri, is around four light years away.

We obviously can't use a ruler to measure these distances, and they're too far for laser range finders. Instead, we use a system called 'parallax', which involves measuring the position of an object from different positions. You can see the effect of parallax by staring at an object in the far distance, then holding your finger up at arm's length. While staring at the distant object, close first one eye, then the other. Your finger will appear to move, an effect caused by the fact that your two eyes are not in the same place. The effect is smaller for objects which are more distant, as their apparent position changes less, and providing you know the separation of your eyes it is possible to work out the distance to your finger.

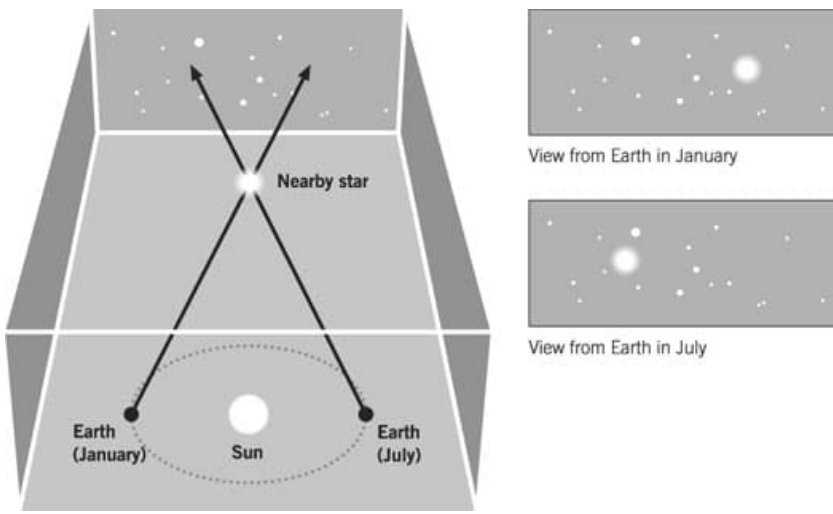
But the few centimetres that separates our eyes isn't going to help when measuring a distance of 40 million million km. We need to go much further, and we can do if we sit and wait for half a year. In that time, the Earth will move halfway around its orbit, which puts it around 300 million km from where it started. So if we measure the position of a star compared to background objects, such as very distant galaxies, and then make the same measurement six months later, we can work out the distance to it.

This is a very simple, reliable method, but for stars the effect is very small – compared to the Earth's orbit they are still very distant. Even the closest star moves less than the diameter of a human hair held 20 metres away! The first star to have its distance measured in this way was the star 61 Cygni, in the constellation of Cygnus the Swan. In 1838, the German astronomer Bessel measured the distance to be around ten light years, which was pretty close to the distance we now measure of 11.4 light years.

In 1989, the European Space Agency launched the *Hipparcos* satellite, which

measured the distances to thousands of stars, producing reliable results for stars up to around a thousand light years away. But that is only a tiny fraction of the stars in our Galaxy, which is around 100,000 light years across. To go further we need to use a different method.

The answer comes from a particular type of variable star, called Cepheid variables. These stars pulsate, and the time between their pulsations is linked to how bright they are. Once we know a star's true brightness, we can compare that with how bright it looks in the sky. Since a more distant star would look fainter than the same star if it were much closer to us, we can then estimate its distance. It was one of these types of stars which allowed Edwin Hubble to demonstrate that the Andromeda galaxy was separate from our own, and we now know that it is around 2.5 million light years away!



Note: Not to Scale

The apparent motion of nearby stars due to the Earth's movement around its orbit can be used to calculate their distance.

These Cepheid variables are a type of 'standard candle', and allow distances to relatively nearby galaxies to be measured. To measure greater distances we need to use brighter candles, and some estimates can be made for the true luminosity of the brightest stars, or even clusters of stars. This allows distances to be estimated out to hundreds of millions of light years, but beyond that even these are too faint. For the largest distances, we use the brightest standard candle we know of, which is a particular type of exploding star, or supernova. The time the afterglow of the supernova explosion takes to decay tells us its true brightness. In a similar way to the Cepheid variables and other standard candles, this true brightness is compared with the apparent brightness, from which its distance can be calculated. Using these types of supernovae, called 'Type 1a supernovae', distances of billions of light years can be measured.

To measure the largest distances, we use a property of the Universe itself. In the 1920s, Edwin Hubble showed that the Universe is expanding, and that the expansion

'stretches' the light from distant galaxies, moving it from blue towards red light. This 'redshift' is related to the distance to the distant galaxies, and allows astronomers to map out the distribution of galaxies on the largest scales of the Universe, though only by making assumptions about the structure and evolution of the Universe.

How do astronomers tell the difference between a large, bright, star far away and a smaller, less luminous one, closer?

Spencer Taylor (Rochdale, Greater Manchester)

Well, that is sometimes a difficult issue. If the distance to the star can be calculated using one of the methods discussed in the previous question, then the problem is solved. But what about where there's no such distance measure, for example with an ordinary star, similar to our Sun, that is a reasonable distance away in our own Galaxy. This is where knowledge of how stars live their lives comes in.

There is a well-understood relationship between the colour of a star and its brightness. During the bulk of their lives, when a star is described as a 'main sequence star', stars that are more massive are intrinsically brighter and have hotter surfaces. The temperature of the surface of the star is indicated by its colour, with red stars being cooler and blue stars being warmer. This means that a star's temperature can be calculated if its colour is known, and thus its true luminosity can be obtained. By comparing that to its apparent brightness, the distance can be estimated.

The situation is more complicated when stars gets older, as in their final stages of life the luminosity and surface temperature of a star can vary significantly. But having studied so many, astronomers have detailed models of what stars should look like at various points in their life, allowing them to estimate their distances. The answer is somewhat approximate, but it is normally good enough to estimate roughly where stars lie in our Galaxy.

With the aid of ever more powerful telescopes, we are observing stars and galaxies as they were millions of years ago. Do those stars and galaxies now exist in a different position in the sky?

Vince McDermott (Cheshire), Maeve C (Glasgow) and John Morgan (Northern Ireland)

Whenever we observe an object, the light we see has taken a certain length of time to travel to us. Light travels very fast, at 300,000 km per second (186,000 miles per second), which on human scales is pretty quick – it travels one foot in just a billionth of a second – but astronomical distances are very large. Consider looking at the Moon. At a distance of around 400,000 km (250,000 miles), the Moon is a little over a light-second away. That is, light takes a little over a second to travel from the Moon to our eye, camera or telescope. So we see the Moon as it was just over a second ago, and in that time it has moved around a kilometre around its orbit.

The Sun is 150 million km (93 million miles) away, which is just over eight light-minutes, so if the Sun suddenly 'went out' we wouldn't see any change for eight minutes. Of course, the Sun and Moon are on our astronomical doorstep, and stars and galaxies are much, much further away. Our closest large neighbouring galaxy, the Andromeda galaxy, is two and a half million light years away, so we see it as it was two and a half million years ago. In the intervening time, it has moved around

8,000 light years relative to the Milky Way. This sounds a lot, but when compared to the size of the Andromeda galaxy, which is 140,000 light years across, that's not far at all.

We see much more distant galaxies as they were much longer ago, sometimes measured in billions of years. In that length of time, the picture can change dramatically, with galaxies grouping into massive clusters, and merging together to form the enormous clusters of galaxies we see around us today. So while the galaxies might move around a lot relative to their neighbours, if we could see them as they are now they wouldn't appear to move in the sky much at all. After all, at such large distances, even a very large movement would only cover small angles on the sky.

Knowing Our Place

What would our Sun look like to an alien living on a planet around the nearest star to our Sun – how bright would it be and which constellation would it be in? Would they be able to detect the presence of planets?

Mr Campbell (Welling, Kent)

Alpha Centauri is, to the naked eye, the third brightest star in the entire sky, though it is not visible from the UK. This brightness is slightly misleading as Alpha Centauri is actually a triple-star system, meaning that it is actually made up of three stars in orbit around each other. The brightest star, usually called Alpha Centauri A, is a little more massive than the Sun (by about ten per cent), and about one and a half times as bright. The second star, called (perhaps unsurprisingly) Alpha Centauri B, is a little less massive than the Sun and is only about a third as bright. The third star, Alpha Centauri C is a much smaller, fainter red dwarf star, and of the three is actually the closest star to Earth – hence sometimes being called Proxima Centauri.

From Alpha Centauri, the Sun would look like a fairly bright star, but wouldn't be spectacularly bright. It would be similar in brightness to either Rigel, in Orion, or Procyon, in Canis Minor. The position of the Sun as seen from Alpha Centauri would be in the constellation of Cassiopeia, changing it from a 'W' shape to more of a '/W'.

We don't know of any planets orbiting Alpha Centauri, but if there were, would they be able to detect our Solar System? The orientation of our Solar System relative to Alpha Centauri is such that none of the planets would be seen to pass in front of the Sun. That rules out detecting any planets by the 'transit method'. The other methods for detecting planets generally involve looking for the motion of the star. The presence of the planets means the Sun wobbles, with the dominant effect being due to Jupiter. Seen from Alpha Centauri, the Sun would appear to move around by several thousandths of an arcsecond. This is within the capabilities of our most accurate measurements of the positions of stars, so if they had our current technology, the Alpha Centaurans would be able to at least detect the presence of Jupiter, and possibly the presence of a few of the other massive planets such as Saturn, Uranus and Neptune.

But the most successful method we have found for detecting planets around other stars has not been to look for the actual change in position of the star, but rather the speed with which it wobbles. The light from the star is split into its constituent colours, called its spectrum – a sort of stellar fingerprint. The wobble causes the star to move forward and backward slightly, and its speed towards or away from the observer changes the spectrum, or fingerprint, of the star slightly. Again, the motion of the Sun due to Jupiter, and possibly Saturn, would be detectable with our technology, but the other planets would be undetectable by this method.

The most recent method of detecting planets has been to directly image them. This is difficult due to the incredible brightness of the star compared with the planet. It is here that the proximity to the Sun would really help, as Jupiter would appear to

be relatively far from the star, making it easier to block out the Sun's light. Jupiter would, however, be very faint, right at the limit of what can be seen with the largest ground-based telescopes even without the bright Sun right next to it.

So if aliens on a planet orbiting Alpha Centauri had the same level of technology as we do, they would be able to detect the larger planets, but the presence of the Earth would probably elude them.

Where is our Solar System located in the Milky Way?

Alec Bordacs (Long Eaton, Nottinghamshire)

Our Milky Way Galaxy is comprised of a flattened disc of stars around 100,000 light years across. Our Solar System is between half and two-thirds of the way out, around 30,000 light years from the centre. If we could see the Galaxy from above, the disc would appear to have a spiral structure, with a number of spiral arms running from a central region to the outer extremities. The particular region we're located in is often called the 'Orion Spur', which actually runs between two of the major spiral arms. It is so-called because as seen from Earth it has one end pointed towards the constellation of Orion.

Is our Solar System aligned with the disc of our Galaxy?

Robin Drake (Exeter, Devon)

The Solar System is tilted at an angle of around 60 degrees to the disc of the Galaxy. There is no reason it should be aligned to the Galactic disc, as it is so small in comparison. The other planetary systems we see around the sky are all tilted at different angles with respect to the Galaxy.

On a really clear night, and from a dark site, it is possible to see the disc of our Galaxy, the Milky Way, stretching across the skies. It runs through the constellations of Cassiopeia, Cygnus, Scorpius and Sagittarius, and is easiest to see from the UK in the spring and summer, when it passes almost overhead. It looks like a faint, misty streak across the sky, and a closer look will reveal dark lanes, which are clouds of dust blocking the light from background stars. From the southern hemisphere, the view is more spectacular still, as it is possible to look towards the centre of the Milky Way, a region which never rises much above the horizon from the UK.

A map of our own Galaxy, with the Sun in the centre, reconstructed from measurements in the infrared by the Spitzer Space Telescope.

We know from observation that we sit in one of the spiral arms of our Galaxy, but do we know where we are in the Universe?

Tony Matthews (Newport, Gwent)

We know that our Galaxy, the Milky Way, is one of billions scattered through the Universe. They are not arranged randomly, but rather are grouped into clusters of galaxies. The Milky Way is one of three large members of the Local Group of galaxies, which also includes the similarly sized Andromeda and Triangulum galaxies, as well as dozens of smaller ones. The Andromeda galaxy is around 2.5 million light years away, and the Triangulum galaxy is a little more distant at almost three million light years. The galaxies in the Local Group are bound together by gravity, and move around each other over astronomical timescales. It is thought that the Triangulum galaxy once passed close to the Andromeda galaxy, which in turn is likely to collide with our own Milky Way in five to ten billion years.

But our little group of galaxies is tiny in relation to the scale of the Universe. We see much larger groups of galaxies, called clusters, which are normally named after

the constellation they appear in. The Local Group is on the edge of the Virgo Cluster of galaxies, whose centre lies around 50 million light years away, in the constellation of Virgo. This cluster contains more than a thousand galaxies, some of which are much more massive than our own Milky Way, and on its outskirts are hundreds of groups of galaxies similar to our own Local Group.

On even larger scales, we find clusters of clusters, which are called 'superclusters'. Our local supercluster is (somewhat confusingly) called the Virgo Supercluster, because the Virgo Cluster is its largest member. But there are also groups of galaxies on much larger scales. The superclusters are arranged into great filaments of galaxies stretching for billions of light years, with enormous, empty voids in between. Such large-scale structures originated from the way the matter collapsed together in the early Universe, and have been mapped out to incredible distances.

If we include the rotation of the Earth, its speed around the Sun, and the Sun's speed around the Galaxy, how fast are we moving through space?

Shane (Devon)

The Earth's circumference is about 40,000 km (25,000 miles), so the Equator is spinning at around 1,600 km per hour (1,000 miles per hour). At the relatively high latitudes here in the UK, the surface moves in a somewhat smaller circle, and the speed is roughly half that at the Equator. At the same time, the Earth is moving around the Sun at around 30 km per second, or 108,000 km/h (67,000 mph).

The Sun is moving through the Galaxy, and completes one orbit in around 200 million years. That's a very long time, but the distance around the orbit is nearly 200,000 light years, which means that the Sun is actually moving at around 250 km/s through the Galaxy. The Galaxy itself is also moving through space, being tugged around by the gravitational attraction of nearby galaxies and galaxy clusters. For example, the Milky Way is moving towards the Andromeda galaxy at around 130 km/s (300,000 mph). But the Milky Way, Andromeda, and other nearby galaxies in the Local Group are all moving through space as well.

Working out speeds and directions on such large scales requires us to define a suitable reference point. We can't really choose another galaxy, or even a galaxy cluster, since they may well be moving as well. But there is one frame of reference we can consider to be absolute, and that is the Universe as a whole. We can measure the speed of the Solar System relative to the Universe by looking at the light from the Big Bang. This relic light, called the Cosmic Microwave Background, shows a slight increase in frequency in one direction, and a light decrease in another direction. This 'Doppler shift' is the same effect that causes a train or a police car siren to be higher pitched when coming towards you than when moving away from you.

If everything in the Universe were expanding uniformly, we should see no effect, but we measure that the speed of the Solar System through space is 370 km/s. When we combine this with the previous speeds, we find that the Local Group of galaxies is moving at a speed of 630 km/s in the direction of the constellation of Hydra. The cause of this motion is a massive supercluster of galaxies called the Norma Supercluster, towards which the Milky Way, the Local Group and even the Virgo Cluster are all being attracted.

How does our Solar System interact with particles emitted from the centre of our Galaxy?

Sean Daley (Melbourne, Australia)

Many different phenomena in astrophysics produce streams of incredibly high-energy particles, travelling at speeds close to the speed of light. These phenomena include exploding stars, or supernovae, as well as the matter circling around neutron stars or black holes. In the centre of our Galaxy there lie not only millions of stars packed closely together, but also a massive black hole, millions of times the mass of our Sun. From this extreme region of space the flow of particles is particularly high. There is a steady stream of these particles travelling through the Galaxy, making up what is often termed an 'interstellar wind'. Most of the particles are electrically charged, such as protons and electrons, and so they generally travel along the Galaxy's magnetic field which runs around the disc.

Like all stars, the Sun produces a steady stream of particles called the solar wind, though generally weaker than those from the more extreme regions throughout the Galaxy. This wind flows outwards, forming what is called a heliosphere. In some senses, this is the Sun's atmosphere, though it is incredibly vast, stretching hundreds of times further than the Earth's orbit. Eventually, the solar wind meets the interstellar wind, marking the edge of the Sun's influence. This 'heliopause' is where the Sun's own magnetic field merges with the much larger-scale galactic magnetic field. When particles travelling through the Galaxy reach this point, some are deflected away from the Solar System. In this sense, the solar wind protects the Earth and other planets from the majority of the particles, though some do pass through the heliopause and travel inwards towards the Sun. These form some of the most energetic particles known, millions of times more energetic than those created in the Large Hadron Collider at CERN.

Such particles, whether originating from the Sun or elsewhere in the Galaxy, are also called cosmic rays, and can produce adverse effects in electronics and astronomical detectors. The flow of particles from the Galaxy varies with the Sun's activity. When the Sun is more active, the solar wind is stronger and more of the galactic cosmic rays are deflected. So while we receive many more particles from the Sun during its active phase, we are also subjected to fewer of the much higher-energy cosmic rays from outside the Solar System.

Binary Stars and Star Clusters

Is it possible to have two suns in a single solar system?

Paul Foster (Clapham, London)

We know of many examples of stars which are in multiple-star systems. In fact, it's the norm, with more than half of stars being in systems with two or more stars. We even know of two sextuplet-star systems in the sky, one of which is the star Castor in Gemini.

In general, stars form in clusters, with many forming in these multiple-star systems. In many of the binary systems the two stars are relatively far apart, and it is possible to have planets orbiting one of the stars.

The stars in binary pairs tend to spiral together over long time periods, which would eventually disrupt the orbits of any planets, either sending them into highly elongated orbits or flinging them out of the system entirely. We do, however, know of some systems where a planet orbits a binary-star system.

In binary-star systems, is it always the case that one star strips mass from the other? What triggers this process and what are the final outcomes?

Lindsay Ferguson (Overton, Hampshire)

Most binary stars orbit at fairly large distances and are not disrupted by the presence of their companion star. The plasma, or ionised gas, that makes up a star is only held in place by gravity, and normally that keeps them spherical in shape – just as with the Sun and planets. Matter only moves between the stars if they are particularly close, and normally when one of them is very large.

The situation normally begins when one of the stars grows old, shedding its outer layers before finally dying and becoming a white dwarf, a neutron star or even a black hole. During this period, binary stars tend to spiral in towards each other. Things get more exciting when the second star nears the end of its life and starts expanding. In the latter parts of their lives, some stars grow to hundreds of times their original size, and if the companion object is close enough its gravity pulls the giant star into a teardrop shape with the point directed towards the companion. Beyond the tip of the teardrop, the gravity of the companion is actually greater than that of the original star, so the material starts to move over.

When it reaches the companion object, be that a white dwarf, neutron star or black hole, the stream of material is heated to immense temperatures, emitting X-rays. The smaller and denser the object is, generally the hotter the stream of transferred matter becomes. Images of other galaxies in X-rays show many points of light, almost all of which are examples of these 'X-ray binaries'.

Do the stars in globular clusters tend to 'evaporate' due to close encounters

with each other? Given that dwarf galaxies orbiting our own Galaxy are torn apart, why has this not happened with globular clusters?

David Hall (Great Barr, West Midlands)

A globular cluster is a group of stars that all formed together, and which now lie in a roughly spherical ball. They are massive, typically containing tens of thousands of stars or more. While it is thought that almost all stars formed in clusters most of these were smaller, containing perhaps tens or hundreds of stars, and have since dispersed. We can see stars forming in these 'open clusters' today, and there are numerous examples in the night sky. The most famous is the Pleiades, or Seven Sisters, which is found in the constellation of Taurus. The Pleiades are relatively young, with an age measured in hundreds of millions of years, and are therefore still fairly tightly packed compared to most open clusters that we can see. Not far from the Pleiades in the night sky are the Hyades, which make up most of the 'V'-shape of the head of Taurus.

As we've said, globular clusters are much more massive, containing many more stars. The strong gravitational attraction of all the stars means that they fall into a roughly spherical ball, and look like a fuzzy smudge when seen through a small telescope. A fine example of a globular cluster that is visible from the UK is the Hercules Globular Cluster, also known as Messier 13. From further south, naked-eye observers are treated to the wonderful sight of Omega Centauri, containing millions of stars. As with most globular clusters, Omega Centauri and M13 are much brighter in the centre, as there is a greater density of stars in their core.

During the life of a globular cluster, some stars are likely to be flung out, but the gravity is so strong that most stay in the cluster. The cluster can be stretched out of shape, but the stars remain tightly bound together. Most dwarf galaxies are considerably more massive than globular clusters, though also much larger in extent. When a dwarf galaxy passes close to a larger galaxy, its outer regions are disrupted the most, but its core normally stays intact for much longer. It is even thought that Omega Centauri could be a remnant of the core of a very small galaxy that was absorbed into our Galaxy billions of years ago, and may even contain a moderately large black hole at its centre. This process is currently happening with the Sagittarius Dwarf Elliptical Galaxy, which lies about 50,000 light years from the centre of our Galaxy. Careful observations have proved the existence of a stream of stars passing round the Milky Way, all travelling in the same direction, which have been stripped off over billions of years.

Such events have taken place in the past, and this is evident from the motions of the stars. Some stars seem to move backwards around the Galaxy, and are thought to have originated from dwarf galaxies which have been absorbed. An example is a group of stars which includes Kapteyn's Star, a small red dwarf currently 13 light years away. The motion and composition of a group of 14 stars indicates that they were originally part of the Omega Centauri globular cluster.

Birth, Life and Death

We are told that stars are born out of clouds of gas, but what physics are at play to make a cloud of gas collapse in on itself to form a star when it is in a boundary-less space?

Les Fulford (Llandrindod Wells, Powys)

The physics that forms a star is, by and large, just gravity. Any sufficiently large cloud of gas and dust will start to collapse in on itself simply because of its own gravitational self-attraction. As the cloud collapses, it tends to heat up, and the increased temperature and radiation actually slows the contraction. Over time, normally tens or hundreds of millions of years, the cloud will gradually start to cool by radiating away its heat. This cooling allows it to collapse further still, and eventually it reaches a point where the gravitational collapse outweighs the expansion due to thermal energy.

As it collapses, the core of the gas cloud gradually gets denser and denser. Eventually, the pressure and density in the centre of the core becomes high enough for nuclear fusion to start. The ignition heats up the gas cloud very quickly and the object becomes a star. The mass of the star that is formed depends on a wide range of factors, such as the mass of the initial gas cloud and its composition.

When talking about the formation of new stars, reference is made to hydrogen gas and dust clouds. What makes up the dust?

Louisa (Merseyside)

Most of the Universe is made of hydrogen and helium, but there are small amounts of heavier elements as well. The most common elements are created during the life of stars, and include carbon, nitrogen, oxygen, silicon, sulphur and so on. These elements are distributed into the surrounding regions when the star puffs off its outer layers and, if it is massive enough, when it explodes in a supernova.

As these elements travel through space, they cool and collect together into small particles. The particles gradually build up until they form grains which can grow to a tenth of a millimetre in size. The most common elements – carbon, oxygen and silicon – dictate the most common types of grains, which are carbonates and silicates. There are other grains formed, made of heavier elements such as iron, but these are generally less common. A particularly easy molecule to form in space is water, using just hydrogen and oxygen. This normally exists as water vapour, but this can form grains of ice when the temperature is cool enough, and these ices help the grains stick together.

In particularly dense regions, it is possible to build up even more complex molecules on the surfaces of the dust grains. In many nebulae, such as the Orion Nebula, we have found ‘organic chemicals’. We must be quick to point out that these

organic chemicals are not alive in any way, shape or form, but are simply molecules containing hydrogen, carbon and oxygen, along with a few other elements such as nitrogen. Some of the most complex organic chemicals found are amino acids, which have also been found in nebulae, and on meteorites which have made it to Earth. These are important because it is very particular (and very complex) arrangements of these amino acids which form the proteins which are so important for life. The jump from the organic chemicals found in the Orion Nebula to life on Earth is a huge one, but it is important to know that the building blocks are there.

Having been thrown out by dying stars, these grains of dust and ice, along with the organic molecules, will then be present around newly forming stars. The process doesn't necessarily stop at a tenth of a millimetre, and the grains can continue to stick together, forming pebbles and rocks. It is not completely ridiculous to consider the rocky planets to be the culmination of this aggregation. Of course, that would mean that we are just complex clumps of organic molecules orbiting a star on a giant grain of dust, but that's not a particularly appealing thought!

Which star is energising the bright nebula IC434 in Orion, against which the Horsehead Nebula is silhouetted?

Anthony Simons (Sheffield, South Yorkshire)

The Horsehead Nebula is a dark cloud of dust which is only visible because it is silhouetted against the glow of gas in a more distant nebula. The more distant nebula, called IC434, is being illuminated by the star Sigma Orionis, close to one end of Orion's Belt. When viewed to its full extent, IC434 gives the impression of being a ring, centred on Sigma Orionis.

The distance to nebulae is often hard to measure and normally requires there to be an association with a star whose distance is known. Sigma Orionis is measured to be 1,150 light years from Earth, but it is possible that the visible portion of the cloud is either closer or further from Earth. With the two-dimensional view that we get, it is very hard to tell.

Why are stars not all the same size? It seems that they should all 'switch on' when they have reached a certain critical mass and core temperature. If any excess gas would be blown away when the star initially lights up, then the only stars shining in the sky would be red dwarfs, but this is clearly not the case.

Richard Chapman (Runcorn, Cheshire)

The point at which a star 'switches on' is defined by the density and temperature in the central core, and not by the total mass of the gas cloud from which it forms. When it reaches a critical temperature and density, nuclear fusion begins and the star starts to shine. At this point, the intense radiation will blow away any gas that is not tightly gravitationally bound to the star.

A single gas cloud normally forms a number of stars, and rarely collapses evenly. Some pre-stellar cores will be larger and denser than others, and when nuclear fusion starts they will be able to hold on to more matter. In any given cluster, stars with a wide range of masses are formed. There are lots of small stars, such as red dwarves, a fair number of stars with masses similar to the Sun, and a few stars much more massive.

The star R136a1, which is 256 times the mass of our Sun, was thought to be unlikely. What is the practical limit on how massive a star can be created?

Russell Aspinwall (Farnham, Surrey)

The mass of a star which is formed from a cloud of gas and dust depends on a number of factors. Firstly, the density of the cloud defines how massive a pre-stellar core can become by the time nuclear fusion begins. Once fusion starts, material that is not sufficiently gravitationally bound can be blown away by the bright radiation from the star. The ease with which material is blown away also depends on what it is made of. The first stars formed from clouds made almost solely of hydrogen and helium atoms, which cool more slowly than molecular clouds or dust, and therefore allowed larger stars to form, possibly up to a thousand times the mass of the Sun.

The material which makes up gas in our Galaxy today is more chemically enriched, and based on that it would seem that the maximum mass which a star can achieve is between ten and twenty times the mass of the Sun. This is based on computer simulations of stars forming in isolation, and it is clear that something is missing. After all, we know of stars in our Galaxy which are dozens of times the mass of the Sun. And we now know of the star R136a1 in the Large Magellanic Cloud, which is hundreds of times the mass of the Sun.

The formation of such 'monster stars' could be explained by the merging of multiple pre-stellar cores. An alternative is 'triggered star formation', where strong stellar winds from existing stars compress the surrounding material and allow the resulting dense cores to form more massive stars. Such processes are thought to be common in star clusters.

The pre-stellar cores are relatively cooled compared to stars themselves, and are best observed in the infrared. The Herschel Space Observatory has observed a number of cases of stars in the process of forming, some of which may well be examples of triggered star formation.

It is thought that the Sun was born in a cloud of gas and dust similar to the Orion Nebula. Is it possible, five billion years later, to tell which of the stars in the sky are the Sun's siblings?

Derry North (Ashby-de-la-Zouch, Leicestershire)

The Orion Nebula is the nearest example of a large star-forming region, and contains a number of very young stars. These stars will start to drift apart over time, and we see similar examples of this motion all over the sky. For example, five of the stars in the Plough are moving together through space, and are part of a group of around 200 stars which formed together 500 million years ago. These stars would once have been in an open cluster, possibly not unlike that in the centre of the Orion Nebula, but are now spread over a region around 30 light years wide.

We know that the Sun did not form along with these stars, as it is ten times older. This age means that the stars the Sun formed with will have moved apart even more, and be distributed all over the sky. As they move apart, some of the stars might have close encounters and be flung out of the vicinity. After so long, it is not thought possible to locate the Sun's siblings.

Why are brown dwarfs referred to as stars when they are not massive enough

to support nuclear fusion?

Simon Lang (London)

Brown dwarf stars are stars which have a mass less than about one-twelfth that of the Sun, or around 80 times the mass of Jupiter. These stars are too feeble to allow fusion of hydrogen into helium, and therefore cannot shine brightly in the way a star like the Sun does. Once formed, they gradually contract until the matter in the centre cannot physically become any denser. The International Astronomical Union defines the lower limit on the mass of a brown dwarf to be 13 times the mass of Jupiter, which allows deuterium fusion to take place in the core. The deuterium fusion will not last for long, however, and eventually the brown dwarf will cool and fade.

The term brown dwarf was coined in 1975 by Jill Tarter, though it is somewhat of a misnomer as they would actually appear a dull red colour. The coolest brown dwarfs are incredibly cold, at temperatures of just a few hundred degrees centigrade. These are particularly hard to find, and their discovery requires observations in the infrared. We are still finding examples surprisingly nearby, and in 2011 two brown dwarfs were found at a distance of around 15 light years using observations from the WISE, 2MASS and SDSS sky surveys.

What happens to a red dwarf star when it has fused all its core hydrogen into helium, and what happens to the envelope?

Steve Bickerdike (Bedford)

A red dwarf star is less than around half the mass of the Sun, and so lives for much longer. They are small enough that the hydrogen is constantly circulated to keep the core supplied with its nuclear fuel. In fact, a red dwarf will burn hydrogen into helium for more than a trillion (i.e. a million million) years. That is over a hundred times longer than the current age of the Universe, so there are no examples of red dwarfs which have moved beyond the main part of their lives. We can, however, apply our knowledge of stellar evolution to predict what will happen.

As the hydrogen finally begins to run out in the core, the star will be producing less energy and will initially start to contract. This will heat up the core again, and increase the energy output. The delicate balance between the energy from nuclear fusion and the force of gravity pulling everything inwards means the outer layers of the star cool and expand. Unlike a star such as the Sun, the core will not become hot enough to allow fusion of helium, and when the hydrogen runs out the energy output of the star will quickly drop.

At this point, the star will collapse in on itself until the core material cannot physically get any denser, when it will only be the size of the Earth. There will not be an appreciable envelope of material remaining, as there won't be a significant stellar wind to push the gas away. This remnant of a star is called a white dwarf, and stars that result from a red dwarf will be particularly rich in helium.

Although there has not been sufficient time for any red dwarfs to burn all their hydrogen, we look forward to reporting observations of them in a trillion years or so!

Why do huge stars have a shorter life span than smaller stars?

Duane Miles (Weston-super-Mare, Somerset)

Massive stars have a much greater supply of fuel, but consume it much more quickly. This is because the temperature of the core of the star is so much higher due to its higher density. The higher rate of consumption of fuel means that the star is much brighter, and the comparison is quite striking. For example Deneb, the brightest star in Cygnus, is around 20 times the mass of the Sun but 60,000 times as luminous! The fusion process occurring in the core is essentially the same, so Deneb must be burning fuel thousands of times faster than the Sun. Stars like Deneb live fast and die young, and while the Sun will live for 10 billion years, Deneb will live for just 30 million years.

How big does a star need to be before its destruction is capable of forming a black hole?

Steven Rossiter (Barnsley, South Yorkshire)

When a star much more massive than the Sun consumes all of its nuclear fuel, it explodes in a powerful supernova. This applies to stars which start their lives at least eight times the mass of the Sun, but by the final stages of their lives they have blown off around a third of their initial mass.

During the supernova, much of the material of the star will be flung outwards, but some will re-collapse under gravity. What happens to the re-collapsing material depends on how much there is. If what collapses has a mass more than a few times the mass of the Sun it will form a black hole, while if it has less it will become a neutron star.

So the final state of a massive star depends on how much mass it has lost, both over the course of its life and in the supernova explosion itself. Typically, black holes are formed from stars which are around 35 times the mass of the Sun, of which there are relatively few.

Supernovae

How many types of supernovae are there, and what is the difference between them?

Geoff Wortley (West London)

Supernovae are characterised by numbers and letters, such as 'Type 1a' and 'Type 2', where the categories are defined by both the way the supernova brightens and dims, and also by which elements are detected in the light from the explosion. Until recently, there were just two known ways for a supernova to occur.

The first method is caused by a white dwarf in a binary-star system. If the companion is very close to the white dwarf when it enters the red giant phase, its outer layers can be pulled off by the white dwarf. If enough matter is transferred, the mass of the white dwarf continues increasing until it reaches a critical mass called the Chandrasekhar limit. At this point, a white dwarf is too massive to be stable and it explodes in a violent explosion – a Type 1a supernova. Because this always occurs at the same mass, about 1.4 times the mass of the Sun, such a supernova has a very predictable brightness. The most recent nearby supernova of this type occurred in the spiral galaxy Messier 101 which lies around 20 million light years away. It was first observed in August 2011 and was visible in small telescopes for weeks afterwards.

The second most common type of supernova explosion takes place when the core of a massive star runs out of nuclear fuel. At this point the core of the star is made mostly of iron, with layers of lighter elements on top, moving out to a hydrogen envelope. When nuclear fusion ceases, the sudden drop of outward pressure means that the gravity of the star suddenly wins and the star collapses in on itself. Such a supernova is really more of an implosion than an explosion, though much of the material rebounds off the dense core and is flung out into space. This type of supernova is normally called a 'Type 2' supernova, though the explosions of stars which have previously blown off their hydrogen envelope are called types 1b and 1c. The names were assigned before the physical cause was known, and so relate purely to the observations.

This second method of causing a supernova occurs in stars which are at least eight or nine times the mass of the Sun. If the star is greater than 20–30 times the mass of the Sun, the remaining material will be so massive that it forms a black hole. An even more massive star, above 40–50 solar masses, would probably form a black hole instantly on collapsing, producing no supernova explosion at all – though these are necessarily very hard to detect. But at really high masses, it is thought that something even more extravagant takes place.

Most supernovae show a peak in brightness followed by a slow fade, but in 2007 a particularly bright supernova was observed that didn't peak for 77 days. The star in question lay in a dwarf galaxy and had a mass around 200 times that of the Sun. The observations match the predictions of a previously unseen type of supernova, called a pair-instability supernova. In these cases, the temperature in the core gets so high

that photons split into electron-positron pairs, reducing the pressure that combats the immense gravitational force of such a massive star. As the star collapses, the energy release destroys the entire star, leaving no remnant whatsoever – not even a black hole. Such massive stars are incredibly rare, but may have been much more common in the early Universe.

If it were possible to remove a small sample from a neutron star, would it be stable or would it either decay or explode?

Richard Green (Hampshire)

A neutron star is the remains of a star in which nuclear fusion has ceased, causing the star to collapse in on itself. As the matter falls inwards due to gravity, the object gets more and more dense, until the atoms are crushed together. Eventually, the material forms a neutron star, which is prevented from collapsing further by the fact that neutrons can only get so close together. These stars, which are not too different in mass to the Sun, end up being just 10–20 km in diameter – tiny when compared with our Sun's diameter of over one million km.

The density of a neutron star is not dissimilar to that of an atomic nucleus, and a teaspoon's worth of a neutron star would weigh a billion tonnes. The neutron star's state is due to its immense mass, something that a small sample would lack. Such matter would probably cease to be a neutron star and undergo a massive nuclear explosion.

Of course, this is all hypothetical, since running experiments on a billion-tonne sample would be incredibly difficult. Not to mention getting such a sample off the surface of a neutron star, where the gravity is more than ten billion times that on the surface of Earth – you'd certainly need a very special teaspoon!

What do you think of the existence of quark stars?

Sean Hopkins (Geddington, Northamptonshire)

Quark stars are purely hypothetical objects which would be denser than neutron stars, but not as dense as black holes. A quark star would be composed of quarks, sub-atomic particles which make up neutrons and protons. The formation mechanism is also purely theoretical, but they could be created when an object created in a supernova is too massive to form a neutron star but not massive enough to form a black hole.

There are some indications that observations of a few supernovae don't quite match the predictions for the creation of neutron stars, but that is a long way from proving the existence of these exotic objects. I [CN] would not be at all surprised if new types of astronomical objects are discovered in the coming years and decades, but before you ask I'm not the gambling type!

Can astronomers predict when there is likely to be a supernova visible to the naked eye?

James Clark (St Andrews, Scotland)

It is impossible to predict when any star will go supernova with any sort of accuracy.

There are several massive stars in our Galaxy which are nearing the end of their lives, such as Betelgeuse in Orion, but they could last for another million years. The uncertainty lies in the fact that we don't know their mass exactly, and, even if we did, our theoretical models of stars are not precise enough to predict their date of death precisely.

But when Betelgeuse does go supernova, which will probably be some time in the next million years or so (don't hold your breath!), it will be spectacularly bright, outshining the Moon and being visible throughout the day.

When a star in our Milky Way explodes, would if affect us on Earth, and has this ever happened?

Ian Ross (Leeds, Yorkshire)

There are many examples of stars in the Milky Way that have already exploded and were visible with the naked eye. The most famous recent supernova was Supernova 1987a, which occurred in February 1987. This was visible to the naked eye, but was not actually in our Galaxy. Rather, it was in the Large Magellanic Cloud, a small galaxy some 160,000 light years away.

The most recent recorded naked-eye supernova within our Galaxy was Kepler's supernova, which was seen in 1604 by the German astronomer Johannes Kepler. At its brightest it was as bright as the planet Jupiter, and was visible to the naked eye for around a year. The brightest recorded supernova occurred in 1006 and would certainly have been easily visible in twilight, and probably in daylight as well, remaining visible to the naked eye for around two years.

All the supernovae observed have been at least thousands of light years away, and so have had no physical impact on the Earth. The psychological and social impact would have been significant, as no way was known of creating or destroying stars, and the impression of the stars as being immovable objects would certainly have been challenged.

A supernova emits radiation at all wavelengths, from radio waves up to gamma rays. A particularly close supernova, nearer than say 30 light years, could produce enough high-energy radiation to kill us. Luckily, there are no stars in the vicinity of the Sun which are close to going supernova – the closest candidate is Betelgeuse in Orion, more than 400 light years away.

But supernovae have one very important effect – they are responsible for the creation of almost all the heavy elements we see around us. Hydrogen and helium were created in the Big Bang, and the elements up to iron are made in stars, but anything more massive needs huge amounts of energy to be created – such energy is provided by supernovae. These heavier elements are far less abundant that the lighter ones, but they are often particularly useful. Without supernovae, we would need to find other ways of producing electrical wiring (made of copper), plumbing (which used to be made of lead), and jewellery (gold, silver and platinum). But aside from this, supernovae are crucial for distributing the material produced by stars through the Galaxy. It is almost certain that much of the matter that makes up the Earth, not to mention those of us who live on it, has been through a supernova at some point.

When Betelgeuse in Orion goes supernova, how bright will it be and for how long? Will it be dangerous to observe? Could it already have exploded, but the

light has not reached us yet?

Al Kenny (Battersea, London), Thomas Collins (Liverpool) and Gary Walker (Banstead, Surrey)

When Betelgeuse explodes, it will be a spectacular sight to behold. It will be brighter than the Moon, and visible even during the day. It will peak in brightness after a few days or weeks and then gradually fade, probably remaining visible to the naked eye for several years. It would be the brightest object in the sky after the Sun, and the brightest stellar event ever seen.

With a mass around 20 times that of the Sun, Betelgeuse's life expectancy is only ten million years or so and its time is nearly up. But we can't predict its date of death accurately at all. For a start, the supernova occurs due to processes in the core, and all we can see is the surface of the star. Of course, it could go supernova next week, but it would take 427 years for the light to travel 427 light years to us. So there is a chance that it already has gone supernova and the light has yet to reach us.

How should the name Betelgeuse be pronounced?

Stephen Baskerville (Telford, Shropshire)

Like many star names, Betelgeuse originates from the Arabic language. The Arabic language uses a different script to the Latin alphabet, and so translations were tricky. In Arabic, the star was commonly called *yad-al-jauza*', which means 'Hand of the Giant'. Mistranslations first turned this into *bedelgeuze*, through confusion over the Arabic equivalents of *y* and *b*.

In the nineteenth century, European astronomers readdressed the origin of the name, and were understandably confused. They decided that *bedelgeuze* must have originated from *bat al-jauza*', on the misplaced assumption that it was (rather unfortunately) the 'armpit of the giant'.

As with many examples in language translations, the name has been anglicised in a number of ways. The main differences are in the pronunciation of 'Betel' (pronounced either Beetle or Bettel), and that of 'geuse' (pronounced juice, goose, gurz, or somewhere in between). There are also a number of variants on the spelling, such as Betelgeux.

Of course, this can all be avoided by using its Bayer designation of Alpha Orionis, but that's a lot less interesting.

Were you lucky enough to observe Supernova 1987a, and if so what were you feeling on seeing such a spectacle?

Brendan Alexander (Co. Donegal, Ireland)

One of us [PM] did in fact see the supernova (my co-author did not see the supernova so far as I know, though this may be because he was only four years old at the time. He must wait for the next one, which he may well see, but which I certainly won't). Having heard about it, and realising that staying in Britain was not going to be very successful, I jumped onto a plane and flew to South Africa. I must admit, I went there because it was almost certainly the only chance I had of seeing a naked-eye supernova and I did not intend to miss it. I did not mean to carry out any theoretical work, and was not equipped to do so. I merely disembarked from the

plane, went to a dark area, looked up at the sky, and there was the supernova, which I estimated to be shining at the time at just below second magnitude (though others made it slightly fainter). It altered the entire look of that part of the sky.

The next day I returned to Britain well satisfied. Mission accomplished – I'd had my one view of a naked-eye supernova, even though the outburst had actually occurred so long before I was born and was a very long way away.

If two supernovae happened at the same time right next to each other, would they create a 'super-supernova'?

Thomas (Scunthorpe, Lincolnshire)

The chances of two supernovae happening next to each other are incredibly remote. To have any impact on each other, they would have to be two stars which were orbiting each other very closely. A supernova is caused in one of two ways: either by the core of a massive star collapsing when the nuclear fusion runs out of fuel, or when a white dwarf star exceeds a certain mass. A white dwarf increases in mass by pulling matter from a nearby companion which is in its latter stages of life. It is theoretically possible, though incredibly unlikely, that the white dwarf could be pushed over the critical mass at the same time as the companion star went supernova, but this would merely be a coincidence.

In the unlikely event that this did happen, I [CN] would speculate that the shockwaves from the two stars would collide between the stars and release an awful lot of energy. This would make for a spectacular supernova remnant!

How can several new stars be formed from the dust produced by just one supernova? Are the new stars very small, or was the star that went supernova very large?

Mark Jackson (Southampton, Hampshire)

For a star to go supernova, it has to be very massive, normally more than eight times the mass of the Sun. Such massive stars lose a reasonable fraction of their mass – as much as a third or more – during the later stages of their lives when they are puffing off their outer layers. In the supernova event itself, yet more of the mass is normally expelled in the explosion, with only a few solar masses being locked up in a neutron star or black hole. All in all, several solar masses of material are ejected into space from a single star that is massive enough to go supernova.

Stars come in all sizes, from tiny red dwarfs to huge stars hundreds of times the mass of the Sun. It is easier to form a smaller star than a larger one, so there are far more low-mass stars than there are high-mass ones. This means that the material from one supernova is enough to form a number of smaller stars.

But what it can't do is provide enough material for a new star as massive as the original, which would require material from number of supernovae. When a supernova occurs, it not only distributes material into space, it also sends shockwaves throughout the vicinity. These shockwaves sweep up matter that is already there and push it into denser clumps. It is in the densest clumps that the most massive stars form.

Galaxies

What would it be like at the centre of a galaxy?

Peter Bradford (Sydney, Australia)

In the centre of our Galaxy lies an enormous globe of stars thousands of light years wide. The night sky on a planet in that central bulge would be much brighter than ours due to the huge numbers of stars. The most massive stars that we know of in our Galaxy are found near the Galactic Centre, in the Arches Cluster. Such massive stars, up to around a hundred times the mass of our Sun, live for just millions of years – a mere moment when compared to the five-billion-year history of our Solar System. These stars live fast and die young, with too little time for life to form on any planets that might orbit them.

Right in the centre of the Galaxy lies an enormous black hole, with a mass equivalent to a million Suns. A searing hot disk of material orbiting the black hole emits radio waves, X-rays and gamma-rays, making its immediate neighbourhood rather inhospitable. While it would be fascinating to see such a place, I [CN] would certainly want it to be a return trip!

How did the spiral arms in our Galaxy form, and does the centre rotate faster than the outer rim?

Sean Gomez

First, what is a spiral arm? What it is *not* is a collection of stars moving round a galaxy together. Instead, it's more like a wave which causes the stars to bunch up and then spread apart again as it passes. Consider a wave on the ocean, where the wave moves along, but each little bit of water just moves in a small circle. From a distance, an ocean wave looks like a pile of water moving along as a unit, but in fact the molecules that make up each wave are constantly changing.

In a galaxy, it's not just stars that get bunched up, but also the gas and dust. When the clouds of gas and dust become denser, they form new stars. The most massive stars burn brightest, with a blue colour, but do not last very long. By the time the spiral arm density wave has passed, after tens or hundreds of millions of years, these hot blue stars have long since died, leaving just the less massive, dimmer, stars. So there are lots of stars between the spiral arms, they're just not very bright.

We should also consider the way in which a galaxy rotates. If the galaxy were like a solid disc, then the stars near the edge would have to be moving much faster than those further in to allow them to complete an orbit in the same time. For this to be the case, the outer stars would need to experience a much stronger gravitational pull towards the centre than the inner ones, and since they are further out from the centre this can't be the case. Alternatively, one might expect it to rotate like the

planets in the Solar System, with those close in moving much faster than those further out. However, this would imply that all the mass was in the centre, while in a galaxy it is distributed throughout the disc – albeit with a fairly large bulge in the middle.

In fact, a galaxy behaves somewhere in the middle and, apart from in the very centre of the galaxy, all the stars move at about the same speed. However, since the stars further out have further to travel around their orbit, they take longer to make one complete revolution. This is just like runners running round a race track – those in the outer lanes have further to travel around the corners, which is why races have staggered starts.

So the stars nearer the centre of the galaxy move round more quickly than those further out, which causes density waves to wrap around the galaxy and creates the familiar spiral shape. Right in the centre, the spiral arms would be incredibly tightly wound, but in many galaxies, including ours, the spirals stop several thousand light years from the centre. Instead of spiral arms, the centre of our Galaxy is dominated by a bar-like structure, which, unlike the spiral arms, *does* rotate as a single unit. The formation process of the bar is not clear, but it is believed to be the cause of the spiral arms. In a *Sky at Night* programme, Professor Gerry Gilmore described it as being like a giant egg-beater, stirring up the Galaxy and causing density waves to spin off the end – the spiral arms in our Galaxy do indeed appear to be tied to the end of the bar. As a result, it is thought that the spirals are constantly changing over millions of years.

The true cause of spiral arms is not fully understood, and these are the favoured theories at the moment. These are constantly being adapted and improved, though since it takes so many millions of years for spiral arms to form, we can't actually observe the process taking place. We simply see snapshots in a wide range of galaxies, with no two looking exactly alike.

In some spiral galaxies, for example, the bar is much larger relative to the galaxy, giving it a very peculiar-looking shape. In others, there doesn't appear to be a bar at all, with the spirals continuing almost to the centre. The origin of these structures, called 'Grand Design Spirals', is thought to be different, caused by external influences. Such an influence might be another galaxy, passing by, stirring up the galaxy into a spiral shape like the Whirlpool galaxy.

If the Universe is expanding, why is the Andromeda galaxy going to collide with the Milky Way?

Andrew Brydges (Banstead, Surrey), Paul Smith (Bristol) and Peter Taylor (Epsom, Surrey)

Quite simply, this is due to gravity. The expansion of the Universe takes place on the largest scales, and the Andromeda galaxy is actually fairly close on cosmological scales. In fact, there is a group of a dozen or so galaxies in the 'Local Group' which are close enough to be gravitationally bound. Andromeda and our own Milky Way are the two largest members, and have been circling around each other for billions of years in a cosmic dance.

To measure the speed of a nearby galaxy such as Andromeda, we measure the speed at which its constituent stars are moving, and both the rotation of Andromeda and our speed relative to the centre of the Milky Way have to be taken into account as well. We know that Andromeda is moving towards us at around 100 km/s, but its

motion 'sideways' relative to the Milky Way is much harder to measure. This sideways, or tangential, speed is unlikely to be zero, and could be as high as 100 km/s, although future measurements may refine this number somewhat.

If this tangential velocity is low relative to Andromeda's motion towards us, then it should collide with the Milky Way in around five billion years. If it is moving sideways a bit more, it will spiral round, delaying the collision until about ten billion years hence. What we know for sure, though, is that the two galaxies will collide eventually – they are simply not moving fast enough to escape that fate.

The collision won't be a single event, and the two galaxies will pass though each other a number of times before finally becoming a single merged galaxy.

What will happen when the Andromeda galaxy collides with the Milky Way? Will there be any effect felt on Earth?

Bob Hardy (Birmingham, West Midlands), Grant Mackintosh (Wigan, Greater Manchester) and Mark Bullard (London)

Galaxies are made of stars, and also clouds of gas and dust. When two galaxies such as the Andromeda galaxy and our own Milky Way collide, the effects of the various constituents will be different.

The stars are incredibly small compared to their separation – tens of millions of stars like our Sun could fit along the line between the Sun and the next closest star, so when two galaxies collide, the vast majority of the stars pass by each other like ships in the night. Actual collisions between stars are incredibly unlikely, and the stars will probably be moving too fast to form binary stars. A few may get close enough to get flung out into intergalactic space, and some will form the tidal tails which we see in merging galaxies such as the Antennae Galaxies and 'The Mice'.

The clouds of gas and dust, on the other hand, do collide. These colliding gas clouds provide ideal conditions for the formation of new stars. So while most of the original stars pass though, a new population of young, bright stars are formed near the collision site. The most massive of the new stars will live short lives, of around a million years, and end their lives in dramatic supernova explosions.

By the time the Milky Way and Andromeda collide, the Sun will probably have died, along with life on the Earth – at least in a form with which we're familiar. While the Earth itself may still be in orbit, it will be fried to a crisp by the red giant Sun, and then frozen solid as the Sun fades into a white dwarf. But ignoring such technicalities, we can consider the effect on a planet such as Earth.

As described above, it is unlikely that anything will happen to the Sun. The view from a planet, however, would be spectacular. As well as the stars in the Milky Way, there will be many of the stars in Andromeda visible as well. This rich vista will be complemented by the newly formed, young, bright stars – at least those not shrouded by the thick clouds of gas and dust.

These new stars would pose the greatest threat to life on a planet. The resulting supernovae would emit copious amounts of high energy radiation such as gamma rays. While an atmosphere and magnetic field make a good defence, they would not protect life such as us from supernovae within a few dozen light years.

In the centre of both galaxies lie two super-massive black holes, each millions of times the mass of a single star. When the merging is complete, these black holes will likely be in orbit around each other. The discs of gas and dust around each one will get close and may touch, setting off a new bout of star formation. Eventually, the two

black holes may themselves merge, and what happens then is far from certain.

When this takes place, it is very unlikely any humans will be living on Earth, but for whoever is wandering though the Galaxy in a few billion years the view should be wonderful. Of course, they will have the issue of giving the resulting new galaxy a name!

Do galaxies such as the Milky Way ever shed stars from their outermost edges into intergalactic space? Are there any 'orphaned' stars floating alone in the space between galaxies?

Jim McKenna (Leicester)

Galaxies do not shed stars from their outer edges like mud off a cartwheel, but stars are sometime ejected. If two stars have a very close encounter, one of them (normally the less massive of the two) can be flung out. Most of the time, these stars are not thrown out of the galaxy entirely, but into a much wider orbit. These stars are often seen to move very quickly relative to their neighbours, and are called 'hypervelocity stars'.

Close encounters between galaxies can also result in stars being thrown out. This does affect the stars nearer the edge, which have a weaker gravitational link to their parent galaxy. The strong gravitational pull of the approaching galaxy can be comparable to that of their parent, and streams of stars are pulled into 'tidal tails', stretching for tens of thousands of light years. These celestial acrobatics can create stunning visual displays, and while most of the stars in the tails will return to their galaxy, a few will be flung into the intergalactic wilderness.

Considering the clarity with which light reaches us from such great distances, how much matter is there in deep space?

Charlie Stone (Poole, Dorset)

There is almost no greater understatement than saying 'space is big', or even 'really big'. While the Earth, Sun and planets seem pretty dense and massive to us, they are the exception rather than the rule. The Sun is large by human standards, at around 1.4 million km (800 million miles) across, but the furthest planet, Neptune, has an orbit with a diameter six thousand times that. The vast majority of the Solar System is almost completely empty space, filled with a light scattering of particles emanating from the Sun. The nearest star is four light years away, which is millions of times the Sun's diameter. The space between is not completely empty, but between the two there is only around one atom in every cubic centimetre of space (about the size of a sugar cube). By comparison, the air we breathe contains something like ten million million million atoms (ten to the power 19) in every cubic centimetre (give or take a factor of a few!). The material in empty space is largely comprised of hydrogen molecules.

We're all familiar with the effect that the Earth's atmosphere has on sunlight, with the particles scattering the light and turning the sky blue. Most of it still gets through without being affected, which is why the Sun is so bright. The majority of the Earth's atmosphere is below a height of around ten kilometres, which means that above every square centimetre of ground there are around ten million million million million molecules (10 to the power 25). That's certainly a lot, and it may seem

astonishing that most of the sunlight passes by so many molecules without being affected. It is important to realise, however, that an atom or molecule is largely made of empty space, with the protons, neutrons and electrons making up a negligible fraction of the total volume.

Now, one could fit a lot of sugar cubes between us and the nearest star, but since each 'sugar cube' of space contains a single atom there are only around a few million million million atoms in all that distance – millions of times fewer than the number in the atmosphere. So when we point our telescopes at the stars, the scattering due to the material in interstellar space is tiny compared to the effect of our own atmosphere. Even the densest regions of space, such the centres of nebulae, are still much less dense than the air.

Of course, galaxies are much further away than stars, with the Andromeda galaxy being 2.5 million light years away. But intergalactic space is even emptier than the space within our Galaxy, and so there is still negligible scattering. The hydrogen gas does absorb a small about of the light, though, and over vast cosmological distances the molecules do add up. In fact, one of the methods of measuring the distances to the most distant objects known is by studying the absorption of optical light due to hydrogen between the stars and galaxies.

On larger scales still, the gas scatters microwave light that we see originating in the early Universe. The effect is small, since the scattering only works for ionised gas, in which the electrons have been stripped from the atoms, and this only happened when the first stars formed and started emitting light. The amount of such scattering we see is currently the best way of estimating when these first stars formed, currently estimated to be a hundred million years or so after the Big Bang.

If the planets and the Sun have weather and seasons, is it possible that galaxies and the Universe have weather and seasons?

David Reed (Corby, East Midlands)

First of all, we must define what we mean by weather and seasons. On the Earth, the weather is basically caused by air moving around (wind) and moisture condensing out of the clouds (rain, snow, hail, etc.). The movement of the air originates from the fact that the Earth is rotating, which causes high-altitude winds and variations in atmospheric pressure. These pressure variations, combined with changes in the heat coming from the Sun, cause the moisture to condense. Of course, this is a gross oversimplification of a very complex system, and I'm sure many meteorologists are currently cursing.

The seasons on the Earth are explained by the fact that the axis around which the planet spins is tilted with respect to the disc of the Solar System. As the Earth moves around its orbit, different regions receive varying amounts of solar illumination and therefore experience changes in their climate and weather.

All planets with atmospheres have weather, with many experiencing much more extreme conditions than those on the Earth. Most of the planets also have seasons to varying degrees, which depends on how tilted their axes are. For example, Uranus is tipped over by almost 90 degrees and therefore experiences huge seasonal variations. Conversely, Jupiter is almost completely upright and so has very mild seasonal changes.

The Sun's weather is slightly different, though can still be interpreted to take place in its atmosphere. Like all stars, the Sun emits a steady stream of particles,

called the solar wind, which moves out through the Solar System. There are variations in the solar wind caused by flares and eruptions from the Sun's surface, which are in turn the result of small-scale changes in the Sun's magnetic field. The analogy to seasons is more tenuous, but the Sun's activity does wax and wane over a period of around 11 years.

On larger scales, it is probably fair to say that galaxies have weather. All galaxies rotate, with the stars, gas and dust moving round on timescales typically measured in millions of years. The intense radiation from stars in the galaxy, particularly hot, young stars or those that are in their final stages of their lives, acts to stir up the gas and dust. Supernovae, the explosions that occur when massive stars reach the end of their lives, create shockwaves that travel through space and compress the interstellar medium. Intense bouts of star formation can cause huge amounts of gas to be blown out of the galaxy, creating a fountain-like effect.

Seasons of galaxies are rather hard to conceptualise, and there really is nothing similar that we know of. The only tenuous analogy (and it is very tenuous!) is the activity associated with the black hole at the centre. We see some galaxies that have immense amounts of radiation emanating from their centres, thought to be due to the accretion of material around a black hole. These 'active galactic nuclei' are some of the brightest sources of radio waves in the sky, and it is thought that every galaxy could have experienced a period during which its black hole was accreting matter at a rapid rate and emitting vast quantities of radiation. The cause of the rapid accretion could be the merging of two galaxies, and so it might be possible for the cycle to repeat itself. Perhaps when our Milky Way Galaxy and the Andromeda galaxy collide in five to ten billion years the resulting galaxy will have a very active black hole while the influx of material is consumed.

What exactly is Hanny's Voorwerp?

Kevin Cooper (Fife, Scotland)

Hanny's Voorwerp is one of the most famous results of the Galaxy Zoo Project, which allows members of the public to classify galaxies and highlight any unusual objects. Found by a Dutch school teacher, Hanny van Arkel, this odd-looking green object was seen in images from the Sloan Digital Sky Survey. It lies close to a galaxy called IC 2497, though it was originally thought possible that the proximity could have been a coincidence. The name, by the way, derives from a Dutch word, which roughly translates as 'object' or 'thingamybob'.

After much study, including observations by the Hubble Space Telescope, the mystery of Hanny's Voorwerp is thought to be solved. Hundreds of millions of years ago, the black hole at the centre of IC 2497 experienced a surge in activity. It's not totally clear how long this would have been going on for, but we know that it has subsided now. The intense radiation from the active black hole caused the material in a nearby intergalactic cloud of gas to become energised, causing it to emit light at optical wavelengths. This cloud of gas is what Hanny van Arkel found.

All this actually happened more than 600 million years ago, with the light taking that length of time to travel across space to Earth. The reason that we can still see the Voorwerp is that the light that energised it had to take a slightly longer route to get to us. Rather than coming from the galaxy IC 2497 straight to us, the light travelled first to the Voorwerp, energised the material, and then travelled to us. Not a huge detour, but far enough to delay it by a couple of hundred thousand years.

The Voorwerp itself is nothing special in its own right, but what it allows us to do is identify a galaxy in which the active black hole has just been 'switched off'. Studies of IC 2497, and the black hole at its centre, may allow us to learn more about what causes such black holes to cease being so active, and in turn perhaps what causes their activity to begin in the first place.

I have read that some galaxy clusters are infused and surrounded by a halo of super-hot gas. Would such gas make life impossible within galaxy clusters?

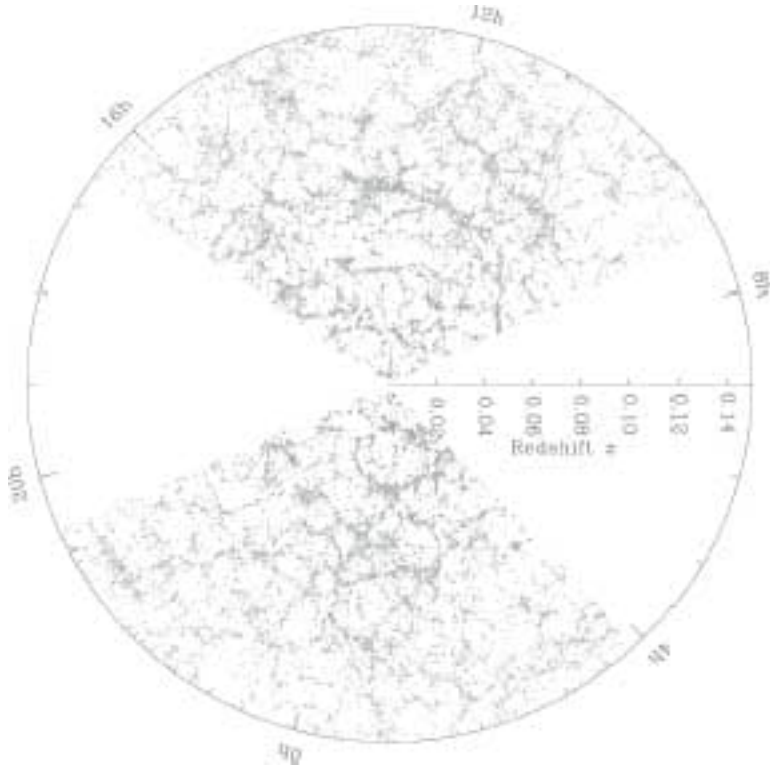
Peter Mayhew (York)

The key thing to realise is that this gas might be very hot, but it is very tenuous indeed. Its high temperature causes it to emit a lot of X-rays, which might have an effect on life in the galaxies affected, but it probably wouldn't be fatal.

What causes galaxy filaments and the huge voids between them? Are they really the largest structures in the known Universe?

G Paul Hudak (Phoenix, Arizona) and Steve Hunt (Hedge End, Hampshire)

The origin of the galaxy filaments we observe is a combination of gravity and, perhaps surprisingly, sound waves. The very early Universe, at times less than a few hundred thousand years after the Big Bang, was incredibly hot and dense. The Universe was made of a mixture of ionised hydrogen and helium with the electrons stripped off by the intense radiation. In the first tiny fraction of a second after the Big Bang, quantum perturbations created small fluctuations in density throughout the Universe. These fluctuations created waves of varying density that spread out through the Universe – these were essentially sound waves. Their scientific name belies this fact, and they are properly known as 'baryonic acoustic oscillations'. These waves propagated at the speed of sound, which in the hot dense plasma was around half the speed of light. One property of plasma is that it interacts with light very effectively, and in the early Universe the resulting outward pressure was enough to offset the pull of gravity.



Every dot in this image is a distant galaxy seen by the Sloan Digital Sky Survey, many of them billions of light years away. They are arranged in massive filaments and walls, separated by huge voids.

This was the situation until around 400,000 years after the Big Bang, when the temperature was low enough for the first atoms to form. The gas was still distributed fairly uniformly, but there were slight ripples in its density on the scale of a few hundred thousand light years. These ripples were incredibly tiny, but did have a characteristic scale. We can see this characteristic scale in the Cosmic Microwave Background, with the 'blobs' or warmer and colder regions of the Universe having a similar size across the map without forming a regular pattern of any sort.

It was at this point that the strong interaction between the matter and the light ceased and gravity started to take over. This allowed the gas to collapse under gravity and form the first stars, though this took a few hundred million years. In regions of the Universe that were slightly denser there were slightly more stars, and when they started forming galaxies there were slightly more of them as well. But the cosmic ripples were much, much bigger than a single galaxy, or even a large cluster of galaxies, and so to measure them we have to look at millions of galaxies distributed over enormous volumes of space. It is on these scales that we see the largest filaments of galaxies.

The first surveys to study galaxies on these scales were conducted in the 1970s and 1980s, but have been superseded by more recent projects. The largest of these is the Sloan Digital Sky Survey, which uses a 2.5-metre diameter telescope in New

Mexico. It has mapped over a quarter of the sky and obtained measurements for almost 500 million stars, galaxies and quasars out to distances of almost two light years. In the Sloan map of galaxies, the cosmic ripples are not immediately obvious, but there is still a characteristic scale, now a few hundred million light years across, on which the distribution of galaxies and voids can be seen to have some sort of structure.

There is one more detail that is important to mention. The Universe does not only contain the normal matter that we're used to, but also large quantities of dark matter. This dark matter doesn't interact with light, which is why it can't be seen, but does feel the effects of gravity. In the early Universe, while the normal matter, also known as 'baryonic matter', was caught in the battle between the pressure of the intense light and the pull of gravity, the dark matter was simply collapsing under gravity. This affected the distribution of the first galaxies, and the study of these 'baryonic acoustic oscillations' is one of the best ways of measuring the properties and effects of dark matter in the early Universe.

Why does everything rotate – galaxies, planets, stars? What kick-starts this process?

Richard Swallow (Birmingham, West Midlands)

Rotation of a galaxy or solar system is very easy to start, but rather difficult to stop. Consider two stars moving past each other. Each exerts a gravitational pull on the other and so their paths change, and if the speeds are low enough they will swing round in a complete loop. These stars would then be in orbit around each other. In this way, rotation can easily start from two (or more) objects moving past each other. The same principle applies to stars, galaxies, planets and even the clouds of gas and dust that form stars and planets.

The rotation of an object, or a set of objects, has a property called 'angular momentum', which is essentially the amount of spin. Just as with normal momentum, angular momentum is always conserved. This means that it can be transferred from one object to another, but it can never be destroyed. It is dependent on the mass of the objects, their size or separation, and also on the speed at which they are spinning or orbiting. If a planet moves closer to a star for some reason, then it must start orbiting faster to keep the angular momentum the same. The principle can be easily observed by imagining an ice skater spinning on the tips of their skates. As they pull their arms in they get narrower relative to the axis around which they are spinning, and so they have to speed up to conserve angular momentum.

Consider a cloud of gas that is in the process of forming a star at its core. The cloud will be rotating, albeit slowly, due to the motion of all the particles of gas that make it up. As the cloud collapses it gets smaller, and so it most rotate faster to conserve the angular momentum. This is why the Sun spins, for example.

Angular momentum can be transferred between objects, particularly if they collide or pass very close to each other. This is the same principle that occurs on a snooker table; when the cue ball hits a coloured ball it transfers its normal momentum to it. If the cue ball was given some spin by the snooker player, then some of that rotation will also be transferred, which is what allows many of the trick shots.

Of course, a snooker ball does eventually stop rolling and spinning, largely because of friction between itself and the snooker table. Out in space there is rarely a

frictional force in the same way – planets are not rolling around a table – but there is friction due to gravity. Specifically, the tides that objects create in each other, such as those caused on Earth by the Moon, can slow the rotation of a planet. The tides caused by the Earth on the Moon caused its rotation to slow down until its rotation relative to the Earth stopped. Since angular momentum must be conserved, to compensate for this reduction in rotation rate the separation of the Earth and Moon had to increase, and the Moon is now significantly further away than when it first formed.

So everything is rotating not because something started it spinning, but rather because nothing has stopped it.

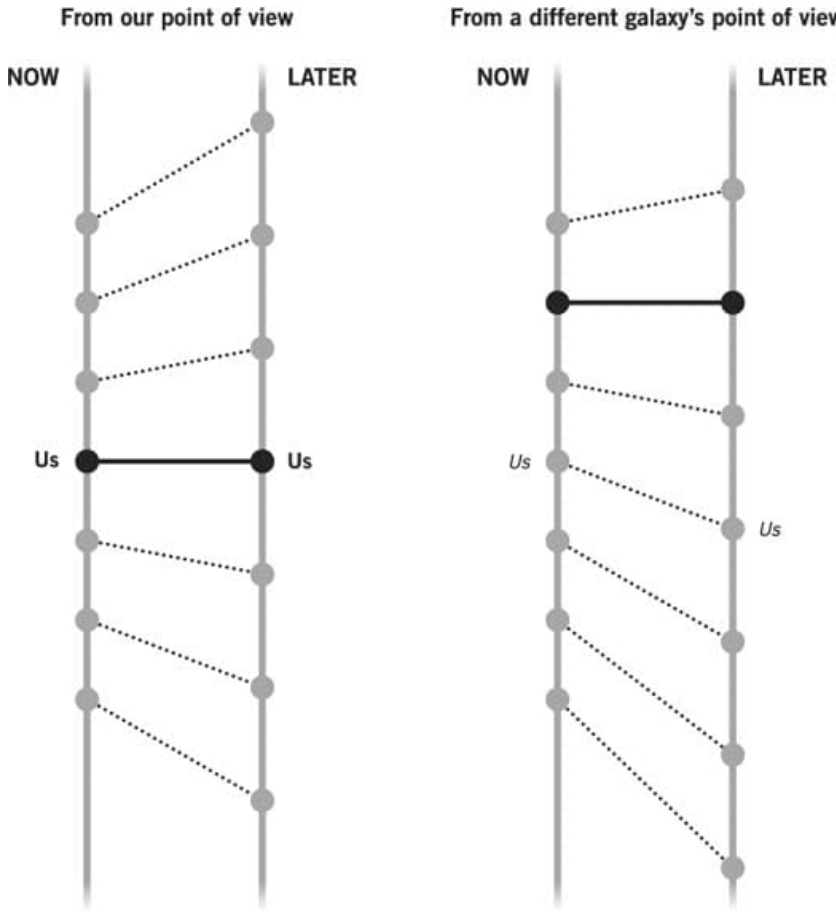
Cosmology

The Expansion of the Universe

Wherever astronomers look in the Universe, galaxies are receding from us in every direction, making it appear that the Earth is at the centre of the Universe. We don't think of the Earth as being at the centre, but how do we know it is not?

Lynton McLain (London)

WHEN WE LOOK out at other galaxies, we notice several things. Firstly, they are all around us, and there doesn't appear to be a preferred direction. It also doesn't seem that our particular region of the Universe is any different from any other. Galaxies are grouped into clusters and super-clusters, but there's nothing special about our galactic neighbourhood. But when we look at distant galaxies in detail, we notice that they seem to be moving away from us. As the Universe expands, the light from the galaxies is stretched to longer wavelengths, making them appear redder than they would if the Universe weren't expanding. Another way to interpret this is that all the galaxies are moving away from ours, which would seem to imply that we are somewhere special. This expansion does not apply on relatively small scales, such as when considering galaxies within the same group, or cluster. On larger scales, however, it does *appear* as if every galaxy is moving away from us.



If galaxies were regularly spaced along a line with us in the centre, as shown on the left, then as the line (i.e. the Universe) expands the more distant galaxies end up further away. Since they seem to have moved further in the same length of time the more distant galaxies appear to have travelled faster than the closer ones. While this seems to imply we are at the centre, this is merely an illusion which occurs for every galaxy along the line, as shown for a different example on the right

But appearances can be deceiving, and in fact the Milky Way is no more special than any other galaxy since, wherever you were in the Universe, you would see the same thing. We can create a simple example. Imagine a line of galaxies, each separated by rods a million light years long, and pick any galaxy on the line to be 'us'. The closest galaxy is one million light years away, the one beyond that two million, the next three million, and so on. Of course, in reality the galaxies are not so regular, but this can help to illustrate the concept.

If we stretch the rods so that adjacent galaxies are now 1.5 million light years apart, we see them all get further apart. Relative to the galaxy we've labelled as 'us', the nearest galaxy is now 1.5 million light years away, the one beyond that is 3 million light years away, and the next one 4.5 million light years away.

So, while the nearest galaxy has moved half a million light years further away, the next one has moved away by one light year, and the one after that by one and a half light years. The more distant galaxies have moved further, and since they have done so in the same amount of time, it seems that they are moving faster. We see the same thing in our real Universe, with more distant galaxies appearing to have moved away at a faster rate, which is what gives the impression that we are at the centre of the expansion.

But we can see from our simple line of galaxies that this illusion holds for *any* galaxy. Repeat the same experiment again and pick a different galaxy, and the same thing will happen, with more distant galaxies appearing to move away faster than the nearby ones. So, in an expanding Universe, *everyone* observes the illusion that they're at the centre of the expansion.

So if everyone sees an illusion of being at the centre, where is the real centre? Well, does there have to be one? It's entirely possible that the Universe is infinite in size, so that it goes on for ever in every direction – and an infinite Universe can't have a centre. Even if the Universe is not infinite, it doesn't necessarily even have a centre. We could imagine it as being the surface of a balloon, expanding as the balloon is inflated, but there is no point on the surface of the balloon which is at its centre.

If there were a centre then that would be a special place, and one of the principles of modern cosmology is that there are no special places when considering the Universe on the largest scales. So it's not just that we are not at the centre of the Universe, but in fact that we don't even think there is a centre at all.

Do we know how far our Galaxy is from the origin of the Big Bang, and is there any debris remaining?

Frank Riley (Winsford, Cheshire)

The Big Bang didn't have an origin in terms of a location, since it took place everywhere. This may sound impossible but, as previously mentioned, we can imagine a simple analogy by representing the Universe as the surface of a balloon – not the air in the balloon, just the surface. We have to suspend reality for a short while, since this imaginary balloon is a perfect sphere and has no neck. As the balloon is inflated, the surface expands, but if we go back in time (more suspension of reality!) it contracts. When it gets so small that it is a single tiny point, we could ask a similar question to the one above: where on the surface of the balloon does the expansion start? The answer is the same as for the real Universe everywhere. The whole surface of the balloon is compressed into a tiny point, and so everything is at the start.

In terms of the debris from the Big Bang, you're looking at it! Everything you see, touch and taste has its origins in the Big Bang. The bulk of the work was done in the first three minutes, after which the Universe was made up of three-quarters hydrogen and one-quarter helium, with just tiny amounts of other elements. All the heavier elements were formed in stars, but the composition of the Universe hasn't really changed much over its 13.7-billion-year history. Although some has been converted into heavier elements, most of the hydrogen and helium created in the Big Bang is still around. While much of it is locked up in stars, planets and other objects, there are clouds of hydrogen gas in and around almost all galaxies.

Do we know how fast we are travelling through space relative to the rest of the Universe? Is anything in the Universe at a complete standstill, and not moving in any direction?

Dolores Myatt (Hemel Hempstead, Hertfordshire)

This question brings up the issue of a universal frame of reference, by which all motion can be measured. Since the Earth is going round the Sun, and the Sun is moving through the Milky Way, in this instance it would be more useful to consider the motion of our own Galaxy. The vast majority of the galaxies in the Universe appear to be moving away from us as the Universe expands. This motion is sometimes called the 'Hubble Flow', after astronomer Edwin Hubble who discovered that most galaxies appear to be receding. The recession is detected by measuring how much the wavelength of the light has been stretched by the expansion of the Universe. This moves the light towards the red end of the spectrum, hence why astronomers call it 'redshift'.

While most galaxies appear to be moving away, we find that some of the closer ones seem to be moving towards us. This is not unexpected, since the gravitational attraction of galaxies and clusters of galaxies counteracts the expansion of the Universe on such small scales. For example, our nearest large neighbouring galaxy, the Andromeda galaxy, is actually moving towards us, and both the Milky Way and the Andromeda galaxy are in a small group of galaxies which are being pulled towards a much larger group of galaxies called the Virgo Cluster.

Amazingly, we can actually measure the speed of our Galaxy relative to the 'Hubble Flow'. When we look as far as we can through the Universe, we see something called the Cosmic Microwave Background. The light has taken so long to travel from these distant reaches that we see the Universe as it was just a few hundred thousand years after the Big Bang – a mere blink of an eye compared to its current age of 13.7 billion years. We are seeing so far away that the Universe has expanded by a factor of a thousand since the light was emitted, redshifting what was once visible light into the microwave region of the spectrum.

This relic radiation was first detected in 1965, and appeared at first to be very uniform over the whole sky. A few years later, however, it was discovered that the redshift is not the same in every direction, with a slight increase in one direction and an equal and opposite decrease in exactly the opposite direction. This is observed because our Galaxy is moving relative to the frame of reference provided by the extremely distant Universe. And it's moving very quickly, at a speed of around 600 km/s (more than 1 million mph!). This is much faster than the speed of the Earth around the Sun, and even the speed of the Solar System around the Galaxy.

The cause of the motion, enigmatically known as the 'Great Attractor', was a mystery for several decades, partly because whatever is causing it is hidden behind the material in the disc of our Galaxy. The source of the motion is now thought to be a massive cluster of galaxies in the constellation of Norma, which is attracting not just our Galaxy and its immediate neighbours, but also the much larger Virgo Cluster. Every galaxy and cluster of galaxies in the Universe will be in a similar situation, being drawn towards another similar group. Given this, it is unlikely that there is a galaxy that is completely stationary relative to the expanding Universe as a whole.

Astronomers have observed that galaxies are moving away from each other,

but how do we really know that this is due to the expansion of space itself, not simply the motion of the galaxies within a fixed space?

Andrew Smith (Clayton West, Yorkshire)

This is a very good question, and one that is not easy to answer fully here. First, let's start with the observations. The first evidence for the expansion of the Universe was found in the 1920s by Edwin Hubble, who was looking in detail at the light from relatively distant galaxies. In particular he was studying their spectrum, whereby the light is spread into its range of wavelengths, or colours, much like light passing through a prism. Rather than a smooth rainbow from red to blue, there are dark stripes in the spectrum of a galaxy caused by particular types of element absorbing specific wavelengths of light. Hubble compared these absorption lines to those measured in laboratories on Earth, and found that they were moved to longer wavelengths. In fact, all the lines in a particular galaxy were all moved towards the red end of the spectrum by the same factor. This effect was given the name 'redshift'.

There are in fact three possible ways of creating a redshift, all relating to the theories of relativity formulated by Albert Einstein. The first is a Doppler Shift, whereby an object's speed relative to the observer (i.e. us) causes the wavelength of the light to be increased or decreased. The same effect can be heard with sound. For example, when a police car zooms past with its siren blaring, the frequency of the sound when it is approaching is higher than when it is receding. In the case of the police car siren, the size of the effect is proportional to the car's speed compared with the speed of sound. In the case of light from distant galaxies, the effect is proportional to the velocity of the object compared with the speed of light. Light from an object that is receding is redshifted to longer wavelengths, while light from an object that is approaching is 'blueshifted' to shorter wavelengths. Since light travels at 300,000 km/h (186,000 mph), the effect of a velocity redshift is normally very small.

A second cause of a redshift is when the light is leaving or approaching an object with a very large mass. Light leaving a galaxy loses a tiny amount of energy when escaping the immense gravitational well. This 'gravitational redshift' effect is also normally very small.

The third method is normally called the 'cosmological redshift', and is caused by the expansion of the Universe. The equations that describe the expansion of the Universe assume that it is completely smooth, which is only true on the largest scales. When making a map of the Universe on a scale of billions of light years, it looks very smooth, with galaxies spread out in a foamy pattern. Consider taking a picture of the Pacific Ocean from space, from where it would look like a smooth blue surface. There are certainly waves on the ocean, but on such large scales they are inconsequential.

It is on these massive scales that the Universe can be considered to be expanding. The light that leaves a distant galaxy is shifted to a longer wavelength because the Universe has expanded between the time it was emitted and the time we measure it. The amount that it has expanded governs how much the wavelength of light is redshifted. The light from more distant galaxies has taken longer to travel, meaning that the Universe has expanded by a larger factor in the intervening period and so the light is redshifted more.

This interpretation of the cosmological redshift seems to suggest that space is expanding. Since space is defined as the absence of anything, it's not really clear

what this means, and useful analogies for such a concept are hard to come by. You could interpret it to mean that space is being created in the voids between the galaxies, but that is somewhat problematic – what does it even mean to 'create space'?

When we consider the Universe at an earlier time, it was much smaller, so the clusters of galaxies were all closer together. How does that affect the measurement of distances? Was a light year a few billion years ago shorter than a light year today? Certainly not! But if clusters of galaxies have got further apart, how do we compare the Universe at different stages? Cosmologists tend to use a different measure of distance, where they correct for the expansion of the Universe by multiplying all distances by the appropriate factor. When using these units, which are called 'co-moving coordinates', clusters of galaxies tend to stay the same distance apart over time rather than moving apart. The catch is that a unit of distance actually gets larger with time – a 'co-moving light year' 7 billion years ago was around half the size of a co-moving light-year today. So the problem of how to interpret the situation is simply moved, from considering expanding space to requiring an expanding measuring stick.

If the equations describing the expansion of the Universe assume it is very smooth, does that apply in regions where it isn't so uniform? If you consider the scale of a cluster of galaxies, it certainly is not smooth. In our local group, for example, there are three large galaxies (the Milky Way, and the Andromeda and Triangulum galaxies), each with a mass equivalent to billions of Suns, along with around a dozen or so smaller galaxies. These dozen or so galaxies are spread over a space spanning a few million light years, with almost nothing in between.

That doesn't sound very smooth at all, which means that the Universe doesn't obey the very 'simple' equations that apply on the much larger scales. On these relatively small scales (since the Universe is billions of light years across, it seems fair enough to consider a few million light years to be small!), we really need only consider gravity. On these scales, gravity can cause galaxies to move within their clusters. This gives them a physical velocity, which adds an additional redshift or blueshift (depending on whether they're moving towards or away from us due to the normal Doppler shift). In the nearby Universe, these so-called 'peculiar velocities' can dominate over the cosmological redshift, and there are numerous galaxies that have a blueshift overall.

If the distances to the most distant galaxies are getting larger with time, can't we interpret that as a velocity? Well, yes and no. One can simply take the observed redshift and calculate the velocity that would create a sufficient Doppler shift to match the observations. For relatively nearby galaxies this seems fine, but at much larger distances a problem occurs. The speeds calculated in this way end up becoming greater than the speed of light, which we know to be impossible. The problem is one we've already encountered; measuring distances is very difficult and therefore we are not calculating a true velocity.

To properly calculate the speed, we would need to know the distance of the galaxy when the light was emitted, the distance to it when the light arrived, and the intervening time. But all we know is how much the light has been redshifted. There are a few ways of measuring the distances to some types of objects, but these are almost all very close on the scale of the Universe, and it's not easy to say which distance is being measured – the distance to the galaxy when the light was emitted or the distance when it arrived at Earth.

It would be much more satisfying to give a more clear-cut answer, but that simply

isn't possible. The problem is that we're trying to make an analogy to something that we're familiar with, but no such thing exists that can describe the Universe as a whole – except the Universe itself!

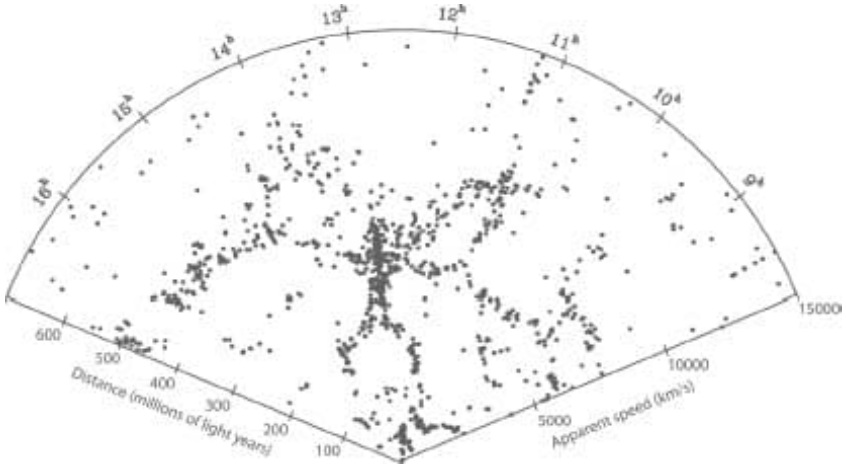
In the expanding Universe, what is actually expanding – the space between galaxies, the space between stars, the space between planets, or what? Is the space between the Earth and the Moon also expanding?

Martin Fletcher (Croxley Green, Hertfordshire)

This question assumes that the interpretation of the expanding Universe is that space itself is expanding. As discussed in the previous question, that is one way of looking at it, but it has its own problems, notably that the concept of space expanding is nothing if not confusing. The Universe started out as a pretty boring, uniform place – although it was unimaginably hot and dense in its earliest moments. If you could see it, then it would be all but identical everywhere, and in every direction you could look.

This smooth, uniform place is the kind of universe that expands as one might expect, with everything getting further apart over time. But there's a problem, in that the Universe was *not* quite the same everywhere. Some bits were slightly denser than others, and it is these dense regions that ended up becoming the galaxies and clusters of galaxies that we see around us today. It is only when you consider the Universe on the largest scales that it looks smooth, with galaxies blurred out into a clumpy sea of tiny dots. This is how cosmologists see the Universe, with entire galaxies represented by a single tiny point, and it is on this huge scale that it is expanding.

But if you zoom in and look at a single cluster, the galaxies are most definitely not smooth, as they represent huge clumps of matter in the almost completely empty vacuum of intergalactic space. Such a clumpy environment doesn't obey the same rules as a smooth one, as forces such as gravity play a much larger role than those that are trying to push the Universe apart. Groups of galaxies are tied together into clumps by gravity, forming galaxy clusters. These clusters do not experience the expansion of space, but stay stuck together by gravity, which is much stronger on these relatively small scales.



A slice through space showing the distribution of galaxies measured by a galaxy survey in the 1970s and 1980s. The distribution does not look random, with a 'Great Wall' seen at a distance of around 500 million light years, though the 'stick figure' in the centre is pure coincidence!

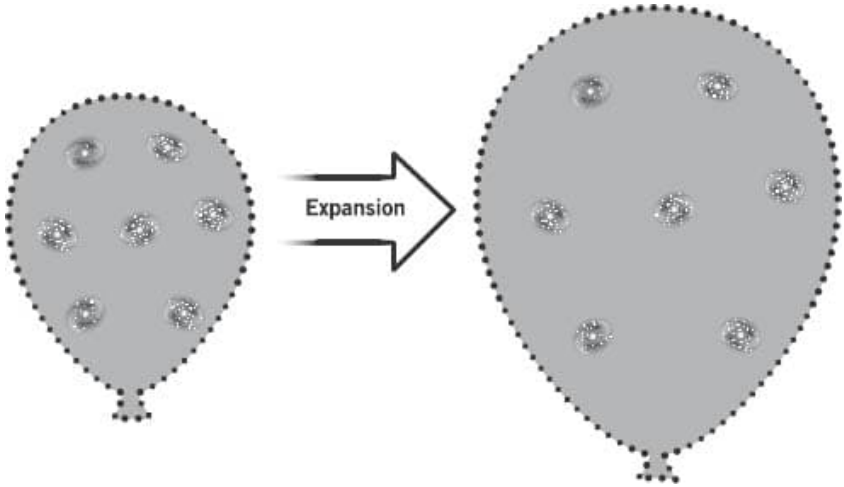
What we've claimed is that gravity is too strong to stop galaxies and clusters of galaxies from expanding. But surely the massive clusters have their own gravitational attraction, and so can overcome the expansion just as easily? Well, adjacent clusters of galaxies *do* pull on each other, but so do all the other clusters in the Universe. And since on the largest scales the Universe is very smooth, there are roughly equal numbers of clusters pulling in each direction. The gravitational pull from all the clusters combined averages out to almost zero, meaning that the expansion of space is free to push them further apart.

If clusters of galaxies are too clumpy to experience the expansion of space, then so are individual galaxies and solar systems. So the space between stars, or the distance between the Earth and the Moon, is not expanding. The clusters of galaxies get further apart as the space between them expands, but they do not get any bigger themselves.

We return to our simple analogy of the Universe imagined as the surface of an expanding balloon. It must still be remembered that the surface of the balloon represents the Universe and that the interior should be ignored – that is simply providing a means by which to expand the surface. In this analogy, a common mistake is to draw the galaxies onto the balloon, so that as the surface (i.e. the Universe) expands they also grow bigger. As discussed above, this is not the case, and the galaxies are more accurately represented by pennies or buttons stuck onto the surface – they don't get bigger as the Universe expands, but they do get further apart.

In the balloon analogy, the Universe is split into two parts: the large-scale parts that can be considered smooth (and therefore expand over time), and the smaller bits where matter is more clumpily distributed. In reality, the Universe is not so simple, and there are grey areas in between. But rest assured that objects such as the Solar System, planets and people are not getting bigger. The gravitational force that keeps the Moon in orbit and the electromagnetic forces that bind the molecules in your body together are billions upon billions of times stronger than the expansive forces

that push the galaxy clusters apart, at least on such small scales.



The Universe can be imagined as the surface of an expanding balloon, with galaxies stuck on. As the balloon expands the galaxies get further apart, but do not themselves expand.

I have read in Martin Rees's book that our Galaxy is moving towards the Virgo Cluster of galaxies at 600 km/s, and the Virgo Cluster is moving towards other clusters. Hundreds of galaxies, including ours, are being drawn towards a huge mass called the 'Great Attractor'. How can we know that we are not in a contracting universe with the 'Great Attractor' at its centre?

Peter Eggleston (Hexham, Northumberland)

Our Galaxy, the Milky Way, is a member of a group of nearly 20 galaxies, rather unimaginatively called the Local Group. This entire group of galaxies, which also contains the Andromeda and Triangulum galaxies, as well as a dozen or so smaller ones, is being pulled towards the Virgo Cluster, a much larger group containing hundreds of galaxies. There are also much larger groups, such as the Coma Cluster which contains thousands of galaxies and could be considered to be a cluster of clusters. The names of clusters simply refer to the constellations in which they are found.

Measurements of the distant Universe, some dating back to the 1960s, have shown that the Milky Way and the surrounding galaxies are indeed moving through space. Later measurements confirmed the speed as approximately 600 km/s, and that the motion is towards a point in the constellation of Centaurus. Since the discovery of this motion, the assumption has been that the cause is a huge supercluster of galaxies (a cluster of clusters!) with a mass equivalent to 10,000 Milky Ways. The difficulty with identifying the cluster, dubbed the Great Attractor, has been due to the fact that to see it we have to look through the disc of the Milky Way, where images are greatly confused by the many millions of stars. By comparing the speeds of other nearby galaxies, the distance was calculated at around 200 million light years – several times further away than the Virgo Cluster.

While our Galaxy blocks the view in optical light, such massive clusters show up

very brightly in X-rays. Several careful studies in recent years have shown that the Great Attractor is somewhat smaller than expected, but that there is also a large concentration of galaxy clusters at a distance of around 500 million light years. This concentration became known as the Shapley Concentration, since it includes the Shapley Supercluster, a cluster of thousands of galaxies which was discovered by Harlow Shapley in the 1930s.

So many of the nearby galaxies are indeed being pulled towards this concentration of galaxies, but that's only part of the picture. We can see galaxies many times further away than the Shapley Supercluster, and most of these are not moving towards it. The gravitational attraction caused by this huge mass is a relatively local effect (if you can call several hundred million light years a local effect), slightly counteracting the expansion of the Universe in our own local neighbourhood.

Are the very distant galaxies being found by the Hubble Space Telescope still showing the same expansion as the nearer ones?

Ross E Platt (Vendee, Western France)

When we look at a distant galaxy we can examine how much the light from the galaxy has been stretched by the expansion of the Universe, something called its 'redshift'. This was discovered by Edwin Hubble in the 1920s, and led to 'Hubble's Law'. By examining relatively nearby galaxies, Hubble showed that their redshift is proportional to their distance from us – the light from a galaxy twice as distant has been stretched twice as much. In order to deduce this relationship, he needed to know their distance, something that is often hard to measure.

To get these galaxies' distances, Hubble studied a particular type of star, called a Cepheid variable star, which has a very predictable brightness. By comparing the predicted brightness of the star with how bright it actually looked, he could calculate its distance. These Cepheid variables are relatively close, so to calculate distances further out into the Universe we need more luminous objects with a predictable brightness. Luckily, nature has given us such an object in the form of a particular type of supernova, or exploding star, called a 'Type 1a supernova'. These supernovae can outshine an entire galaxy, and therefore are visible at huge distances.

The Hubble Space Telescope, named after Edwin Hubble, has been one of a number of telescopes searching the skies for these types of supernovae. For each one we then have a distance and redshift, so we can find out if Hubble's Law still applies. And the answer is… sort of! The distant galaxies still appear to be receding, but the more distant ones seem to be receding at a faster rate. This tells us one of two things: either the distances are wrong, or the rate of expansion of the Universe has increased over the last few billion years.

It could be that the supernova behaved differently in the early Universe, either because they were made of a slightly more primordial combination of elements, or because they were in different environments. Either of these would throw off the predicted brightnesses, and therefore the calculated distances. But it's not clear that this would give a big enough discrepancy to explain the apparent change in expansion.

So if the Universe is expanding at a faster rate, why would that be? The current consensus is that it is a phenomenon known as dark energy, which causes the expansion of the Universe to accelerate. There is other evidence that something like

dark energy exists (see later questions), but we don't yet have a handle on what it is.

The discovery of the apparent acceleration of the expansion of the Universe resulted in three of the leading scientists on the teams that initially discovered it, Saul Perlmutter, Brian Schmidt and Adam Reiss, being awarded the 2011 Nobel Prize for Physics.

If light can take so long to reach us here on Earth, is it possible that a lot of the objects we observe do not actually exist any more?

John Mahon (Melksham, Wiltshire)

It is indeed possible that some of the objects we see in the sky are no longer there. Light travels extremely quickly, at 300,000 km/s (186,000 miles per second), but astronomical distances are incredibly vast. Light from the Sun, 150 million km away, takes around eight minutes to reach us here on Earth, while light from Pluto takes seven hours to travel 7.5 billion km. This means that we see the Sun as it was eight minutes ago and Pluto as it was seven hours ago. But these distances are relatively small, and the light-travel time from stars is measured in years. The nearest star is four light years away, while the nearest large galaxy, the Andromeda galaxy, is 2.5 million light years distant. We are seeing the Andromeda galaxy as it was when most of our ancestors were still living in trees!

When we look at the most distant galaxies, we see them as they were billions of years ago, and certainly the more massive stars will have died since then as they don't live very long. Many of the galaxies will also have collided and merged with their close neighbours. So while the galaxies as a whole are likely still to be there, they will probably have changed considerably, and be made of new populations of stars.

If the Big Bang was a radial expansion of matter, why is almost everything in the Universe rotating?

Stephen Todd (North East England)

The reason is in the way everything forms. Stars and planets are formed from huge clouds of gas, while galaxies are formed from massive collections of stars. Let's consider the formation of a star, the precursor to which is little more than a large collection of molecules all moving in seemingly random directions. The particles slow down when they hit each other, and those in the densest regions collapse to form a central core. The rest of the cloud continues to move and the gravitational pull of the core causes the particles surrounding it to start orbiting it.

In physics, there's a quantity known as angular momentum, which is essentially the amount of spin something has. This can be the spin of a solid object, such as a planet or a spinning top, or the spin of a system such as a planet orbiting a star. We can't see angular momentum, but we can measure and calculate it – much like energy. One feature of angular momentum is that it is very hard to lose. It can be reduced by friction, which is why a spinning top eventually stops spinning. Colliding objects transfer angular momentum, which is why adding spin to the cue ball causes any ball it hits to also start spinning.

Not every particle will orbit in exactly the same direction, and they won't all be in circular orbits, but there will be a common direction of motion when the motion

of all of them is averaged out. This common sense of rotation leads to a disc forming, which enforces the common sense of rotation. There will be occasional particles moving in different directions, but most move in the same way. Some of the angular momentum is lost in the collisions, but much of it remains in the cloud. As the cloud collapses, the angular momentum remains almost constant. Just like a spinning ice skater pulling in his or her arms, the cloud rotates faster. This means that even a very slow rotation of a large cloud of dust becomes a much faster rotation of the much smaller star.

The disc of gas left around the star is what the planets form from. Since most of the material is moving in the same direction, so do most of the planets. There are some smaller objects, mainly asteroids and comets, which orbit in a different sense, but most things in the Solar System are located in a disc and orbit the Sun in the same direction.

Galaxies are similar, but instead of forming from particles of gas they were formed from collections of stars. Stars don't generally collide, so it is even harder for them to lose angular momentum, which is why galaxies don't collapse into supermassive stars. Stars do exert a gravitational pull on each other, and this causes them to end up rotating in much the same way as planets. Just as in our Solar System, not everything in a galaxy orbits in the same way. For example, some stars in our own Galaxy are in orbits that are tilted with respect to the disc. And the smaller galaxies that orbit the Milky Way, such as the Large and Small Magellanic Clouds, orbit in a different sense as well. So the sense of rotation of an object like a galaxy is a measure of the way *most* of the stars are moving, not necessarily all of them.

Is the Universe spinning?

John Robertson (Devon)

There is one conceptual leap to overcome when asking this question: relative to what? The question could be rephrased to ask whether the objects in the Universe are rotating in a common sense. The galaxies and clusters of galaxies are all moving, but could they all be rotating around a central point or axis? If you measured the direction of rotation of a large number of galaxies, which has actually been done, you would find that there is no preferred direction. Pretty much the same number of galaxies rotate clockwise (relative to our viewpoint from Earth) as anticlockwise. In terms of the direction of motion of galaxies, that is much harder to measure. We can measure the speed at which galaxies are moving towards or away from us, but not their motion across the sky – they simply take far too long to move any distance that is measureable from Earth.

We don't think that the Universe as a whole is spinning, and there is observational evidence to prove this from of the Cosmic Microwave Background. This is the afterglow of the Big Bang and the most distant thing we can see, making it an ideal way to look at the Universe on large scales. If the Universe as a whole were rotating, we would expect to see a subtle difference in the Cosmic Microwave Background. These effects have been searched for by many people, but not found.

The rotation of the Universe as a whole would also violate one of the principles of cosmology, namely that no place in the Universe is special. This is required by Einstein's theories of relativity, which we believe to be valid and correct throughout the Universe. If there were a point or axis around which the Universe rotated, there

would be some locations that were more special than others, and a universal frame of reference against which all motion could be measured.

It has been known for some time that the Universe is expanding and that the further away an object is the faster it is moving. But since we see these distant objects as they were a long time ago, how do we know the Universe is still expanding today?

Tom Wood (Littlehampton)

We consider distant galaxies to be moving away from us because their light has been stretched to longer wavelengths. The stretching is calculated by measuring the wavelength of specific features in the spectrum of the light and comparing to the values measured in laboratories on Earth. This 'redshift' is not strictly speaking due to the physical velocity of the galaxies, but rather due to the expansion of the Universe over the time that the light has been travelling. We can compare these redshifts with the distance to the objects, though this can only be done for objects that we know the distance of. One particular type of supernova, a 'Type 1a', has a predictable brightness which allows its distance to be calculated and these exploding stars are so bright that we can measure them out to distances of billions of light years. When we look at more distant objects, the light from which has been travelling for a longer time, we see that more expansion has occurred than when we look at a closer object.

We can measure incredibly tiny changes in the wavelength, and therefore tiny expansions. The expansion of the Universe does change with time and matches our expectations. If we look at an object from which light has been travelling for a billion years, we see an expansion of less than ten per cent – so a billion years ago the Universe was ten per cent smaller than it is today. When we look at a galaxy that is so far away that the light has been travelling for eight billion years, we see that the Universe was about half its current size when the light was emitted. The light from the most distant objects we can see has been stretched by a factor of about nine. While we can't measure the distance to such objects, we can calculate that the light has been travelling for around 13 billion years – having been emitted less than a billion years after the Big Bang.

If at some point in the history of the Universe the expansion had stopped, we would see that the measured expansions would stop changing within a certain distance of Earth. There is no evidence that the expansion has stopped, and we even have evidence that it is now accelerating. Over most of the history of the Universe the expansion has gradually slowed down, but in the last several billion years it appears that the rate of expansion has increased. The currently favoured explanation for this is a mysterious force – 'dark energy'.

How come the expansion of the Universe is getting faster and not slower, as one would expect?

Sean Trow (Jersey) and Mervyn Pritchard (Marchamley, Shropshire)

This is one of the biggest questions in modern cosmology, and one to which there is no definite answer. As soon as it was established that the Universe was expanding, people set about trying to find out how fast. It was expected that the expansion

would slow down, simply because of the gravitational pull of everything in the Universe. The fate of the Universe depends on how fast it was expanding, and how dense it is.

This is somewhat like throwing a ball straight up in the air. It travels upwards at first, but is continually slowing due to the Earth's gravity. Eventually, it slows to a stop and starts falling back down. Now imagine if you could throw the ball much, much harder, so that it travelled even further. It would still continue to slow down, but if you throw it at more than 11 km/s (24,000 mph) it would never actually stop. This critical speed, called the escape velocity, depends on the gravitational pull of the Earth, which in turn depends on its mass. In the case of the Universe, the critical quantity is its density; above a critical density and it will collapse on itself, below the critical density and it will expand for ever. But all this assumes that the Universe is only made up of matter and radiation.

In the 1990s, the picture became a lot more puzzling. Although measurements of the Universe on the largest scales seemed to indicate that its density is almost exactly equal to this critical value, astronomers simply couldn't find enough stuff. In fact, there were only enough galaxies to account for one-third of the critical density, even when including the mysterious dark matter. In addition to this conundrum, measurements of distant supernovae showed that the expansion of the Universe was in fact accelerating, and had been for several billion years.

The solution that is currently favoured by most cosmologists is called dark energy. It is a form of energy that pervades all space, but which exerts a pressure that acts to push everything apart. The cause of this mysterious energy is not known, and various theories have been proposed. The most commonly favoured (though that does not necessarily make it right!) is that the accelerated expansion is due to an inherent energy present in the vacuum of space. This energy density would be so very weak that in most cases it is not observable at all. This vacuum energy is a prediction of quantum physics, but there is no prediction of what its value might be. We have no way to measure or calculate it, but our best estimate places it at 30 orders of magnitude higher than what is needed to explain the accelerated expansion of the Universe. That's a discrepancy of a factor of a million million million million million! Somewhat embarrassing for cosmologists and quantum physicists alike, but since it's based on an estimate it is clear that there is much more work to be done.

So we don't know what causes dark energy, but all our measurements seem to indicate that there is something there that is causing the Universe to expand. It also fills the gap in the amount of 'stuff' in the Universe, bringing the total tally back up to the critical density measured by other experiments. It is of course possible that the theories are all wrong, and that there is no such thing as dark energy. But since it is now so crucial to our understanding of cosmology, there's a good chance that if the theories are wrong, they're *really* wrong!

Since the 'standard candle' used to probe the expanding Universe was proved to be inaccurate, how has it affected our understanding of the expanding Universe?

Scott Beresford (Birmingham, West Midlands)

The 'standard candles' used are better thought of as 'standardisable candles', as some work has to be done to calculate the distance carefully. The two main types used for extragalactic work are Cepheid variable stars and Type 1a supernovae. In both cases,

the variation of the brightness can be used to deduce the intrinsic luminosity of the star. Once that is known, the distance can be calculated, since a more distant object would appear fainter than a closer one.

The Cepheid variable stars pulsate, in both size and luminosity, with a period that is linked to their average brightness. Since such stars are generally many thousands of times more luminous than the Sun they can be seen in other galaxies, and it was observations of a Cepheid variable star in what used to be known as the Great Andromeda Nebula that led Edwin Hubble to deduce that it was far beyond the realms of our own Galaxy.

But the relationship between the pulsation period and the luminosity of a Cepheid variable is not completely straightforward. For a start, there are two types of Cepheid variable – in fact, Hubble's initial calculation of the distance to the Andromeda galaxy was wrong because he assumed the wrong type of Cepheid. The pulsations also depend on the composition of the star, for example how many heavy elements such as oxygen, carbon and iron are present. While the composition can be determined by other means, there is still an intrinsic uncertainty in the distances calculated from Cepheid variables. While they were used by Edwin Hubble in the 1920s to show that the Universe was expanding, the rate of expansion was not well known.

Type 1a supernovae are much brighter than Cepheid variables, and are the result of a white dwarf star being destroyed when it reaches a critical mass. This mass is, in principle, the same for all white dwarfs and so it might be easy to expect that they all have the same brightness. But the details of the explosion depend on how fast the star is rotating, and what its exact composition is. What has been deduced from observations is that brightness is linked to the time that it takes the afterglow of the supernova to fade away. So to deduce the intrinsic luminosity, we have to first measure the brightness of the supernova over many days and weeks.

The most distant observed supernovae are so far away that the light left them when the Universe was less than half its current age. In the late 1990s, it was discovered that the most distant Type 1a supernovae appeared to be receding at a faster rate than they should be given their measured distances. The two possibilities are that the rate of expansion of the Universe is increasing, or that the distances to the supernovae are wrong.

The big question becomes: did these supernovae behave in the same way billions of years ago? If they have changed, then the assumptions used in calculating their intrinsic luminosities could be wrong, and therefore the distances would be off. For example, we know that the composition of stars has gradually changed over the history of the Universe, as successive generations became chemically enriched by the products of previous generations of stars. There is considerable debate over whether these differences could account for the effects seen, but the majority of astronomers now tend to agree that they are too small.

There are still those who disagree, and who believe the evidence for the accelerated expansion of the Universe is on thin ice. But there are now other experiments that have used different measurements, such as the large scale distribution of galaxies, to conclude the same thing. Everything points to the same model, and if the supernovae turn out to be misleading us, then the model could be left on shaky ground.

If the Cosmic Microwave Background is radiation from the Big Bang, then why can we still see it? Shouldn't it have travelled outwards at the speed of light,

and therefore be well ahead of us?

Richard Jones (Cheshire)

The microwave light that we see as the Cosmic Microwave Background has indeed been travelling at the speed of light, but it has come from the distant reaches of the visible Universe. That means that it has taken 13.7 billion years to travel from its distant starting point to our telescopes today. The light that was in our location 13.7 billion years ago has also been travelling away at the speed of light, and is now long gone. In fact, there could be someone else billions of light years away answering the very same question.

When describing how far away galaxies are, the term light years is used. But what does this mean in an expanding Universe? If we say a galaxy is so many light years away, and light travels at a fixed rate, then next year the gap between us has increased. Are distances revised to compensate for the expansion of the Universe or is the effect negligible?

Robert (Leicester)

Distances in cosmology pose a very difficult challenge for the very reasons posed in the question. The distance to a moving object depends on when you measure that distance. We're used to measurements being fairly instantaneous, but in cosmology that's not always the case. The distances are so great that the light takes a very long time to travel from where it was emitted to our telescopes on Earth. In the intervening time, sometimes measured in billions of years, the Universe has expanded – so do you quote the distance when the light was emitted (when the Universe was smaller) or the distance now?

The only handle we have for the distance to most objects across the Universe is their redshift – how much their light has been stretched by the expansion of the Universe. Using a standard model for the expansion of the Universe, we can calculate how long the light has been travelling. But turning this into a distance is a much more complex task, and it depends on how you want to imagine the Universe.

Let's consider the Universe as an enormous, flat rubber sheet, with galaxies scattered over its surface. As the Universe expands, the rubber stretches and the galaxies get further apart. Now how do you measure the distances? You could hold up a ruler to the rubber sheet, but that distance would then depend on how stretched it was when you made the measurement.

Let's consider a galaxy that, when we hold up a ruler to the rubber sheet, is three billion light years away. The light that is emitted from that galaxy, which one could imagine as a marble being rolled across the rubber sheet, travels at the speed of light and so one might expect it to take three billion years to reach us. As the light travels, however, the rubber sheet (i.e. the Universe) is being stretched, and the marble (i.e. the light) takes longer and longer to cross what used to be the same distance. It actually takes 13 billion years to reach us on Earth, by which time the Universe has expanded by a factor of around nine. If we now hold up a ruler again, the galaxy is much further away – in fact nine times further away, and the measured distance would be almost 30 billion light years. Both measurements are equally valid, but they give very different answers. The latter answer gives the impression that the galaxy has travelled 30 billion light years in 13 billion years, which would require it

to travel faster than light.

There are other ways of measuring the distance. If the intrinsic luminosity of the object is known, as is the case with Cepheid variable stars and Type 1a supernovae, then its distance can be calculated in a different way. More distant objects look fainter, but when considering light from objects across the Universe the light is also dimmed by the expansion. This means that the calculated distance appears to be much, much greater than it really is, and in the case of the galaxy we considered earlier would come in at around the 270 billion light year mark!

All these different interpretations mean that cosmologists use two main measures when discussing distances in the Universe. The first is to use the redshift, which measures how much the Universe has expanded since the light was emitted. Since this is an observable fact there can be little argument, making the redshift the most common distance measure. If a distance is required, then the most common one of choice is to use the distance that would be found if a massive ruler could be held up and the distance instantaneously read right now – which for our example galaxy would be 30 billion light years. This is called the 'co-moving distance', since it removes the expansion, but as we saw above gives the impression that objects have travelled faster than light. In fact, what has happened is that the Universe itself has expanded faster than light.

How can it be that the Universe is larger than if it had been expanding at the speed of light since the Big Bang? Does this mean that the speed of light is not the fastest possible speed?

Mike Rosevear (Maidenhead, Berkshire), Molly Cutpurse (Grays, Essex) and Bryan Moiser (Beverley, East Yorkshire)

As discussed in the previous answer, this depends on what you mean by distance, since the measurement changes as the Universe expands. The confusion arises because the diameter of the visible Universe is often quoted as about 45 billion light years. When compared with the Universe's age of 13.7 billion light years, this can give the impression that objects have travelled faster than light, but you can rest assured that this is not the case. The distance quoted is the one that would be measured by an enormous cosmic ruler, held up and read off instantaneously.

But the light from the most distant depths of the visible Universe has been travelling towards us for over 13 billion years. This allows us to see the Universe as it was when it was a tiny fraction of its current age. However, we can't see all the way back to the Big Bang because for the first few hundred thousand years the Universe was opaque. The furthest we can see is something called the Cosmic Microwave Background, emitted when the Universe was less than 400,000 years old. When that light was emitted, the Universe was a much smaller place, and what we now see as a distant horizon was actually only 40 million light years away. The reason the light has taken so long to reach us is that the Universe has been expanding all that time, and since the light from the Cosmic Microwave Background started its journey it has stretched by a factor of more than 1,000.

So the speed of light is still the ultimate speed limit in the Universe, but while *no thing* can travel faster than light, *nothing* (i.e. empty space) can.

Is there any good reason to believe the entire Universe is entirely contained within our cosmic horizon? Could there be more galaxies beyond?

Geoff Robbins (Edinburgh) and Geoff Sargent (Portsmouth, Hampshire)

Our cosmic horizon is defined by the age of the Universe, as we can only see regions that are close enough for light to have travelled to us over the past 13.7 billion years. As time goes by, this horizon will grow, albeit very slowly in cosmological terms, and more galaxies will become visible. But will there come a point when this stops? The size of the whole Universe is not known – and in fact it could be infinite. Even if it is finite, however, that does not imply that the Universe has an edge.

Returning to our familiar analogy, consider the surface of a balloon, which has no edge but which is certainly not infinite in size. The Universe could well be similar, with our visible horizon representing some fraction of the entire surface. If you travel around the balloon, then eventually you return to where you started. Perhaps the same is true in our Universe. If we could see enough of the surface, then the galaxies we see in one direction would actually be the same ones we see in the opposite direction. Because of this, our example of a balloon should be treated with caution as it would be inaccurate to give the impression that the Universe is spherical.

Some scientists, however, are looking for hints that could give away the size of the Universe. By examining the largest scales we can see in the Universe, namely those in the Cosmic Microwave Background, the search is under way for subtle signatures of various effects, including a finite size to the Universe. It's a bold endeavour as it's not always clear exactly what is being looked for, but it suffices to say that nothing untoward has been found yet!

What is the mass of the entire Universe?

Paul (Dublin, Ireland)

We can't actually see the entire Universe, so determining its size and mass is impossible. What we can try to calculate is its density, or mass in a given volume. While we might not be able to measure the entire Universe we can see a lot of space, stretching for billions of light years in every direction, and in that space there are millions upon millions of galaxies. A galaxy like our own Milky Way contains the equivalent of a million million Suns, and since the Sun weighs two million million million million million kg, that makes galaxies pretty massive. These numbers get very large and unwieldy, so scientists would write the mass of the Sun as 2×10^{30} kg, which means a 2 followed by 30 zeros.

But the galaxies are pretty far apart, and are arranged in groups and clusters with immense voids in them. So what is the overall density? Well, it turns out to be pretty low. If the Universe were smoothed out, there would be the equivalent of just six protons in every cubic metre. Compare this with air, which we don't consider to be particularly dense. A cubic metre of air weighs about 1 kg which is equivalent to 600 million million million million protons. This means that to reduce the density of the air to the average density of the Universe we would have to expand every cubic metre until it reached beyond the Moon's orbit.

So the Universe is not very dense, but it is pretty big, and even a very low density could add up to a pretty large mass. The Universe as measured today is around 45 billion light years across. (See previous questions for why that *doesn't* mean that objects have travelled faster than light!) Assuming this volume, and the density given above, then the mass of the visible Universe is around 60 million million million million million million million kg (6×10^{43} kg, or a 6 followed by 43 zeros). That is

the equivalent to a million million galaxies like the Milky Way. Since the Milky Way contains around one hundred billion stars, there are an awful lot of solar systems out there!

If the Universe is expanding, will everything be out of sight one day?

Tony Roberts (Shoreham-by-Sea, West Sussex)

The Universe might be expanding, but as time goes on we can see further and further. This is simply because the light from even more distant objects has had time to reach us here on Earth. But as the expansion continues, the light from those most distant objects gets stretched more and more. As well as increasing the wavelength of the light, this also makes the objects appear dimmer. Eventually, the most distant objects will move so far away that their light can never reach us, and they will be invisible.

Closer objects, such as the Solar System and the Galaxy, are held together by gravity and these will not expand away. Eventually, however, after many billions of years, the last stars will fizzle out. If there are any people living in the Universe at that time, it will be an incredibly boring place!

How has the estimate of the age and size of the Universe changed over the history of *The Sky at Night*?

Hywel Clatworthy (Pontypool, South Wales)

The Sky at Night has covered the time of some of the most significant changes in our understanding of the Universe. The world of cosmology in the 1950s was dominated by one big question: was there a Big Bang? There was strong evidence by that point that the Universe was expanding, courtesy of Edwin Hubble and others, and the expansion fitted neatly into Albert Einstein's theories of general relativity.

A group of scientists, including Fred Hoyle from Cambridge, were proponents of the 'Steady State Universe'. Hoyle had triumphed in showing that most of the chemical elements were created in the centres of stars, and was not comfortable with the idea that the Universe had a beginning. In his theory, the Universe was expanding, but new matter was constantly created to fill the gaps. In this way, the Universe would constantly be changing, but when considered as a whole would be in the same state for eternity.

The opposing theory involved the concept that the Universe was smaller in the past. Taking the idea to its natural conclusion, there must have been a time when the Universe was much smaller. This was bolstered by observations of distant galaxies by radio astronomers, which indicated that the furthest reaches of the Universe are different from our local environment. The idea that the Universe had not been around for eternity seemed preposterous to some – the term 'Big Bang' was coined by the English astronomer Fred Hoyle in 1949, with some reports suggesting the name was meant to be disparaging (though Hoyle never admitted to this).

The nail in the coffin of the Steady State theory came in the 1960s. Two physicists working at Bell Labs, Arno Penzias and Robert Wilson, were trying to get to the bottom of static in radio communications. They found a constant signal coming from all over the sky, and could not find its source. It was deduced by Robert Dicke, an American theoretical physicist, that this could be radiation remaining from

the afterglow of the Big Bang. This fitted in very well with the Big Bang model, as the early Universe must also have been so very hot and dense that it would have been dominated by intense radiation. Such a cosmic afterglow was independently predicted in the 1940s, and the discovery was surprisingly close to the predictions. We know this radiation now as the Cosmic Microwave Background, or CMB for short, and we see it as a constant glow over the whole sky, corresponding to a temperature of three degrees above absolute zero.

The CMB turned cosmology from a theoretical exercise into an observational science, and astronomers clamoured to find out as much as possible about the early Universe. The observations helped narrow down its age, initially putting it at somewhere around 10 billion years. This was slightly contradictory to some other evidence, which indicated that some stars were much older than that.

But the CMB also posed a number of problems for cosmologists. The early Universe seemed to have been almost exactly the same in all directions. The only way that different parts could have achieved the same temperature would be if light had been able to travel between them to equalise the energy. But the light from one side of the Universe is only just arriving at Earth, so it hadn't had enough time to get to the other side. And yet, somehow, the Universe has reached this incredibly uniform state.

A further problem was the calculated density of the Universe. It was known from Einstein's theories that there were three possible solutions. If the density was too high, then the gravitational pull of everything on everything else would slow down the expansion and eventually reverse it, culminating in a 'big crunch'. If the density was too low, then the Universe would continue to expand for ever, resulting in a 'big freeze'. Finally, there is a sweet spot in the middle, called the 'critical density', where the Universe would continue to expand but at an ever-decreasing rate.

The problem was that if the density were even a tiny bit different from the critical density, then we would not be here. Even one part in 10^{60} (1 followed by 60 zeros) would result in the Universe either being crushed to a pulp or ripped apart before life on Earth could evolve. Could this simply be a coincidence? As a rule, scientists are generally wary of a coincidence, especially one that is balanced on such a fine knife edge.

A common response to what was termed the 'flatness problem' was the anthropic principle. It stated that the Universe had to be this density because if it weren't then we wouldn't be here to ask the question. A seemingly valid answer, but not one that is very satisfying.

The solution to both these problems was proposed in the 1980s by an astronomer called Alan Guth. His theory, which he termed 'inflation', involved an incredibly rapid period of expansion in the very early Universe. This would expand the horizon very rapidly so that much larger parts of the Universe could reach the same temperature and density. If true, this would mean for certain that our own visible Universe was a tiny, tiny part of a much larger Universe, most of which is too far away for light to have travelled to us yet. Inflation would also solve the 'flatness problem', as the theory requires that the density approaches the critical value. This would be a much more satisfying answer than anthropic principle, though it still needs to be tested and verified.

By the 1990s, people had started making more detailed maps of the Cosmic Microwave Background, and had seen tiny variations. Parts of the early Universe were ever so slightly denser than others, and these over-densities became the sites of massive clusters of galaxies such as those we see around us today. NASA's Cosmic

Background Explorer (COBE) and Wilkinson Microwave Anisotropy Probe (WMAP) satellites helped to make increasingly accurate maps, and started to help refine the estimates of what the Universe is made of. More recently the European Space Agency's Planck mission has been making more detailed maps of the entire sky.

The answer was startling, as it indicated that less than one-twentieth of the energy in the Universe could be attributed to normal atomic matter such as that which we and everything we see are made of. Around a fifth of the Universe is made of something called dark matter, of which there was evidence from other fields of cosmology and astrophysics. But, even combined, this only made up around a quarter of the energy density of the entire Universe. The rest is thought to be made of something which was called dark energy (cosmologists like to give things rather unhelpful and meaningless names). Dark energy and inflation both stem from theories of particle physics, the details of which are far beyond the scope of this book.

In the early twenty-first century, a consistent picture is finally taking form. The Universe is made of around 4 per cent matter that we're used to, around 23 per cent dark matter, and around 73 per cent dark energy. We also know that it is around 13.7 billion years old. Other aspects of the Universe are far more uncertain. For example, we have not yet discovered what dark matter is (a bold statement to write in a time when the Large Hadron Collider might be on the verge of discovering it!), and we don't really have a clue what dark energy is.

In other respects, nothing has changed since the 1950s. We might understand more about how the Universe has changed, and what occurred in its earliest moments, but we don't have a clue as to what caused the Big Bang in the first place. There are theories, but they are currently completely untestable. Perhaps, for the moment, this biggest of big questions is best left to the philosophers.

Is the Universe increasing in mass?

Steve Gayler (Poole, Dorset)

The short answer to this is no, at least not if you assume that mass and energy are equivalent. That's something that Einstein showed us, and is one of the reasons for the oft-quoted equation $E = mc^2$. Matter is being constantly turned into energy, for example when a star burns its nuclear fuel to create light. But the opposite can also happen, and a photon of light can decay into particles of matter. When we talk about the contents of the Universe, we normally talk about the energy density, accounting for the matter with its equivalent energy.

We can't see the entire Universe, just those parts that are close enough for light to have had sufficient time to travel to us. As time goes by, we can see further and further, bringing more and more galaxies into view. But if we take a particular volume of space at a certain time, for example the entire visible Universe that we can currently see, then on average nothing is entering or leaving it. For every photon of light that leaves the region we've selected, another one will enter.

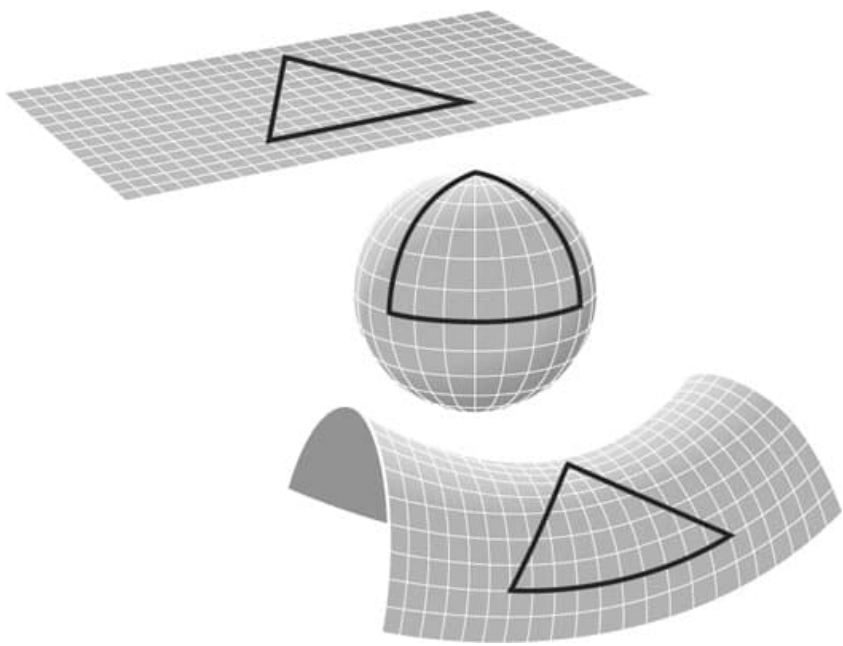
But the Universe is expanding, causing that fixed region to grow in volume. While the energy content of the region may stay the same, the density will constantly be decreasing as the volume increases.

What shape is the Universe, and how do we know?

Peter Baker (Ascot, Berkshire) and Tom Stroud (Southampton, Hampshire)

Discussions about the shape of the Universe normally relate to how it should be treated on large scales. To do this, let's imagine that the Universe is actually two-dimensional. (Obviously, the Universe is not two-dimensional, but manipulations of three-dimensional space are notoriously difficult to visualise!) It's much easier or represent it with a two-dimensional surface, giving us a third dimension to move it around in.) Now imagine drawing a triangle on a piece of paper. Schoolchildren are taught that the angles within a triangle add up to 180 degrees, and on a flat piece of paper that would certainly be the case. A two-dimensional surface where angles in a triangle do add up to 180 degrees is said to have a 'flat' geometry.

Now imagine the surface of a sphere, say a globe of the Earth. From the Equator, draw a line heading due north to the North Pole, then turn through a right angle and head back to the Equator. Once there, turn another right angle to return to where the line started. What you have is a triangle drawn on a sphere, but all three angles in the triangle are right angles. That means the sum of the three angles is 270 degrees, not 180.



A large enough triangle drawn on the Earth would have three angles adding up to 270 degrees – more than if it was on a flat surface.

A shape such as this is said to have 'positive curvature', which means that the angles in triangles add up to more than 180 degrees. If you were to walk (or swim, or fly) along the lines you would think you were walking in a straight line at all times, unable to detect the curvature of the surface – it's only when looked at in three dimensions that the lines appear to be curved.

It is possible to imagine a surface where the angles of a triangle add up to less

than 180 degrees. These are said to have 'negative curvature', and the simplest one to imagine is the shape of a horse's saddle, which goes down at the sides and up at the front and back. While the lines would look straight when viewed up close, from afar they would appear to bend outwards.

This all seems pretty abstract, and it may not be clear how drawing triangles on different shapes has anything to do with the Universe. Instead of drawing lines, we could imagine shining a beam of light. In a universe with positive curvature (e.g. a sphere) the beams of light bend towards each other, which makes things appear larger than they really are – the universe acts like a giant lens. In a universe with negative curvature, the lines curve away from each other and objects appear smaller.

So how do we go about measuring whether beams of light travel in straight lines? To do so would require knowing how large an object was in the first place, allowing us to compare that size with how large it appears. Luckily, we do have something of a known size, notably the features seen in the Cosmic Microwave Background, the afterglow of the Big Bang. When we look at the microwaves that are emanating from the early Universe, we see parts that were slightly hotter and denser than others. We actually understand the formation of these hot (and cold) spots very well – the early Universe may have been hotter and denser, but it was a pretty simple place to understand in terms of the physics.

We can then create a triangle with one corner here on Earth and the other two either side of a hot spot. The apparent size is exactly what it should be if all the angles add up to 180 degrees. That means that light has travelled in straight lines, and the shape of the Universe on these large scales is flat. We can do the same for objects that are a little closer to home than the most distant parts of the Universe we can see, using features such as the distribution of galaxies on massive scales. Basically anything that has a known size.

We know that the Universe seems to be almost completely flat. But we are not 100 per cent sure about the exact numbers – there's a little uncertainty, as there is with any physical measurement. The uncertainty means that there is a chance that we could one day measure signatures in the structure of the early Universe that imply that it is not flat on larger scales than we can see. It leaves room for other possibilities, such as the Universe being shaped like a football, with intersecting regions that are almost flat, but not quite. New measurements from the European Space Agency's Planck satellite will help refine the measurements further, and leave us more sure of what shape the Universe is.

How can we be sure whether the Universe is infinite or not?

Glenn Povey (Ipswich, Suffolk) and Peter Wright (Weymouth, Dorset)

We actually *can't* be sure whether the Universe is infinite or not. The measurements to date tell us that the size of the entire Universe is probably much, much bigger than everything we see, but whether it's actually infinite or not is harder to measure.

What lies outside the Universe, and what is the Universe expanding into?

Thomas Work (Belfast, Northern Ireland), Kerry Young (London) and Brian Murray (Liverpool)

The concept of something being outside the Universe is almost completely

meaningless, as it involves the concept of there being space outside the Universe. Space as we understand it – the three dimensions of up-down, left-right and front-back – are only defined within the boundaries of the Universe. It is possible that the Universe we know is embedded in a higher-dimensional structure, but the higher dimensions will not be measured in the same way.

It is difficult to visualise the expanding Universe, but I compare it to an inflating balloon with the galaxies on the balloon's surface getter further apart with time. In this analogy, is there anything in the interior of the balloon?

Roger Clark (Brighton, East Sussex)

The analogy of an inflating balloon is a useful one because it gives the idea of an expanding space that doesn't have an edge. In this example, the Universe is the surface of the balloon, and all of space would be on its surface. The contents of the interior of the balloon are meaningless.

The problem arises because we are visualising the Universe as a two-dimensional surface in a three-dimensional world. Instead, try to imagine the surface of the balloon from the point of view of an ant crawling around on its surface. The ant (which for these purposes can't look up and so therefore has a two-dimensional existence) would only know the surface of the balloon. Providing the surface were big enough, it would seem to be flat to a tiny ant, just as the surface of the Earth appears to be flat from the point of view of us crawling around on its surface.

If the interior of the balloon is still causing problems, then you could try imagining the Universe as a large flat sheet which is expanding. The problem with that is that it's hard to get away from the idea of there being an edge, so the sheet has to be infinite in size. I'm afraid there really is no easy answer.

The Big Bang and the Early Universe

What existed before the Big Bang?

Gideon Kibblewhite (Bath, Somerset), George (Blackburn, Lancashire), Ian Edge (Poynton, Cheshire), Martin Newman (Bury St Edmunds, Suffolk) and John Piper (Bexhill-on-Sea, East Sussex)

The concept of there even being a time before the Big Bang is generally considered to be inaccurate. In cosmology, space and time are treated as one entity referred to as space-time. It is generally considered that these came into existence at the Big Bang, and so before that time had no meaning. Asking what came before the Big Bang would be like asking what is north of the North Pole?

What is the recipe for a Universe, and how long does it take to prepare and cook till it's done?

Andi Ye (Whitby, North Yorkshire)

Before preparing a Universe, you need to make sure you have all the ingredients and utensils available. First of all, prepare a selection of fundamental particles, which are the main ingredients. You'll find these on the shelves marked 'quarks' and 'leptons', which include electron, muon and tau particles, as well as the tiny little neutrinos, which are a little hard to hold. Make sure that you get their antiparticle equivalents, but be careful to put in a tiny amount more matter than antimatter – this will be very important later. For the utensils, look in the cupboard marked 'Forces' and grab one of each of the strong nuclear force, the weak nuclear force, the electromagnetic force and the gravitational force. The forces come with 'exchange particles', and if you can find them it's worth throwing in a few Higgs bosons.

Now the easiest way to start off the baking is to try to get hold of a 'pre-inflated Universe'. These have already gone through all the trouble of an inflationary period, which saves a lot of hassle and a small amount of time. Not much time, around 10^{-35} seconds (a hundred million billion billion billionth of a second). The process involved in making this requires tremendous energies, and can be rather dangerous to reproduce. You'll recognise the inflated Universe because it will be about the size of an apple (we are making here just a visible Universe, as it is unclear what lies beyond and how far it goes), and will look exceedingly smooth all over.

To continue the process, you need to throw in all your ingredients and forces, not forgetting the all-important exchange particles that are required to make the forces work. To start the cooking, warm your oven to about 10^{28} degrees Celsius (or gas mark 1 billion billion billion).

Before you put the Universe in, make sure to stand back – in the first few trillionths of a second it will expand to fill the size of the Earth's orbit, around 300 million km across. In that small amount of time, it will also cool a great deal, by a

factor of around a billion. The strong nuclear force will be acting on the quarks using ‘gluons’, and the Universe will be made of a quark-gluon plasma, the densest form of matter known, though there will also be a lot of intense radiation flying around. You should also make sure you have ear defenders on, as there will be fairly loud sound waves travelling through the Universe. These are simply due to tiny imperfections that were present in the pre-inflated Universe you started with. Don’t worry, they’re not dangerous, and sound like a very discordant rock concert.

After around a hundredth of a millisecond it will have cooled by another few million times, to a mere billion billion degrees, and expanded to around a light year across. The strong force, using gluons, will have tied the quarks up into particles called ‘baryons’. Most of these are unstable and decay away in a tiny fraction of a second to produce a combination of electrons, neutrinos and photons. The only stable baryons are protons and neutrons, although even neutrons gradually decay into a mixture of protons and electrons. The most dominant constituent of the Universe will be photons, or particles of light. The electrons and their antiparticle equivalent, positrons, are continually colliding to create photons, though at these temperatures the photons can be spontaneously converted back into electrons and positrons.

This situation continues for the first three minutes, with photons turning into electrons and positrons, and back again, and neutrons slowly turning into protons. After three minutes, however, the temperature is as low as a billion degrees and the protons and neutrons can start to combine to form atomic nuclei. This process, called nuclear fusion, relies on the weak nuclear force, and will bind up all of the neutrons into nuclei such that they can’t decay any more.

The final result of the battle between protons and neutrons is that the matter in the Universe will be made of around 70 per cent protons and 30 per cent neutrons. Around half of the protons will still be floating around on their own, but the other half will be locked into atomic nuclei such as helium. It is important that the temperature has decreased at the correct rate, as if it took longer then all of the neutrons would have turned into protons and there would be no elements in your early Universe other than hydrogen.

You must ensure that you keep the temperature decreasing, such that after around 15–20 minutes it drops below a few hundred million degrees. This stops the process of nuclear fusion and means that only the lighter elements are created – there simply isn’t time for the heavier ones to form. The temperature will also drop such that the photons can’t decay into electrons and positrons. Providing you got the ratio of matter to antimatter just right when you put it all in, there should be no positrons left, and the electrons should have been decimated to around a billionth of their original population.

At this point, leave the Universe to cool down on its own. You may also want to find your nearest time portal and skip forward a few hundred thousand years, as this is when the next big change happens. The temperature will have cooled to a relatively chilly 3,000 degrees (though that’s still about gas mark 200), which will allow the electrons to combine with the atomic nuclei and form the first atoms. This also makes the Universe transparent to light, and the photons will travel freely.

If you look closely at your visible Universe, which will by now be over ten million light years across, you’ll notice that it looks slightly pockmarked. That’s simply due to those tiny imperfections in the pre-inflated Universe. The sound waves that were propagating around have resulted in slight density variations, with some regions being slightly denser than others.

It is at this point that you can put away all but one of your utensils. The strong

nuclear force is only needed if you're building or destroying protons, neutrons or other baryons, but all of those are tied up into atomic nuclei. The weak nuclear force is only necessary if you want to make or break the atomic nuclei, and they're quite happily sitting in the centres of atoms. And the electromagnetic force is busy keeping the electrons in the atoms and ensuring that the material in the Universe is electrically neutral. The only important utensil for the next hundred million years or so will be gravity, though you might want to keep the others nearby.

There is one crucial ingredient that we haven't mentioned yet, mainly because it was already included in the pre-inflated Universe. This is called dark matter, and is discussed at length elsewhere so won't be treated in any detail here. The key thing is that most of the forces have very little impact on the dark matter, with only gravity having any effect at all. In fact, you won't even be able to see the dark matter, but it is there. It is therefore at this time in your Universe's evolution, when gravity is the dominant force, that dark matter becomes important.

If you stare at the Universe, you'll see that the slightly denser bits are pulling the surrounding regions together, becoming denser and more massive. Watch it for long enough and the centres of the densest bits will become hot enough and dense enough to ignite nuclear fusion in their cores. The weak nuclear force will come into action again, creating heavier and heavier elements, and producing large quantities of light. This intense radiation invokes the electromagnetic force which ionises the surrounding medium, ripping the electrons from the atomic nuclei.

This period of reionisation is the last major change in the Universe, and the remainder of its evolution relates to relatively slight variations on the conditions present a few hundred million years after the Big Bang. The stars will collect into groups, called galaxies, and some will eventually have planets around them. After a long time, measured in billions of years, life forms may start to emerge. If you're feeling generous, you might even consider some of the species to be intelligent, though I wouldn't get your hopes up too far (I'm told that the ones to watch are the smaller aquatic mammals)! If you really want to test their intelligence, then I suggest you leave a message!

I have often heard the term 'pure energy' used in documentaries to describe the early Universe. Is it possible to have energy without matter?

P Lovering (Porthcawl, South Wales)

Einstein showed that energy and mass are equivalent, and that one can be turned into another. This is the basis behind the famous equation $E = mc^2$, where E is the energy, m is the mass of the particle, and c is the speed of light in a vacuum. This is a much-simplified version of Einstein's actual equation, and describes the situation for a stationary particle – the energy of a moving particle is even higher, and it is this principle on which experiments such as the Large Hadron Collider are based.

A feature of the standard model of particle physics is that particles can decay into a range of different particles – this is how nuclear fission operates. The particles in question are subatomic particles. Some may be familiar, such as protons, neutrons and electrons – the particles that make up atoms – but there is a whole zoo of other particles. Protons and neutrons are made up of particles called quarks, but there are also particles called pions, kaons and neutrinos. These particles can all be converted into other particles when they are bashed together, but only providing there is enough energy to create the required mass. But they can also decay into something

that has energy but no mass, such as a photon of light. Those photons of light, which could be considered to be energy without mass, can decay back into particles that have a mass, with the mass created depending on the energy of the photon.

The experiments being conducted in the Large Hadron Collider at CERN in Switzerland rely on this conversion of matter. They take particles such as protons, or the nuclei of lead atoms, and speed them up to very close to the speed of light. This gives them an enormous amount of energy, and when they collide an enormous range of particles come out. The purpose of doing this in the Large Hadron Collider is to examine the particles that come out to see if there are any new ones we didn't know about.

The very early Universe was a much hotter, denser place than it is today, with the average energy of the particles being far higher than those which are used in the Large Hadron Collider. A sea of higher-energy particles was constantly changing from one form to another. Some of the energy will be in the form of photons of light, which have no mass. Energy is always locked up into particles of one type or another, but those particles do not necessarily have mass.

I have read that the rate of expansion during the 'inflationary' stage of the very early Universe was greater than the speed of light. How does this reconcile with the fact that nothing can travel faster than light?

Hugh Burt (Tamworth, Staffordshire)

There is no contradiction, as no objects are actually moving faster than the speed of light relative to each other. Rather, the expansion of space (or, to be precise, space-time) is occurring incredibly fast. In some senses, space-time is defined as the absence of anything, so while it's true that no *thing* can travel faster than light, *nothing* can expand at any speed.

The theory of inflation states that in the first 10^{-30} seconds (that's 0.000000000000000000000000000001 seconds, with 29 zeros between the decimal point and the 1) the Universe expanded by a factor of 10^{60} (that's a 1 followed by 60 zeros). Regions of the Universe that were originally very close are now so very far apart that there is insufficient time for light to travel between them – we say that they are beyond each other's horizon. This is very important because regions that are beyond each other's horizon shouldn't be able to exchange energy, and therefore there is no reason for them to look the same. But before the rapid inflation took place they were much closer together, within each other's horizon. This meant that for a very short time light could travel between them, and that contact enabled them to reach equilibrium, becoming almost the same density and temperature.

This feature of inflation solves a key problem that existed with the Big Bang theory for decades, namely that the Universe looks so similar in all directions. The most distant parts of the Universe that we see on opposite sides of the sky have only just entered our horizon, and so should not yet be within each other's. Since they are too far apart for light to travel between them they shouldn't have been able to equilibrate. When we study the distant Universe we see that it is remarkably similar in all directions, implying that it must have all been in contact at some point. While these regions of the Universe are too far apart now, before inflation they were much, much closer together. In the first tiny fraction of a second after the Big Bang these now distant regions were within each other's horizon, which explains why they are so similar today.

How do scientists know with such certainty the events that took place a fraction of a second after the Big Bang?

Bruce Jervis (Edinburgh, Scotland)

As we consider the Universe at earlier and earlier times, it actually gets considerably simpler to understand – largely because there was less complex structure present. In the first hundred million years or so after the Big Bang, the Universe was made almost entirely of hydrogen and helium gas. At earlier times, that gas was hotter and denser, and for the first 400,000 years of its history the Universe was actually opaque. The high temperatures stripped the atoms of their electrons and the resulting ionised gas, or plasma, constantly scattered the light. This is the furthest back we can see directly, often called the Surface of Last Scattering. The light that travelled through the Universe from that point is seen today as the Cosmic Microwave Background, an afterglow of the primordial fireball. We can measure the properties of the Universe at this age of 400,000 years, but to see further back we have to infer what took place from our observations and theories.

Closer to the time of the Big Bang, the conditions were so hot that even protons, which make up the nuclei of atoms, are broken down. This requires huge energies, but we can recreate the reactions in particle accelerators such as the Large Hadron Collider. Our observations in these laboratories and experiments are used to inform our theories of how the really early Universe behaved in its first few microseconds, but there comes a point beyond which we can no longer recreate the conditions in experiments on Earth. This is the point at which we have to rely solely on theories, and where the testable predictions end.

Cosmologists can think up as many whacky theories of the early Universe as they like, but to be proven the theory must make a prediction that can be tested. The theory of inflation is compatible with all the observations made, but it has yet to make a prediction that has been tested. To make matters worse, there are many theories of inflation that are all equally possible, given the data we currently have, but we have no way of telling which ones are correct – if any!

Since we can't see back to the inflationary era directly, we have to look at the impact it must have had on the later Universe. Theories of inflation predict that there should be a subtle signature visible in the Cosmic Microwave Background. This signature of inflation would be incredibly faint, but with the latest experiments such as Planck it may be possible to detect it. The likelihood is that if Planck sees the signature of inflation we will be in a position to say that we are more certain that inflation is correct, but the ability to deduce the details of exactly what occurred will rely on future missions that are still on the drawing board.

Was there a sound during the Big Bang?

Franklin Gordon (Sheffield, South Yorkshire)

First of all, let's consider what sound is. Sound is a pressure wave that travels through a material of some sort. We are familiar with it travelling through the air, but pressure waves can also travel through liquids and solids. For example, earthquakes produce pressure waves that travel through the interior of the Earth. As a pressure wave travels, parts of the material are bunched up closer together, becoming denser, while the adjacent regions are stretched apart, becoming less

dense. The sound wave propagates though the material as these over- and under-densities travel along. The speed at which they travel depends on the density and composition of the material.

In the early Universe there were regions that were denser than others. The effect of these over-densities was not unlike the ripples on a pond, and the resulting waves of density propagated through the Universe. They propagated very easily, travelling at speeds of around half the speed of light. The result of these pressure waves was to create a pattern of over- and under-densities in the early Universe that we see today in the Cosmic Microwave Background. This marks the point, 400,000 years after the Big Bang, when the first atoms formed and when the density waves stopped travelling so easily though the Universe. The pattern that remained was frozen in to the matter in the Universe, and the denser regions eventually became massive clusters of galaxies that we see today.

The intensity, or loudness, of sound waves is measured by how dense the over-densities are relative to the under-densities. We traditionally measure the volume in decibels, which are a slightly unusual unit. This scale is useful because the range of volumes that can be heard by the human ear is so wide. Every increase of ten decibels means that the over-densities are ten times denser relative to the under-densities. So 20 decibels is ten times louder than 10 decibels, 30 decibels ten times louder than 20, and so on.

The variations in density throughout the early Universe were incredibly weak, at just one part in 100,000, but that still corresponds to somewhere around 110 decibels. If you could go back and listen to it, this would not be loud enough to do any significant damage – about the same volume as a loud rock concert! The sound would also be much too low for the human ear to hear – about 50 octaves too low in fact.

Dark Matter and Dark Energy

What are dark matter and dark energy, and do they really exist?

Paul Foster (Clapham, London), Ann Ibrahim (London) and Ken Mackintosh (Horsham, West Sussex)

To discuss this, it is useful to examine the evidence behind the existence of dark matter and dark energy. The evidence for dark matter has been around since the 1930s, when astronomer Fritz Zwicky realised that galaxies in the Coma Cluster (a massive cluster of galaxies found in the constellation of Coma Berenices) are more tightly grouped than they should be. The clustering of galaxies is determined by their gravitational attraction, and therefore by their mass.

The standard method of weighing galaxies in those days was to use their brightness – essentially measuring the amount of starlight, dividing by the amount of starlight from a star like the Sun, and then multiplying by the Sun's mass. What Zwicky realised was that the mass required to explain their clustering was hundreds of times the mass that could be accounted for with their starlight. He termed the remainder of the matter, which he deduced must not be shining, 'dark matter'.

Over the next few decades, much of the discrepancy in the two estimates of the mass of galaxies was attributed to matter that shone at other wavelengths. For example, radio astronomy revealed the discovery that the mass of hydrogen and helium gas between the stars is almost ten times that of the stars themselves. But that still left a considerable amount of matter that was unaccounted for.

In the 1970s, an American astronomer called Vera Rubin was studying the rotation of galaxies themselves, and discovered that they were behaving in an unexpected way. Most of the mass of a galaxy is concentrated in the centre, and one would expect that the stars further out to be orbiting more slowly – just as the outer planets in our Solar System orbit more slowly than the inner ones. But what Rubin and her team found was that the stars on the outer edges of the galaxy were orbiting too quickly. There were two possible solutions: either the galaxy was more massive than was previously thought, or the equations of gravity were wrong. If the galaxy was more massive, then the additional mass must be distributed much more smoothly than the stars themselves, and astronomers spent a long time looking for what it might be. All that was known was that it gave off little or no light, but still had a mass and therefore a gravitational pull on other matter.

Slowly, the various candidates were ruled out after searches failed to find them. Careful searches for small black holes scattered through the galaxy returned nothing. Astronomers turned to small, faint objects in the spherical halos of galaxies – they called them Massive Compact Halo Objects, or MACHOs! Although there are plenty of stars and other objects that are very faint, there are simply not enough to account for the missing mass. The remaining candidate was a new type of matter, but one that didn't interact with light at all. This matter was not so much dark as completely transparent, or invisible, but Fritz Zwicky's term 'dark matter' has stuck. The

particles are theorised to exist by particle physicists though to date none have been found. The collective name given to these particles by astronomers was 'Weakly Interacting Massive Particles', or WIMPs (a very suitable alternative to MACHOs!).

A further big piece of evidence in the search for the missing mass was the study of the distant Universe. The distribution of matter in the form of galaxies could only be explained if there was more there than could be seen by any telescope. The search for the dark matter particles is still under way, but it is making progress. The Large Hadron Collider at CERN is producing reactions with enormous energies that could produce tiny amounts of dark matter. Since we can't see dark matter, it won't be directly detectable, but the particles are expected to decay into particles of 'normal' matter that *can* be detected.

While there's not yet any definitive proof of what dark matter is, most astronomers expect that it will turn out to be these previously unseen particles. A small number are still searching for possible modifications to Einstein's theory of gravity that could explain the observations, but there has been little progress on that front.

The discussion about what dark energy is will be much shorter, simply because we know far less. Even taking into account the dark matter, around 70 per cent of the energy (i.e. 'stuff') in the Universe is still unaccounted for. Added to this, something appears to be causing the expansion of the Universe to accelerate. Several possible theories have been put forward, the most popular one being the energy of the vacuum of space itself. While the Universe expands, the density of matter and radiation decreases but the density of this vacuum energy would remain constant. If this is correct, it would have started to drive the expansion outward at ever-increasing rates several billion years ago.

We have no way of predicting from theories what the vacuum energy is, and even the best guesses are way out from what is required to explain the accelerating expansion Universe. Quite simply, we just don't know!

What is the latest information about dark matter and dark energy?

Chris Geraghty (Cannock, Staffordshire) and Rik Whittaker (Manchester)

The latest information on dark energy and dark matter are the results of surveys of hundreds of thousands of galaxies. Although dark matter does not shine and therefore cannot be seen, it does have a mass and therefore exerts a gravitational force. One of the side effects of large masses such as galaxies is that they distort light passing close to them. This bending of light by strong gravitational fields is called gravitational lensing, and was predicted by Einstein in his theory of gravity. A massive cluster of galaxies will distort the light from background galaxies, and change their shapes. Most of the time the galaxies simply look a little stretched and distorted, but sometimes the images are spread into large arcs. If the effect is strong enough there can even be multiple images of the same galaxy visible!

Gravitational lensing allows astronomers to map out where the matter is in galaxy clusters. This allows us to see where the greatest concentrations of dark matter lie without being able to see it directly. The techniques to study this are getting more and more sophisticated all the time, and can now map the distortions of galaxies over large swathes of sky.

The background galaxies, the light from which is distorted by the gravitational lensing effect, are often at huge distances. The vast distances mean that these

measurements probe the expansion of the Universe. Any study of the expansion of the Universe sheds light on dark energy, and these studies have helped pin down its strength.

But there's one more measurement that is crucial for understanding dark matter and dark energy. The furthest back we can see in the Universe is the Cosmic Microwave Background, radiation from the early Universe dating back to just 400,000 years after the Big Bang. Structures are visible in the Cosmic Microwave Background, caused by very slight over-densities in the early Universe, and we can simulate the early Universe to investigate what is required to generate the measurements that we see.

These careful techniques mean that we are truly in the age of precision cosmology. To match the various measurements, we now know that 72 per cent of the Universe is made of dark energy, around 23 per cent is made of dark matter, and less than 5 per cent is made of the atoms and molecules that constitute everything we see around us. If that doesn't make you feel small, I'm not sure what will!

If all things have an equal and exact opposite, such as matter and antimatter, is there any evidence for anti-dark matter?

Terry Leese (Camberley, Surrey)

The work of physicists in the early twentieth century showed that for every fundamental particle known there is an exact opposite particle, called its antiparticle. So there are anti-protons, anti-electrons and anti-neutrons, and so on for all the particles that constitute the matter we are made of.

It is thought that dark matter is made of different types of particles that do not interact with light and therefore cannot be seen. Despite their peculiar nature, these particles are similar in some respects to the 'normal' particles that we're used to and so they should also have antiparticles. The most likely discovery method for dark matter is in a particle accelerator such as the Large Hadron Collider, and it is very likely that the discovery will be of both a dark matter particle and its antiparticle counterpart.

Gas clouds collapse under gravity to form stars. Would we expect dark matter to collapse under gravity, and what would result from this?

Steve Jones (Bedford)

Gravity is the force that dominates how dark matter is distributed in the Universe. When we study the distribution of dark matter, we find clumps of it centred on the locations of galaxies and galaxy clusters. In fact it's the other way around – the dark matter formed the clumps due to gravity and the galaxies formed in the centre of the clumps.

When normal matter, such as that in gas clouds, collapses under gravity, other effects start to play a part. Collisions between the particles mean that the gas clouds cool down and collapse further. The gas can also radiate away energy, and it is the radiation combined with the collisions that allows it to become denser in the cores of the clouds, eventually leading to the formation of stars. On the scale of galaxies, similar processes lead to the formation of discs such as that which makes up the bulk of the structure of our Milky Way.

Dark matter, on the other hand, does not interact with anything – even itself – and therefore can't radiate away energy or cool due to collisions. Without these interactions, the dark matter can't collapse further than large, roughly spherical balls.

The dark matter and normal matter are tied together by their mutual gravitational attraction. The early Universe was filled with an almost completely uniform sea of matter (both normal and dark), with only slight over-densities. The regions that were slightly denser had a greater gravitational pull and therefore collapsed under gravity, becoming denser still. Since around 80 per cent of the matter in the Universe is dark matter, this dominated the gravitational collapse. The normal matter followed the dark matter, and eventually became dense enough to form stars.

Ironically, since dark matter only really feels gravity, and is not affected by collisions or radiation, we can simulate how it behaves much more easily than normal matter. Huge computer simulations of large regions of the Universe can recreate its initial conditions and predict the distribution of dark matter at various stages throughout the Universe's history. The complicated bit is accurately predicting what the normal matter does, as this involves many other aspects of physics. After all, the formation of stars and galaxies is incredibly complex, and something we still do not understand fully.

The results of these simulations seem to match the observations of the distributions of dark matter relatively well, and to a large extent the normal matter. For example, the distribution of galaxies on the largest observable scales in the Universe – billions of light years – agrees with the simulations. On much smaller scales, such as the scale of a single galaxy like the Milky Way, the details of the physics of normal matter are much more important. For several years, the simulations predicted that there should be many smaller galaxies scattered around our own – more than were actually observed. Part of the problem was that these tiny galaxies are incredibly faint and hard to find, and a relatively large number have now been found. But the observations are leading to changes in our understanding of how dark matter and normal matter behave. This greater understanding of the behaviour has led to a better idea of what the dark matter particles might be, allowing particle physicists to start looking for them in particle accelerators. We are probably many years off definitively identifying dark matter, but we are getting closer all the time.

If we can't detect it or observe it, how can we be sure that dark matter exists and isn't simply something we've invented to make the observed data fit the predictions.

Simon Foster (Steeton, West Yorkshire) and Craig Sohail (London)

To prove the validity of a scientific theory or hypothesis, such as the existence of dark matter, the theory needs to meet all the observations that have been made. But more importantly it needs to make a prediction that can be tested and used to distinguish it from other theories. The initial evidence for dark matter relied upon the gravitational force that stars and galaxies feel. This was found to be much larger than could be accounted for by the matter we could see. A possible solution was that there was a significant amount of matter that does not shine at any wavelength, but there were competing theories. For example, the possibility that gravity is weaker on

large scales than suggested from Einstein's equations of gravity.

In recent decades, there have been additional pieces of information that have led most scientists to lean in favour of dark matter over modified theories of gravity. One of the first was the structure of the early Universe, seen in the Cosmic Microwave Background. In the very early Universe the dark matter and normal matter behaved differently, with the dark matter simply collapsing under gravity while the normal matter also felt the effects of the intense radiation whizzing around. The structures seen in today's Universe can only be explained if the amount of dark matter was around four times the amount of normal matter – a number which is in surprisingly good agreement with that found from the study of stars and galaxies.

We can now map out the distribution of dark matter, which we can't see directly, through its gravitational effects on the normal matter, which we can see. The incredible masses warp the light from galaxies that lie beyond, creating distorted images that allow astronomers to map where most of the mass lies in galaxy clusters. This effect, which is predicted by Einstein's theories of gravity, is called gravitational lensing, and is now being used to map the distribution of dark matter on massive scales across the Universe.

The results are also in good agreement with the predictions, with every galaxy and cluster of galaxies surrounded by an enormous halo of dark matter. A key piece of information came from studying two clusters that are in the process of colliding. The clusters, called the Bullet Clusters have recently (in astronomical terms!) passed through each other, but the various components of the clusters behave very differently. When two clusters pass through each other, the stars and galaxies do not, in general, actually collide, rather they pass through, affected only by their mutual gravitational attractions. This is similar to the behaviour of the halos of dark matter which surround each cluster. In contrast, the gas which is spread throughout the cluster can be considered as a fluid, and the two gas clouds do collide and create massive shockwaves that travel through space.

The results of studying this pair of clusters were incredibly illuminating. They revealed that, as expected, the gas in the clusters had formed large shockwaves. In contrast the galaxies had passed by each other like ships in the night, and are still in the form of two roughly spherical clusters. The prediction was that dark matter should behave in a similar way to the stars and galaxies, and so should lie in the same place. If there is no dark matter, then the main mass of the clusters should lie with the gas, and if there is it should be near the galaxies. When observations of the gravitational lensing effect were made, the majority of the mass of the clusters was found to be located in the same place as all the galaxies – matching the predictions based on the existence of dark matter.

Today the existence of dark matter is accepted as very likely by most astronomers, but considerable scepticism will remain until the particles that make up dark matter are conclusively found and identified.

Do you think the case for dark matter and dark energy is proved? Do they even make sense? Is it not more likely that we have got our sums wrong or incomplete?

Karen Cappleman (Kent) and Robert Ince (Preston, Lancashire)

The cases for dark matter and dark energy are very different, partly because of how sophisticated the two theories are. For dark matter, the current theory states what

the particles might be that make it up, and therefore we can search for those particles in particle accelerators. The evidence for dark matter being made of particles which experience gravity but do not emit, absorb or scatter light is strong, but many people will not be convinced that it is real until it has been seen in the laboratory.

Dark energy is altogether different. The evidence points to there being *something* that is causing the rate of expansion of the Universe to accelerate, but we don't know what that something is. Even what is generally considered to be the most likely candidate for the origin of dark energy, an energy density that is present in the vacuum of space itself, cannot predict the strength of the effect. In fact, the best estimate for the vacuum energy based on theoretical predictions is a factor of a million million million million million higher than the effect we see due to dark energy!

What is important to remember is that dark energy is simply a name for something we don't understand, and is only a decade or so old as a concept. Compare this to Newton's theory of gravity from 1687. It is less than a century since Einstein showed that Newton's theory of gravity was not quite correct, so for 300 years the scientific community had to deal with the fact that something wasn't quite right with their understanding of the Universe. For example, Newton's gravity could not accurately predict the orbit of Mercury (though it was pretty close), whereas Einstein's could.

But even Einstein didn't get everything right! His equations predicted that the Universe should be either expanding or contracting, something which he found to be inconceivable at the time. He added a further term to account for the fact that the Universe was completely static (which he believed it was), and then rued that decision when a decade later Edwin Hubble showed that the Universe is in fact expanding.

Even with this little hiccup, the simultaneous development of Einstein's theory of gravity and the field of quantum mechanics created a fundamental change in physics. It opened up whole new areas of research which are fundamental to the world we live in today. Without quantum mechanics and relativity, we would have no computers, no lasers and no satellite navigation systems, to name but a few. So it is possible that the discovery of what dark energy really is could be the start of a new era in physics.

Even if we discover conclusively that either dark matter or dark energy are not real at all we will know that our understanding of the Universe is wrong on some level, and that in turn will invigorate a period of intense research to find out why.

Will discoveries made by the Large Hadron Collider have any impact on astronomical science?

Ken Askew (Leicestershire)

Astronomy and particle physics are closely related, particularly when considering the very early Universe. The experiments in the Large Hadron Collider (LHC) collide together atomic nuclei and create tremendous energies, comparable to those present in the first fractions of a second after the Big Bang. At such high energies, it is possible to split protons and neutrons into their constituent quarks, making what is known as a 'quark-gluon plasma'. These quarks combine together to make all sorts of other particles, which allows particle physicists to study scales that are otherwise

completely unobservable, even by studying the centres of stars.

Experiments such as these have allowed cosmologists to understand the origin of the matter in the Universe. Such experiments are also investigating the reason why there is more matter than antimatter in the Universe. There should have been equal amounts created in the Big Bang, but most of it was annihilated. There is a subtle difference between matter and antimatter that means that matter has won out, at least in our region of the Universe.

Over the past few decades, particle physicists have shown that there is a whole zoo of fundamental particles, which go by names such as electrons, muons, quarks and neutrinos. There are theories, however, that there is a whole new level of particles, which mirror those we know in some ways but are much more massive. These 'super-symmetric' particles are one of the best candidates for dark matter. One of the properties of these particles is that they do not interact with normal matter, and so we can only see them if they decay into particles that we can actually measure.

The really interesting reactions are very unlikely to take place, and the only way they are observable is by creating hundreds of millions of reactions every second. Most of the reactions have relatively mundane results, but every now and again there is an interesting set of products. With immense computing power, these interesting reactions are picked out and studied in greater detail. It will take time but if these super-symmetric particles exist, the LHC should be able to find them.

Given that we can observe the Cosmic Microwave Background as predicted by Big Bang theory, why haven't neutrino detectors found evidence of a Cosmic Neutrino Background?

Rob Schottland (Sedona, Arizona, USA)

Neutrinos are a type of subatomic particle that we know exists but which we know very little about. This is largely due to the fact that they are so hard to measure, since neutrinos do not interact with matter very well at all. In fact, we don't detect the neutrinos at all, but rather the effect they have on material they pass through. As neutrinos travel through matter, there is a tiny, tiny chance that they will interact with an electron in one of the atoms. This electron will begin moving incredibly quickly – faster than the speed of light through water – and emit a characteristic pattern of light. This pattern of radiation, which is the equivalent of a sonic boom, is named after Pavel Cherenkov, the Russian physicist who characterised it and was awarded the 1958 Nobel Prize for Physics.

Since the chance of neutrinos causing Cherenkov radiation is so small, most detectors use large quantities of material to increase the chances of a neutrino interaction. For example, the Super-Kamiokande experiment in Japan uses a tank, 40 metres wide and filled with 50,000 tons of water. If a neutrino passes through the water and interacts with an electron, some of the 11,000 detectors around the edge of the sphere pick up the flash of Cherenkov radiation.

The number of neutrinos in the Universe is staggeringly high – in a single second somewhere around 300,000,000,000,000 neutrinos pass through your body! Luckily, they have no effect at all – to be sure of stopping a neutrino you would need a slab of lead a light year thick.

Neutrinos come from a number of sources in the Universe, with many of those detected on Earth originating from the Sun and nuclear reactors. Huge numbers are

also emitted by supernovae, which are massive stars exploding at the ends of their lives, and in fact is how the vast majority of the energy of a supernova is released. The flash of light can outshine a galaxy, but the energy released in neutrinos is hundreds of times greater. In 1987, a supernova was observed in the Large Magellanic Cloud, a small galaxy around 160,000 light years away. Just as the flash of light was seen, a brief burst of neutrinos was detected. It was one of the best pieces evidence for what causes a supernova. Although only around 20 neutrinos were detected between all the experiments around at the time, this event led to the start of neutrino astronomy. Since they are so hard to detect, it is difficult to pinpoint the direction they originate from, though experiments are continually getting better.

Neutrinos were also created in the early Universe. They were released around a second after the Big Bang and, in a similar way to the Cosmic Microwave Background, those neutrinos are travelling through space and being detected here on Earth. The standard model of the early Universe predicts that at any given moment there should be a few primordial neutrinos in every cubic centimetre of space, though since they are so hard to detect their existence has not been confirmed. While the Cosmic Microwave Background is a direct probe of the Universe at an age of around 400,000 years, measuring the Cosmic Neutrino Background would allow us to directly study the Universe at an age of less than a second – much closer to the Big Bang itself.

Do neutrinos have mass, and if so could they be dark matter?

Spencer Taylor (Rochdale)

In the standard model of particle physics, it was originally assumed that neutrinos had absolutely no mass, much like photons of light. However, results of experiments conducted with neutrinos generated in nuclear power plants, and with neutrinos originating in the Sun, indicate that they probably *do* have a mass, but that it is very small. This relies on the fact that there are three types of neutrino (called flavours) and that a neutrino can switch between the different flavours. If the theory is correct then they must have a mass, but all the experiments demonstrated was that the masses were very small and that the three flavours had slightly different masses.

The best information on the mass of the neutrino actually comes from cosmology, as measurements on the rate of expansion of the Universe can help constrain the best estimates of the neutrino mass. In 2012, the upper limit was around one-millionth of the mass of an electron, and since an electron is around one two-thousandth the mass of a proton, that's pretty light! The mass is so small that it can't yet be measured accurately, and all we can do is put a maximum limit on it, and even this number is an upper limit on the sum of the masses of all three flavours, so the mass of each one will be lower still.

So we do know that neutrinos have a mass, and therefore will be affected by gravity. Since we can't see them very easily at all (see the previous question), they would seem to fit the bill for being a good candidate for dark matter. The problem is, they're not quite massive enough, even if their mass is right on the upper limit discussed here. So they may well be responsible for *some* of the effects attributed to dark matter, but they can't account for all of it. The search continues – stay tuned!

Could the 'missing mass' in the Universe have been captured by black holes?

KJ Thomas (Manchester)

As soon as it was realised that there was some 'missing mass' in the Universe, people started theorising as to where this mass might be. Black holes were an obvious candidate, as they are relatively massive and don't give out any light. They fell into a category of objects called 'Massive Compact Halo Objects' (MACHOs), which also included neutron stars, brown dwarfs and old, faint white dwarfs.

The first thing to say about black holes is that we've never actually seen one, though we have remarkably good evidence that they exist. Einstein's theory of relativity predicts that when matter reaches a certain density it should collapse to such a dense state that no light can escape. There are two general types of black hole. The first is a supermassive black hole, one of which is thought to lie at the centre of every large galaxy – including our own. These are millions of times the mass of our Sun and their formation is linked to the formation of the galaxies themselves, though it's not totally clear which came first, the galaxy or the black hole – the astronomical equivalent of the chicken and the egg problem. These black holes shouldn't be hard to find as they're surrounded by massive galaxies, and there certainly aren't any lying in the outskirts of our own Galaxy.

The second type is dubbed a stellar-mass black hole. These are thought to be formed when a star several dozen times the mass of the Sun dies at the end of its life. When the nuclear fusion stops in its core, the star can no longer support its huge mass against its own massive gravitational pull. A certain fraction of the material collapses and forms a black hole in the centre, the mass of which will depend on the mass of the original star. It's possible that there are some that are a fraction of the Sun's mass, though most are probably several times that. If there were many massive stars around, then there should be a great deal of these black holes.

The question becomes: how do you see something that is black against the black backdrop of outer space? Einstein comes to the rescue again, thanks to his prediction of the effect that a large mass has on light. The gravitational field created by a massive object causes light to be bent, magnifying and distorting the light coming from behind. We see this relatively often, but it is normally caused by galaxies or entire galaxy clusters. It does also occur with much smaller objects, though the effect is much smaller. If there are black holes in the outer regions of our Galaxy, then they would appear to move against the background of more distant stars and galaxies. If one were to pass between us and a background star then the black hole's gravity would magnify the light of the star and cause a short increase in brightness. The effect is called 'microlensing' and the same phenomenon would be seen if any massive object passed directly in front, perhaps a brown dwarf or even a planet, making this method suitable for searching for all types of MACHOs. The variation in brightness is quite predictable, but the chances of it happening are very rare.

To increase the chances of finding them, teams of astronomers pointed their telescopes continuously at the Large and Small Magellanic Clouds. These two small galaxies lie more than 160,000 light years away, but are close enough that millions of individual stars can be seen. Between us and them is the Galactic Halo, a roughly spherical volume that surrounds our Galaxy and is where the majority of these MACHOs should reside – if they are real. A very small number of these microlensing events were seen, but many fewer than would be expected if black holes and other MACHOs were responsible for the majority of the missing mass attributed to dark matter.

Origin of the Elements

How were the first hydrogen atoms formed during the Big Bang?

John Youngs (London)

A hydrogen atom is the simplest atom possible, consisting simply of an electron orbiting a proton. Heavier elements, such as helium, oxygen and iron, have a nucleus that contains a greater number of protons along with a similar number of neutrons, and also have more electrons around them. Protons and neutrons like to stick together, but can be kept apart if the temperature is above about one billion degrees. Likewise, electrons like to go into orbit around the nuclei of atoms, but can be prevented from doing so at temperatures above a few thousand degrees.

For the first few hundred thousand years after the Big Bang, the temperature was high enough to prevent electrons from becoming attached to nuclei, and the Universe was ionised. So before that point, we only need consider the atomic nuclei – the protons and neutrons. Until about three minutes after the Big Bang, the Universe was too hot to allow protons and neutrons to stick together. Since a proton is the nucleus of a hydrogen atom, it is valid to consider the matter in the very early Universe to have been composed of hydrogen nuclei and lots of free neutrons. Any neutrons that were flying around would have gradually decayed, to form protons (more hydrogen nuclei) and electrons.

As the Universe expanded it also cooled, and around three minutes after the Big Bang the temperature cooled enough to allow protons and neutrons to start sticking together. This process is called nuclear fusion, and is the same process that takes place in the core of the Sun. It only occurs when the temperature is at tens of millions of degrees or higher. The neutrons that hadn't decayed into protons previously became locked into the nuclei of heavier elements. These include helium (two protons and two neutrons), but also variations on hydrogen called deuterium (one proton and one neutron) and tritium (one proton and two neutrons). Deuterium and tritium are very similar to hydrogen in most senses, because they behave the same chemically – the extra neutrons don't have much effect.

This process only continued for around 20 minutes, because after that the temperature became too cool for nuclear fusion to take place. At that point, the matter in the Universe was made of around 75 per cent hydrogen and 25 per cent helium, with very small amounts of deuterium, tritium and lithium (which has three protons and either three or four neutrons). There was not time to make any of the heavier elements such as oxygen, carbon and iron before the temperature dropped below this limit.

After that, the expansion and cooling of the Universe continued. Around 400,000 years after the Big Bang, it cooled enough to allow the electrons to go into orbit around the nuclei and the first proper atoms were formed. The Universe remained in this state, full of neutral hydrogen and helium gas, for hundreds of millions of years. It was around that time that the first stars formed, which ionised the gas around

them and started nuclear fusion in their cores. This fusion continued converting hydrogen into helium and heavier elements, but has barely made a dent in the proportion of hydrogen in the Universe – it still lies at around 75 per cent.

I know that elements are created in stars, and that in supernova explosions the heavier elements are rapidly produced. But how can the huge range of elements become spread so widely through the Universe to give the mix we see on Earth?

Rufus Segar (Worcestershire)

The elements in the Universe are not as widely spread out as it might at first appear. We certainly have a healthy range here on Earth, but we are in a very special location. On the whole, the composition of the Universe is not vastly different from shortly after the Big Bang, after which the matter in the Universe (here we refer just to normal matter, and ignore dark matter) was made of 75 per cent hydrogen, 25 per cent helium and a tiny smattering of lithium. As soon as stars formed, the nuclear fusion in their cores started converting hydrogen into helium and then into other heavier elements. This is where most of the carbon, nitrogen and oxygen come from in the Universe, along with a selection of other elements such as silicon, magnesium, calcium and iron. The even heavier elements, such as lead, gold and uranium, are created when really massive stars die in supernova explosions.

But the important thing to realise is that stars account for less than ten per cent of the matter in the Universe, with the rest being composed of the neutral hydrogen and helium gas that was present after the Big Bang. The main reason for this is that star formation is a relatively inefficient process. About 90 per cent of the material in a dense gas cloud doesn't end up in stars, but is pushed back out into space. The reason for this is the pressure exerted by starlight itself, which pushes most of the very light atoms away.

Stars don't just have an effect on the gas clouds during their formation, and, as they live out the main part of their lives, they exert a stellar wind which blows through space. Hotter, brighter stars have a more intense wind, and it can be strong enough to blow enormous bubbles in space. An example of such a bubble is Barnard's Loop, located in the constellation of Orion, which is around 600 light years across. But these stellar winds are just the start. Towards the end of their lives, stars become bloated to hundreds of times their original size and tend to shed their outer layer. These layers are still primarily composed of hydrogen and helium, but contain trace amounts of heavier elements. These outer layers are puffed off, forming what is called a planetary nebula, which is really just the ejected outer layers of a dying star. In their final moments, massive stars explode in violent supernovae. The explosion is huge and creates massive shockwaves that travel through space, spreading the chemically enriched material into the surrounding regions. When shockwaves meet, they can cause pockets of gas to increase in density and start a new generation of star formation.

This process has repeated itself many, many times. While the Sun is five billion years old, over a third the age of the Universe, more massive stars live much shorter lives. Stars that are 20 times the mass of the Sun, such as Betelgeuse, only live for about ten million years, and more massive ones have shorter lifespans still. In the past 13 billion years of the Universe's existence, there has been plenty of time for hundreds of generations of these stars to have formed and died, chemically enriching

the environment and spreading the products around.

By the time our Sun formed around five billion years ago, the gas clouds in the Milky Way had been chemically enriched to give them small amounts of carbon, oxygen, silicon, calcium, iron and so on. The composition of the Sun is 75 per cent hydrogen, 24 per cent helium and 1 per cent oxygen, with tiny amounts of other elements. These heavier elements might be very rare in stars and the Universe as a whole, but they are more common on planets. For a start, in the cold vacuum of space they tend to react together to form molecules such as water (hydrogen and oxygen) and carbon monoxide (carbon and oxygen). Also present are tiny grains of interstellar dust, composed primarily of carbon, oxygen, silicon and iron.

The grains of dust and the heavier elements are too heavy to be pushed away by the light from a star like the Sun, and end up forming a dusty disc around it. Compared with the interstellar gas clouds, these discs have a far higher abundance of heavier elements, and it is from these discs that planets form. The end result of the whole process is that a planet like the Earth is very chemically diverse. Very roughly, it is made of around 30 per cent iron, 30 per cent oxygen, 15 per cent magnesium, 15 per cent silicon, 2 per cent aluminium and 2 per cent calcium. The remainder is made of a wide range of elements, and less than 0.3 per cent of the Earth's mass is hydrogen.

Remember, however, that stars make up around ten per cent of the matter in the Universe, and planets an even tinier fraction; despite all this local chemical composition, the Universe is still broadly the way it started.

The End of It All

Will the Universe ever end, and what is the best theory for the end of the Universe?

Bruce Goodman (Colchester, Essex), James Partington (Spain) and David Bate (Cheltenham, Gloucestershire)

If the question 'Where did we come from?' is the biggest question, then the question 'Where will it all end?' is arguably the second biggest. The two are inextricably linked, as the past evolution of the Universe gives an indication of its fate. All we can do, however, is extrapolate our theories and make guesses based on the physics we understand.

In around five billion years, the Sun will have died, ending its life as a dim white dwarf star. The Earth will probably still be here, but will be first burned to a crisp when the Sun becomes a red giant, and then frozen solid as the light goes out. More stars will continue to be born, however, and this will probably continue for tens of trillions of years. After that, the Milky Way will have consumed its supply of gas and dust and be composed of white dwarfs, neutron stars and brown dwarfs. None of these give off much light and so the Galaxy will be a much dimmer place.

In the meantime, the Milky Way will have collided with the Andromeda galaxy, forming one much larger galaxy, but even that galaxy will not stay the same for ever. Over aeons of time, the stars will either be flung out into intergalactic space or their orbits will decay and they will fall towards the centre. Many of the stars that fall to the centre will fall into the black hole, swelling its mass to thousands of times what it is currently. The same processes will happen with the galaxies in galaxy clusters; most will be likely flung into intergalactic space, while others will fall towards the centre and form super-massive galaxies.

On larger scales, the fate of the Universe is more uncertain still. Our current model involves the Universe expanding at an ever-increasing rate. As well as pushing the galaxy clusters apart, this expansion will also lower the temperature in the Universe. The relic radiation from the Big Bang, which we currently see as an almost completely uniform temperature of around three degrees above absolute zero, will continue to cool. We see distant galaxies at longer wavelengths as the light from them is stretched by the expansion of the Universe, and this process will continue. In the end, the Universe will almost be completely dark.

That is not the end of the story, however, and if a dim, dark Universe filled with black holes and the remnants of stars sounds bleak it will probably get worse. Stephen Hawking showed that black holes radiate energy, slowly losing mass, and so even these will decay. Even the simplest forms of matter will not be safe, as it is thought that even protons can decay into lighter types of particles. This means that the brown dwarfs, white dwarfs and neutron stars will gradually dissolve, though on timescales of a billion billion billion billion years or more. Since protons decay so very, very slowly, the process is incredibly hard to measure, and the timescale could

be wrong by huge factors, so these numbers are incredibly uncertain.

This bleak future is only one possibility, based on the best guess using the observations of the fraction of the entire Universe that we can see. It could be that our part of the Universe is different to others, in which case the end result might be different. Other parts of the Universe could be much denser, in which case the whole thing could collapse in on itself in a 'Big Crunch' (the opposite of a Big Bang). We simply don't know, and there may never be a way of knowing, but that doesn't stop some cosmologists from trying to work it out. You never know, it might just work and we might eventually find out with more certainty what the fate of the Universe is. In the meantime we'll just have to wait and see – though possibly for a very, very long time!

The Multiverse and Extra Dimensions

Is there a possibility that other Big Bangs have occurred in different locations?

Roy Abrams (Liverpool)

It is possible that Big Bangs have occurred elsewhere, and some scientists would say that it is very likely. Some very speculative theories about the nature of the Big Bang indicate that it should have happened many times – possibly even an infinite number of times. The concept of many universes is called the 'multiverse', and these other expanding universes could be very different from our own, with different physical laws. Perhaps ours is the only one where conditions allow the formation of atoms, let alone stars, planets and life.

Imagine the Universe as being represented by a two-dimensional plane, not unlike a sheet of paper. If there was another parallel two-dimensional universe some distance above or below the first, then there would be no way of anyone in the first sheet of paper being aware of the second sheet. In the real Universe, which we see as three-dimensional, an additional universe would not be 'above' in the traditional sense, but could be some distance away in a fourth spatial dimension. Even if our Universe expanded for ever in three dimensions, it need not ever meet the other universe, just as the two pieces of paper could be stretched as much as possible without ever meeting.

If there are other universes out there, how would the predictions of the end of our Universe change as a result of one or more other universes 'colliding' with our own?

Gil (Peterlee, County Durham)

It depends on the nature of the collision. If the other universe was expanding in the same three dimensions that ours resides in, then they could collide in the 'traditional sense'. It's possible that the effect of a universe in such close proximity would be seen through its effects on the most distant objects we can see, though no such signs have been seen. This would imply that the properties of the Universe as a whole could be different from the properties of the region we can see, which might affect the final fate of the Universe.

The additional universes would be separated from our own in a fourth spatial dimension, which is rather hard to imagine. It is the equivalent of two pieces of paper lying parallel, but separated by a small distance. In his theories of higher-dimensional spaces, Stephen Hawking refers to the three-dimensional universes as 'branes' (I believe derived from the word membrane). One theory is that it was collisions between these branes that caused the Big Bang, though there is no way of proving or disproving the theory as yet.

In the multiverse interpretation of quantum cosmology, in how many universes is Miley Cyrus President of the USA?

Maude Agombar (Salisbury, Wiltshire)

One possible interpretation of the Universe is that we live in one among many. In fact, it is possible that there is an infinite number of universes. In an infinite number of universes, every possible combination would occur somewhere, at some time. In some, for example, the entire works of Shakespeare would have been written by monkeys typing random letters on typewriters. In others, Miley Cyrus would indeed have been President of the USA. How likely it is would affect how many times it would occur, but it would still occur an infinite number of times – even a small fraction of infinity is infinity! Now isn't that a scary thought?

Do you think there will ever be another scientific explanation for the origin of the Universe other than the Big Bang?

Andrew Hindmarch (Surrey)

My [CN] feeling is that the Big Bang theory is based on solid scientific evidence and that it won't be disproved. However, other aspects of our cosmological model are on much less firm ground. Dark matter, for example, has yet to actually be identified (though that's a bold thing to write in a book which will be printed and published during a period when active searches seem to be getting closer). Without an observation to prove its existence, it is hard to consider the theory to be proven, though certainly there is far more evidence for dark matter than other competing theories. Dark energy is particularly susceptible to becoming a victim of scientific progress. I base this assessment largely on the fact that all we can say is that we think there is something which is having an effect, but we don't know what that thing is.

It is important that the scientific community doesn't back itself into a corner and close its eyes to alternatives. Some of the greatest delays to scientific progress in the last few hundred years have been due to the refusal of people to accept new ideas. Just as in the world of commerce, there are many benefits to be gained from competition. Scientists who interpret results in different ways and therefore support opposing theories will often support new experiments. The crucial thing that must happen is that personal feelings should be removed. Believing that something is true simply because you'd prefer it that way, or because that would make things easier, is not an appropriate way to conduct scientific research.

Other Worlds

Other Planets

Will we ever be able to build a telescope large enough to directly observe extra-solar planets?

David Cockayne (Birmingham)

THIS ONE IS easy to answer – we already have! In 2008, teams using the Gemini and Keck telescopes on Hawaii announced that they had directly observed three planets orbiting a star 128 light years away in the constellation of Pegasus. These telescopes are amongst the largest optical telescopes on Earth, with the primary mirrors of the Keck telescope being 10 metres across. Nevertheless, to see such detail the effects of the atmosphere have to be taken into account, and it was only with the latest techniques that these observations were possible.

Not long after these images were released, astronomers digging through data from the Hubble Space Telescope discovered a planet orbiting the star Fomalhaut in Pisces. This planet is not dissimilar to Jupiter but orbits much further from its parent star, embedded in a dusty disc.

While we have now directly imaged these planets, we have not been able to see any detail on them. That will require much larger telescopes, which have a much greater resolution. Telescopes are being designed with aperture diameters in the range 20–40 metres. These extremely large telescopes will still need to combat the effects of the atmosphere, but in principle will be able to see much more detail. It will be some time before we can see oceans and landmasses on other planets!

How do scientists find out the gravity of a planet?

Marilena (Cyprus)

The gravity on the surface of a planet depends on its mass, and also its size. Larger planets tend to be more massive, and therefore tend to have a larger gravitational pull on their surface. Jupiter, for example, has a mass around three hundred times that of the Earth but, because it is so much larger (about ten times the diameter), its surface gravity is only two and a half times that on Earth. In the Solar System we know the masses of the planets very well, simply by studying the way they interact with other astronomical bodies such as their moons.

In other solar systems, the masses of planets are harder to determine. Many of these extra-solar planets are discovered by examining the effect they have on the star. Technically a planet doesn't orbit a star, but rather both star and planet orbit the centre of mass of the system, called a 'barycentre'. Since a star is so much more massive than a planet, it is affected much less, but it does tend to wobble a small amount. Very careful observations can detect this slight wobble, which tells

astronomers the mass of both the star and the planet. The situation is complicated slightly because these other solar systems are normally tilted at an unknown angle with respect to Earth, and that tilt affects the apparent size of the wobble.

The gravity on the surface of a planet also depends on its size, which the above method can't tell us. That can normally only be worked out if the planet happens to pass directly between us and the star, which is only possible if the planet's orbit lines up almost perfectly with our view from Earth. At these great distances we only see the dip in light as the planet blocks a small amount of the star's light, but the amount of starlight blocked tells us just how big the planet is. If we know that *and* we've detected how much it makes the star wobble, then we can work out the surface gravity of a planet. For example, a planet called CoRoT-3b, which orbits a star 2,000 light years away in the constellation of Aquila, would have surface gravity more than 20 times that on Jupiter. It's unlikely we'll ever want to go to that particular planet, though, as it orbits its star at a tiny fraction of the Earth's distance from the Sun, whipping around its orbit in a little over four days.

Kepler is surveying only a tiny slice of the sky, and to date has recorded well over 1,000 potential planets. What area of the sky is _Kepler_ currently surveying?

Richard Coville (Canada)

The *Kepler* mission, launched in 2009, is surveying a small region of the sky in the constellation of Cygnus the Swan. This region was chosen because it is very rich in stars, but will not be blocked by the Sun at any point. *Kepler*'s field of view is around ten degrees across – about the size of a fist at arm's length – but that is only one four hundredth the total area of the sky. Nevertheless, there are still a huge number of stars visible, and *Kepler* monitors around 150,000 of them. Most of the stars chosen are similar to the Sun, but not all are known to have planets around them.

Kepler detects the tiny dip in brightness as a planet passes in front of its parent star. A dip that looks convincing is labelled as a candidate planet, and the number of these candidates is currently in the thousands and rising rapidly. To detect whether the planet is really there, three equally spaced dips must be observed. For a planet like the Earth this could take three years of searching, so the confirmation that the planets are real can take some time.

As the results from the _Kepler_ probe become more and more exciting, how far away are we from finding a second Earth-like planet?

Martin Hickes (Leeds)

The planets found so far by a range of telescopes and experiments cover a wide range of masses, sizes and orbits. This is largely due to the methods used to find them, which tend to be better at picking up planets that are larger, more massive, and orbit closer to their star. The goal of *Kepler* is to find a planet like the Earth, i.e. one that has a similar size, a similar mass, and orbits at a similar location relative to its parent star. To do this, *Kepler*'s detectors are incredibly sensitive, so that they can see the smallest dip in brightness as a planet passes in front of its star.

We are continually getting closer to an Earth-like planet, and the results come in incredibly rapidly. At the time of writing, planets have been found in their stars'

habitable zones, i.e where liquid water could exist on the surfaces of rocky planets, but none of these are known to be rocky. *Kepler* has also found planets that are roughly the same size as the Earth but these orbit much closer to their parent star.

How likely is it that the exoplanets currently being detected have moons, and do you think that a large moon orbiting a planet such as the Earth is necessary for life to evolve?

Bryan Upfield (London)

In our Solar System almost all the planets have moons, and the giant planets have dozens of them, so it is very unlikely that planets in other solar systems do not also have moons. But the Earth, with its relatively large Moon, is unique, and most moons are much smaller relative to their parent planet.

It is thought that our Moon was formed when a giant body roughly the size of Mars crashed into the Earth around 4 billion years ago, causing a large amount of material to be thrown off and over time to form the Moon. What is very hard to work out is how likely such a collision is to happen. Since we have yet to see a moon outside our own Solar System we have only the one example and so a statistical analysis is difficult. Simulations of the conditions that were thought to exist in the early Solar System indicate that such collisions are not horrendously unlikely, but they are not necessarily common. A recent estimate was that somewhere between one in four and one in 45 planets the size of the Earth could have a moon like ours, but there are many assumptions made in these studies.

The effect of the Moon on the evolution of life is very hard to evaluate. We know that it has an effect on the Earth, but not whether that has affected life in any significant way. For example, the presence of a large moon stabilises a planet's axis; the Earth's axis is tilted at around 23 degrees relative to its orbit around the Sun, but this axial tilt does not vary much. In contrast the planet Mars, which has two tiny moons that are just 12 and 20 kilometres in diameter, has experienced huge tilts in its axis over the history of the Solar System.

If the early Earth had experienced such large shifts, would life have been affected? It's hard to say, though the weather on Earth would have experienced large changes. Primitive life tends to be fairly tolerant of temperature changes, and more advanced life might have been able to adapt to the conditions providing they were varying slowly enough.

The other major effect of the Moon is the tides it causes on Earth. The Moon formed slightly closer to the Earth than it is currently, and so the tides would have been higher. I have heard it said that the tides may have helped life make the move from the oceans, where it first formed, onto land. The tides would have meant that the marine creatures could spend increasingly longer times out of the water by moving up the shoreline, giving them a gentle introduction to the drier environment. This is conceivable, but the fossil record is not complete enough at these distant times. Whether a lack of tides would have delayed, or prevented, life's movement onto land is not clear.

Life Elsewhere

Has anyone yet produced an accepted formula that gives a probability of life elsewhere in our Solar System, or elsewhere in the Universe?

Mark Bullard (London)

The most widely cited equation, or formula, designed for this purpose was proposed by astronomer Frank Drake in the 1960s. The equation, as Drake has commented, is meant to be used to explore the factors involved in determining the possibility of life elsewhere, rather than to give a definitive answer. In its original form, Drake's equation was used to give an estimate of the number of civilisations that we could communicate with, symbolised by the letter N, and is often written as:

$$N = R \times F_P \times N_E \times F_L \times F_I \times F_C \times L$$

The number is calculated by multiplying together a range of numbers and probabilities. The first, R, is the rate of formation of stars that are suitable for life to exist around. In our Galaxy, the Milky Way, there is roughly one star being born per year, and we believe that most stars are probably capable of harbouring life in principle. So we could guess that R is equal to 1.

The second symbol, F_P, is the fraction of those stars that have planets around them, and we can also estimate this. We think that most stars form in a similar way, from a large cloud of gas and dust. Once the star has formed, the leftover material forms a disc around it, and that disc forms planets. We have seen numerous examples of stars with these dusty discs, and lots of stars with planets around them, including binary stars. Let's be optimistic and say that every star can have planets around it. So F_P is also equal to 1.

The symbol N_E is for the number of Earth-like planets in each of these solar systems, which could be interpreted to mean the number of planets in the habitable zone – the zone around the star in which the temperature allows liquid water to exist. This we don't know yet, but it is something that the *Kepler* mission is trying to find out. We certainly know of lots of systems that have massive gas giant planets very close in to their stars. These planets probably formed further out and then moved inwards, which could prevent Earth-like planets from forming. Unfortunately, these massive, close-in planets are much easier to detect than Earth-like ones, and so dominate our current lists of planets. We do, however, know that there are rocky planets out there, and that some are at reasonable distances from their stars – in fact some are very close to being in a habitable zone. This has to be a guess, but let's go with half of all planetary systems containing planets in the habitable zone. So N_E is equal to 0.5, but that is only a guess – we should have a better idea of that number in a few years when *Kepler* has returned its results.

The fourth symbol is F_L, and is the fraction of planets in the habitable zone on

which life forms. This is where the guesses start to become really controversial. Since life on Earth seems to exist in a very wide range of environments, it is tempting to suspect that it can arise anywhere. But the one thing life is very good at is adapting, and it could be that the earliest life forms arose in the perfectly idyllic conditions of early Earth (warm and wet), and simply adapted to exist in these harsh conditions over hundreds of millions of years. If that's the case, then the chance of life arising might be a billion to one or less! It could also be that we are the result of a complete fluke, and that the chances of life occurring are absolutely minuscule, though that's a little depressing. There are many different ideas about this and there has been no firm evidence either way. This number is only meant to represent the formation of life in its most basic form, so for the moment I'll be an optimist and assume that life will form anywhere it can, so F_L is equal to 1.

If we stopped here and multiplied together all the numbers that we've calculated so far, then we would have the rate at which new life springs into being in our Galaxy. We would have:

$$N = R \times F_P \times N_E \times F_L$$

Using the numbers we've estimated, there would be life springing up on a new planet every two years. The Milky Way has been around for quite a long time – at least around 10 billion years – and so that would mean that life would have evolved billions of times. But remember that we guessed at a few of the numbers involved. It might turn out that Earth-like planets are not as common as we guessed here, or that life does not form as readily as we've assumed, both of which could reduce that number hugely. For example, if only one in ten stars had an Earth-like planet, and the chance of life arising on it was one in ten billion, then the number would drop from billions to around 1. If that's the case, then the Earth could be the only planet harbouring life in the entire Milky Way.

The remaining terms in Drake's Equation refer to how life evolves. F_I is the fraction those life-harbouring planets on which life evolves to become intelligent. It's obviously happened once here, but could that just have been luck? If we weren't around would chimpanzees or dolphins have evolved to become the dominant species on the planet? Who knows?

The term F_C is the fraction of those civilisations that develop technology capable of transmitting into outer space. Again, who is to say whether the development of electricity and radio communications was inevitable?

The last term is the length of time that the civilisation continues to transmit signals. The transmissions could stop for a number of reasons. It could be that the civilisation is destroyed by a natural disaster, or that it destroys itself in a nuclear war. Or perhaps they just *decide* to stop transmitting. For example, the signals escaping from Earth are weakening as our technology becomes more efficient and less energy is radiated out into space.

We can make educated guesses at most of these numbers, but that is it. In the 1960s only the first one – the rate of star formation – was known, while now we have a slightly better idea about the formation of planets. But even so, the estimates of the number of life forms that could exist in our Galaxy range from one (just us) to billions, simply by changing the assumptions made.

Why is life important to the Universe?

Kevin Sommerville (New York)

There are two ways of addressing this question. One could ask, 'Does the Universe care whether there is life in it?' Of course, as far as we're aware the Universe can't think for itself, and so the answer becomes philosophical at best. Certainly we as life forms have no physical effect on anything beyond our own planet, aside from a few tiny space probes travelling through space, and even the most distant ones haven't got much further than the edge of the Solar System.

On the other hand, we could ask 'Is it important to us whether life exists?' and this is almost a sociological question. From a personal and scientific point of view, many of us are greatly interested in whether there is life elsewhere, and it would certainly help to put us in our place. Does the existence of life elsewhere make us less special as a species, and what if that civilisation is as intelligent as us? This might have implications for those with religious or spiritual beliefs, but I [CN] am far from qualified to discuss that here.

In science fiction, the discovery of life elsewhere is often depicted as ushering in a new era of worldwide peace, ending all wars, though that is probably a somewhat utopian view. In some other works, worldwide unity is frequently due to the threat of domination or extermination from a hostile alien race.

Discussions of the discovery of extraterrestrial life often end up turning into discussion of the implications, and so my conclusion would probably be that the existence of life *is* important to us, but not necessarily the Universe itself.

Is it possible that life such as that on Earth formed millions or billions of years ago elsewhere in the Universe?

Gary Partington (Spain)

This is certainly possible, though it's hard to say how likely it is. The Earth formed around four and a half billion years ago, shortly after the Sun. In its infancy, the planet was a molten ball of rock, constantly being pelted by the debris that was still present in the early Solar System. Volcanism blighted the surface, spewing noxious gases into the atmosphere. It was around half a billion years before conditions were suitable for life, which took hold several billion years ago. Since those early days, life has evolved considerably, with entire classes of species all but dying out (dinosaurs) and others springing up to fill the void (primates). It is often claimed that life sprang up as soon as the conditions allowed, and through evolution and natural selection evolved rapidly into much more advanced species. However, who is to say that there weren't many 'false starts' in the first few billion years of the Earth's history that were swiftly obliterated by an asteroid impact? If these were primitive enough they would have left no fossil record.

At around five billion years old, the Sun is far from the oldest star in the Universe, and there are billions of stars like the Sun which have formed over the 13-billion year history of the cosmos. The very early Universe was a much more primordial place, with far lower concentrations of heavy elements such as carbon, oxygen, silicon, iron and so on. Planets are primarily made from these heavy elements, and life as we know it would not be able to exist without some of them. Life (at least in forms we are familiar with) probably wouldn't have been possible for the first period of the Universe's existence simply due to the relatively limited chemistry possible with the ingredients present. The chemical evolution of the

Universe was much more rapid in its early days, and so it is likely that within a few billion years the chemical composition would have been suitable for life. This means that there would be stars that formed billions of years before the Sun that are orbited by Earth-like planets. Any life that formed here would in principle have had a head start of billions of years over that on the Earth.

Whether that life is still around now is a different issue. The Sun will very gradually increase in brightness over the next few billion years and, while the associated temperature increase on the Earth will be tiny over human lifetimes, after a billion years or so the oceans will probably boil off. While microbial life may be able to survive, this will probably make most of the animal kingdom extinct. A few billion years after that and the Earth will be burnt to a cinder as the Sun becomes a red giant, and may even be destroyed in the outer layers of the massive star. A few hundred million years after that and the Sun will wither into a faint white dwarf star, making the entire Solar System uninhabitable by any forms of life that rely on sunlight. The same is probably true in other solar systems and, without some form of interstellar travel, any other life will probably die out. Of course, in a billion years technology can advance significantly, and so we might discover that these ancient civilisations are already living out amongst the stars.

I read once that the odds of inorganic chemistry creating life were more than twice the number of all the stars in the Universe. If that's correct, the odds have been beaten once – could they really be beaten twice?

Karen Cappleman (Kent)

All life relies on complex molecules that make up our proteins and DNA, which are very sensitive to the arrangement of the atoms that make them up. A strand of human DNA is primarily made of hydrogen, oxygen, carbon, nitrogen and phosphorus, but there many billions of molecules. Changing the order of the molecules changes the DNA, and most combinations would not be suitable for life to exist. The chances of such a specific arrangement of atoms and molecules occurring naturally are absolutely tiny, and even taking into account the vast amount of time that life has had to evolve the chances are still very small. So small, that the chances of life arising even once in the entire visible Universe are vanishingly small. We know it has arisen once (us!), but these assumptions would imply that the odds of it having arisen twice are tiny.

Perhaps there is some sort of driving force that makes the life-supporting combinations more stable, or more likely. An intriguing prospect, but one that would involve aspects of chemistry that we are not yet aware of. Or maybe there was an initial form of life that is much simpler but which we have not yet discovered.

But we also know that the assumptions above are not entirely accurate. We are continually finding more and more complex chemicals out in the depths of space. We have even seen amino acids – the building blocks of proteins – in meteorites that have fallen to Earth. This means that life didn't have to start from scratch but had some basic building blocks, though the odds are still small. Biologists are trying to understand the way in which life is formed, though efforts to create life in the laboratory have so far been fruitless.

What are the chances of life on the newly discovered exoplanet Gliese 581g?

Karl (Stoke on Trent)

The planet Gliese 581g is a very controversial planet. Its parent star, Gliese 581, is known to have four planets around it, called Gliese 581b, c, d and e (in the standard notation, Gliese 581a is the star itself). The discovery of two further planets (Gliese 581f and g) was announced in 2010 by a group using the Keck telescope, but the team using the HARPS instrument on the European Southern Observatory's 3.6m telescope could not find it in their data. The disagreement is because the evidence for these two additional planets is rather weak, and could be due to contamination in the data caused by the other planets, particularly Gliese 581d.

The confirmation, or otherwise, of the planet will require more observations, and it is likely that the debate will soon be over one way or the other. In the meantime, however, we are free to speculate. If it is really there, then Gliese 581g is a planet a few times the mass of the Earth with an orbital period of around 36 days. This places it rather close to its parent star, but since the star is a dim red dwarf, the planet would still be in the 'Goldilocks zone', a region around the star that is the right temperature for liquid water to exist.

Whether there is life on the planet is much harder to say. With such a cool, red sun it would almost certainly be very different to anything we are familiar with. Knowing this will require much more detailed observations of the planet to establish the chemical composition of its atmosphere – if it has one.

Out of the number of massive gas giants found outside our own Solar System, are we looking at their moons for signs of potential life?

Paul Foster (London)

With our current technology the discovery of moons of planets in other solar systems is beyond us, as they are far too small to be detected by the methods we normally use to find the planets. However, evidence from our own Solar System suggests that moons of giant planets are very common, so we are pretty sure they must exist elsewhere.

A large moon such as ours can have a small affect on its planet which might be measurable. As the moon orbits it pulls on the planet slightly, causing it to wobble. The wobble of the planet will change the precise timing of its motion around its star, and this might be detectable by experiments such as *Kepler*.

Calling All Life Forms…

We've sent signals from Earth now for over 50 years. Would other civilisations be able to detect these signals if they were on the receiving end?

Derrick A Edwards (Leicester)

We have been leaking radio signals into space for around 60 years, and those first radio waves have travelled 60 light years. However, as the signals travel further, they become more spread out and harder to detect. Most of the signals are also restricted to a very narrow range of radio frequencies, which distinguishes them from most natural astronomical signals.

When we look for signals from alien civilisations, we look for similar types of transmissions, simply because that's what *we* are emitting – but who is to say that alien civilisations use the same technology as us? Perhaps they communicate using X-rays, and have been constantly beaming X-rays out into space. If they have the same idea as us, they might be looking for X-ray transmissions from planets, which we have not been transmitting in large amounts at all.

Do we know if any of the star systems in range of radio signals emanating from Earth have any signs of a planet in the 'Goldilocks zone'?

Barry Holland (St Helens)

Let's assume that the Earth has been radiating radio waves for 60 years. That includes not only the odd deliberate signal, but also the 'leakage' from terrestrial television and radio transmissions. The earliest radio waves, travelling at the speed of light, have reached 60 light years. Within that distance, we know of around a hundred planets. The vast majority of these are gas giants and most orbit incredibly close to their parent star, though a few orbit further out.

The 'Goldilocks zone' is normally defined as the region around the star where liquid water can exist. For smaller, dimmer stars this is closer in than for the larger, brighter ones. Whether liquid water is present also depends on the planet's atmosphere, which generally increases the surface temperature slightly.

One system that is notable is located around the star 55 Cancri. There are five planets that we know of. The star itself is slightly smaller than the Sun, and so the nominal habitable zone would lie a little further in. Of the five known planets, three orbit much too close to their star, while a fourth orbits too far out. This is a great shame from the point of view of the habitable zone, as one of the inner planets is what is called a 'super Earth', being just over eight times the mass of Earth and around twice the diameter. Sadly this planet, called 55 Cancri e, orbits at a distance of just 2 million km, whipping round in less than 18 hours, and so would be baked to a cinder. There is, however, a larger planet orbiting at roughly the same distance as Venus is from the Sun. With a slightly cooler star, the planet could lie close to the

Goldilocks zone, but the planet is a gas giant somewhere between Neptune and Saturn in terms of mass. If it has any large moons with thick enough atmospheres, then perhaps those are habitable. Unfortunately, we are some way from detecting the presence of moons of extra-solar planets, and so further speculation will have to wait.

A second intriguing example is the planet orbiting the star HD85512, which is around 35 light years away. The star is somewhat cooler than the Sun, but the planet orbits closer in, just inside where Mercury's orbit would be. The planet is a few times the mass of the Earth, and so could potentially be rocky. The temperature on the planet's surface would depend on the amount of cloud cover, but a rough guess can be made. Using a set of assumptions, such as that the atmosphere will not be too dissimilar from our own in terms of composition, it can be calculated that the surface temperature could be suitable for the existence of liquid water. These are only rough calculations, however, and we can only be sure if we actually study the light from the atmosphere of this planet directly.

The field is moving incredibly quickly, and it is entirely possible that by the time you read this an Earth-like planet will have been found in the Goldilocks zone of a nearby star. In the October 2011 edition of *The Sky at Night* we asked Dr Giovanna Tinetti to have a guess at how long this would take, and she put her money on finding an Earth-like planet within a year!

Is there any scientific effort to address the question 'Should we answer the call if ET rings?'

Martin O'Flaherty (Liverpool)

Discussions about this issue often centre on the reason for the communication in the first place. Perhaps ET would like to share knowledge and expand everyone's understanding of the Universe, in which case a frank and honest conversation would be beneficial to both parties. But there is the possibility that an alien race might be looking for targets for conquest, whether they want to mine the Earth for its resources or simply pack humans up into their lunchboxes. In this case, of course, we probably shouldn't answer, though by the time we realise that it might be too late. If the communication looks to be specifically targeted at Earth, then it's likely that they've detected our presence – they might even be on their way already!

Many people have voiced the opinion that we shouldn't communicate with aliens because of the risk of them coming to destroy us. However, one would like to think that if they've managed to achieve interstellar communication and travel then they would have moved beyond destruction and war. But what if they are far more technologically advanced than us? We might look to them as sheep and cows do to us, in which case would they start clothing themselves in human skin and eating us with herbs and spices?

If we do receive communication from elsewhere, then there is a much more immediate problem to be overcome – who should speak on our behalf? Would we want the USA to lead the conversation, as happens in many science fiction stories? There are discussions at the international level, such as at the United Nations, of what to do in this situation – both in terms of whether to respond and what we should say. Such decisions can seem laughable at times, based in the realm of science fiction, but if that communication from ET does arrive it will probably be too late. In the meantime, the consensus tends to be that while we can't keep our presence a secret, we probably shouldn't advertise it too widely until we've made up our mind

what to do if someone answers.

Would it be sensible and worthwhile to use the Low Frequency Array (LOFAR) for SETI research?

Alan Tough (Elgin, Moray)

LOFAR, or the Low Frequency Array, is an enormous radio telescope being built that stretches across Europe, including a station in Chilbolton, Hampshire. The array is not, however, comprised of radio telescopes that we are familiar with, but rather a network of radio antennae. These work in a similar way to television and radio aerials, picking up signals from a large area of the sky simultaneously. The power of LOFAR is the ability to combine the signals from huge numbers of antennae simultaneously, allowing astronomers to look at any particular location in great detail. Since the combination of signals is performed during the computer analysis, it is in principle possible for LOFAR to look in multiple directions simultaneously.

This would seem to make it ideal for SETI (the Search for Extra-Terrestrial Intelligence), but there are many demands on the telescope for other purposes. There is, of course, nothing to stop people taking the data from LOFAR and sifting through them for artificial signals.

Closer to Home

Is it likely that any form of life will be discovered elsewhere in the Solar System?

Wendy Lewis (Maidstone)

If we discover life elsewhere in the Solar System, it is likely to be very simple. But there are hotspots where we think it might be possible for microbes to exist. The first place people looked was Mars, though it seems unlikely that any life exists there now unless it lies deep beneath the surface. Based on this, most experiments have looked on Mars for evidence of past life rather than current life. We know that Mars was a much warmer, wetter world hundreds of millions of years ago, thanks in part to the thick atmosphere that it has since lost. We have found clays deposited on Mars that must have been formed in what would best be described as a tropical environment – though it doesn't look like there were any rainforests on early Mars.

In the 1970s and 1980s the *Voyager* spacecraft flew past the giant planets Jupiter and Saturn. These planets are huge gas giants, made almost entirely of thick gaseous atmospheres that we don't believe are suitable for life. But what interested the astrobiologists was not the planets themselves but some of their moons. Jupiter's moon Europa is an ice-covered world, but a dense network of ridges and crevasses indicates that the icy surface is floating on a lake of liquid water. The water is kept warm by heating due to the intense tidal forces of Jupiter. If the sub-surface ocean is in contact with a rocky interior, then it's possible that life exists in the dark depths. The life would not be something we are familiar with, as it would need to get its energy from somewhere other than the Sun. We know of microbes on Earth that rely on geothermal energy from the rocks, or on the heat generated by 'black smokers' on the ocean floor, though all these life forms probably evolved from microbes on the surface. Missions have been proposed to melt or drill through the European ice, which is probably around a hundred kilometres thick over most of the surface, though realistically they are probably decades away.

A similar phenomenon was seen in the 2000s by the *Cassini* satellite orbiting Saturn. One of Saturn's tiny moons, Enceladus, has geysers of salty water erupting from fissures near its south pole. The observations indicate that Enceladus has a sub-surface ocean similar to Europa's, although we know that it is a salty ocean and therefore in contact with a rocky ocean floor. Whether this ocean and the 'fountains of Enceladus' are permanent features is unknown, as they could be present for relatively short periods of time.

One of the most promising places we could look for life is Saturn's largest moon Titan. After Mars, this is arguably the most Earth-like place in the Solar System, though it has some crucial differences. It is large enough to hold on to a thick hazy atmosphere, which the *Huygens* probe descended through in 2004–2005. We see clouds, lakes and rivers on the surface, and we've even seen the effects of seasonal rains filling up lakes and then emptying along rivers. But Titan, at a billion miles

from the Sun, is far too cold for liquid water to exist, let alone clouds made of water vapour. Instead, the liquid that shows a cycle of evaporation and precipitation is methane and ethane. These are hydrocarbons – combinations of hydrogen and carbon – though it is possible that life could exist in these conditions.

Where should we concentrate our future efforts in terms of finding life in the Solar System?

Paul Foster (Clapham, London)

In terms of searching for life, I would say the most interesting of the moons is Europa. If there is life in the sub-surface ocean then we would know that it must have evolved in very different conditions to those on Earth, which would make life in other solar systems much more likely. Of course, Mars is considerably closer and therefore easier (and cheaper) to travel to. The tests for life are very delicate, and it may well be that we won't know for sure whether there is life on Mars until a manned mission has visited and dug down through the soil.

Although spacecraft are built under very clean laboratory conditions, how sure are we that we are not contaminating the atmospheres and surfaces of other bodies with Earth matter, especially when we leave detritus behind?

Shirley Morgan (Maidenhead)

There are incredibly tight regulations about the contamination of alien worlds with Earth-based material. The severity of the rules depends on the nature of the particular body in question, largely whether it may have life on it. For example, the Moon and Mercury are completely devoid of life, and therefore the regulations are less strict than those for missions to Mars or the outer planets, where simple life forms may be present. Spacecraft are always built in incredibly clean laboratories, largely because the presence of dust or other contaminants can cause problems for the spacecraft itself, let alone any potential alien microbes.

There is one further preventative course of action that is taken, and that is to destroy the spacecraft before it can contaminate another world. While spacecraft would not be intentionally put on a collision course with a potentially life-bearing planet or moon, if left to their own devices they could eventually get caught by a moon's gravitational pull and crash. At the end of its mission, in 2017, the *Cassini* probe will be deliberately flown into Saturn's atmosphere. As well as providing our only in-situ test of the cloud layers, this will also ensure that the spacecraft can't possibly crash down onto the surface of Titan, Enceladus, or any of the planet's many other moons.

Should we not look close-up at comets for signs of an alien signature?

Sandy (Scotland)

There is a theory that life originally evolved on comets, and was delivered to Earth in an impact. It is generally believed that a reasonable fraction of the Earth's water – possibly all of it – was delivered to Earth by comets. We have also detected the presence of amino acids – complex molecules that are the building blocks of proteins

and DNA – in meteorites that have fallen to Earth, but there has not been any sign of life itself.

Of course, that's not to say for sure that it couldn't exist. Comets warm up considerably if they approach the Sun, though they fall into a deep freeze as they move further out away from the Sun. There is also no liquid water on the surface of comets, only solid ice. As sunlight warms the surface the ice sublimates, turning straight into a vapour, and is ejected from the comet. If life has evolved there it would have to be able to exist deep in the icy interior, hibernating during the comet's long passage through the outer Solar System.

The possibility of life on comets is largely not believed, and I [PM] find it rather unlikely. That is not to say that we should not look for it, however. The best way of doing this would be to visit a comet and make measurements on its surface, or to bring back samples to Earth. We have samples from a comet's tail thanks to the *Stardust* probe, but not from the surface of one. I remain sceptical, but am always willing to be proved wrong!

Some of the recently discovered extra-solar planets have startlingly short orbital periods. How can we be sure that we are not observing partially constructed or segmented Dyson spheres?

Steven Ford (Haydon Bridge)

This is a very intriguing question. A Dyson sphere is a theoretical concept that originated with the American scientist Freeman Dyson. He theorised that a sufficiently advanced civilisation could construct a sphere that completely surrounded their star. The material would have to be mined from planets, moons and asteroids, requiring technology way beyond our wildest dreams at present. The advantage of such a sphere would be that the interior surface, all of which would in principle be habitable, would be enormous, and that it would be possible to utilise almost all the energy from the star itself. A variation on the theme is a 'ring world', where a ring is constructed rather than a full sphere.

Of course, such structures are currently firmly in the realm of science fiction, with absolutely no observational proof. There are several reasons why the observed planets could not be fragments of a sphere. Firstly, most of the measurements are made by detecting the wobble of the star due to the gravitational pull of the planet. If the planet were replaced by a sphere of material, then the gravitational pull of opposing segments would cancel out, resulting in a much smaller wobble. Secondly, we are now able to study the atmospheres of some of these planets, and detect the presence of a range of molecules.

Of course the final reason for not believing them to be spheres should be what is known as Occam's Razor. Is it more likely that a planet exists close to a star, or that an advanced civilisation has built an enormous sphere in just the right way to make it look like a planet passing in front of the star? I'm afraid that, while it can be very appealing to think of such weird and wonderful concepts, I can't see it being possible that we are observing them.

Manned Space Exploration

The Story So Far

In April 2011, we celebrated 50 years of manned space exploration. What do you see as its greatest achievement during that time and what would you hope that the next 50 years will bring?

David Nixon (Huddersfield), Carol Owen (Chorley, Lancashire)

WHAT IS THE greatest achievement of the first 50 years of space travel? I [PM] think I have got to say proving that 'it can be done'. Before Yuri Gagarin's flight in 1961, there were so many famous astronomers, including Astronomers Royal, who ridiculed the entire idea. They were shown to be entirely wrong, and to show that people can live and work in space is the best achievement of the first half-century.

What can we look forward to in the next 50 years? If we work together, there is so much we can do. It depends in my view upon two things – politics and finance. For space travel must be international, and this depends on the quality of world leaders. (Looking round the present collection of world leaders inspires me with no confidence at all, but I hope that I'm wrong.)

If all goes well, we'll have more manned missions to space and I would hope a base on the Moon's surface. So far as our travels are concerned, I can't see us getting any further than that, because travelling to Mars involves spending weeks in space in full exposure to the Sun's radiation. Until we overcome the radiation problem, Mars is out of reach. I'm sure we will do it, but whether we do it in the next fifty years remains doubtful – we must hope for the best.

Which astronaut has flown the furthest in space over his career?

Kevin Taylor (Gloucester)

As far as we can tell, the current record is held by the Russian Cosmonaut Sergei Krikalev, who has so far notched up 803 days, 9 hours and 39 minutes in space. He took his first spaceflight in 1988 to the Russian space station *Mir*. His second flight, in 1991, was of note as it lasted more than ten months. The long duration was simply due to a problem with getting a replacement flight engineer up to orbit, requiring Sergei to do a double shift in space, but in the meantime the USSR collapsed. He is therefore sometimes referred to as the last citizen of the USSR.

But *Mir* wasn't Krikalev's only home from home. In the 1990s and 2000s he flew on the Space Shuttle and served on the International Space Station. But Sergei Krikalev will almost certainly not hold the record for much longer. Following his lead is another cosmonaut, Kaleri Yurievich, who has so far spent just over 770 days in space. With a typical stint on the Space Station lasting around six months, it is likely that Yurievich will take the record during his next spaceflight.

Spending 800 days in space corresponds to over 10,000 orbits of the Earth, clocking up a staggering 140 billion km on the odometer! This is far higher even than the *Apollo* missions, where the return journey to the Moon and back is around 800,000 km. But of course the *Apollo* astronauts have travelled the furthest from Earth, reaching a distance of around 400,000 km compared with a few hundred kilometres to low-Earth orbit. The most distant humans ever were the crew of *Apollo 13* who, in their disaster-struck spacecraft, executed an engine burn to send them around the far side of the Moon and safely back to Earth (the film is remarkably faithful to the actual events). It is unlikely that the record held by Jim Lovell, Fred Haise and John Swigert, set in 1970, will be broken at any point in the near future.

Of all the astronauts and cosmonauts you have met, which did you find the most interesting and why?

Andrew R Green BSc (Hons) FBIS, FRAS (Cambridge)

This is a difficult question to answer. I [PM] met most of the astronauts up to the year 2000, and came to know some of them very well. I will say one thing: they are all very different people. Take for example the first two men on the Moon, Neil Armstrong and Buzz Aldrin – Neil does not like publicity, and is very retiring, whereas Buzz Aldrin is a publicist, in the best sense of the word. I have found that the American and Russian astronauts, although different, all share one or two characteristics. All of them have more than the usual share of courage, ability and common sense.

I find it very hard to select any, but the very first man to go into space was Yuri Gagarin. I met him on several occasions before his sad and untimely death in an ordinary aircraft crash. I like Gagarin because he was going into the complete unknown. It was suggested that any space traveller would be hopelessly space sick or hopelessly giddy, but this was not so and Gagarin proved it. When he came down, most of the familiar ‘bogies’ had been disproved. All those who followed Gagarin had at least some idea what to expect – he hadn’t.

The View from Above

Why, when we see footage of astronauts on the lunar surface or images of Earth from a great distance, do we not see any stars, just an inky blackness?

Stephen Millership (Stockport)

It is simply an issue of contrast. The Sun appears to be more than a billion times brighter than the nearest star, purely because it is so much closer. The Earth and Moon reflect a reasonable fraction of the light that hits them, and so their surfaces are still much, much brighter than the rest of the stars. If you take a camera and try to take a picture of the stars in the night sky, you will find that a reasonable exposure length is needed – probably a fair few seconds to get a decent image. Do something similar with the Moon, and you will find that even with a short exposure the Moon is incredibly bright. Any image you see that shows the features on the Moon's surface along with background stars, unless it is taken during a lunar eclipse, is almost certainly a composite image made of several different exposure lengths stitched together.

Have any of the astronauts actually seen the Great Wall of China from space?

Camelia Galvin (Liverpool)

There is an old story that the Great Wall of China can be seen from the Moon. Of course it can't! The Great Wall is by no means complete and it would be very hard to recognise from a great altitude. Parts of it can be picked out on some photographs from the International Space Station, but it is certainly not conspicuous – it is much too narrow.

Why do space missions always show us the Earth, but never the stars? Is it possible to recognise constellations such as Orion from the Space Station?

John Hennessey (Sheffield) and J Hooper (Bishopstoke, Hampshire)

One of the main reasons for this is that they're looking the wrong way most of the time. The International Space Station has an observation room, called the 'cupola', which is on the Earthward side, but there is nothing similar on the far side.

When the Space Station is on the daylight side of the Earth, the brightness of the planet and the station itself would completely overwhelm the background stars, for the reasons discussed in an earlier answer. If the astronauts looked out of the far side of the Space Station during the night time, when both the station itself and the Earth were dark, they would be faced with a couple of problems. Firstly, the sky would be moving relatively quickly due to the station's rapid orbit around the Earth. This would mean that long-exposure photos would be tricky to achieve without some

accurate tracking of the sky. Secondly, there would be so many stars visible. As anyone who has been to a site with a really dark sky will know, observing the sky in such conditions can actually be rather confusing. The brighter stars that make up the constellations can be hard to pick out from the fainter ones that we don't normally see, and identifying the familiar shapes such as Orion and Cassiopeia can be rather difficult.

We are all familiar with images of the Earth and Moon taken by astronauts, but what does the Sun look like from orbit?

Christopher Harper (Nailsea, Bristol)

Neither of us has ever been into space, and there are indeed very few pictures of it, so we need to rely on the account of an astronaut who has seen it. The British-born astronaut Piers Sellers, who has appeared on *The Sky at Night*, explained that the Sun is an incredibly bright white ball, set against a dark black background. It also appears to move incredibly quickly, since the International Space Station orbits the Earth every hour and a half or so. Sunrises and sunsets take a few seconds, and the entire horizon glows bronze and gold for a brief moment before the Sun suddenly appears in all its brilliant glory. Because it reflects the sunlight the station goes through similar colour changes and one can only imagine what a wonderful sight it must be to see with one's own eyes.

How big does the Earth look from space?

Felix Pelling, age 8 (Newport, Wales)

Most astronauts don't actually go that far from Earth. The International Space Station, for example, is only around 300 km above the surface of the Earth, and the Hubble Space Telescope is around twice that. To put this in context, if the Earth were shrunk to the size of a football then the Space Station and Hubble would be less than a centimetre above the surface.

So from orbit the surface looks pretty big, filling half the sky, which is why most images of the Earth from space only show a small portion of the planet. The situation is different, however, if you go to the Moon. The astronauts on the *Apollo 8* mission were the first to see the Earth from that distance, and the sight must have been stunning. In fact, it is often claimed that the most reproduced image in the world is the image of the Earth from space taken by the *Apollo 17* astronauts on their way to the Moon. It's hard to say whether this claim is really true, particularly in the digital age, but it certainly sounds plausible.

A photograph of the Earth from space, taken by the *Apollo 17* astronauts in 1972.

Of course, there are spacecraft that have travelled even further, and various missions, notably the *Cassini* and *Voyager 1* spacecraft, have captured images of the Earth as a tiny blue dot in an image, which is certainly enough to make one feel very small indeed!

What does space look like?

Matthew Manship, age 8 (Newport, Wales)

Well, one can't see space itself, since space is defined as the absence of anything, but the view *from* space is one that must be very impressive indeed! One of the biggest differences must be that the sky is very dark even when the Sun is up, since there is no atmosphere to scatter the light around. Piers Sellers described the colours as incredibly vivid, with the Earth's oceans appearing the brightest blue you've ever seen.

The other place that people have been to is the Moon, and it is often imagined that it is a very grey place. But the astronauts who have been there say that it is not, and that there are flecks of colour all over the lunar surface.

Do astronauts have a nice time in space?

Ama Boateng, age 7 (Newport, Wales)

As with some of the previous questions, for this we need to turn to someone with more experience in such matters. Piers Sellers told *The Sky at Night* that he had a wonderful time in space, and would recommend spaceflight to everybody. Seeing the world whizz by must be wonderful, and the whole experience one of the most

exciting experiences possible. I'm sure it's hard to describe just how much fun it is, and so Piers offered to take everybody with him – though sadly that is not in his power. If you do ever get to go into space yourself, then do let us know just how beautiful it is!

Is it possible for anyone at all to become an astronaut, and if so how would I prepare to become one and who would I apply to?

Sam (North England)

Astronaut training takes a very long time, and normally follows from a good strong education. You typically have to be a scientist, an engineer, a medical doctor, or a pilot, although a small number of schoolteachers have travelled into space. This is primarily because of the roles that astronauts fulfil while in space. While there are of course the pilots who fly the spacecraft, there are scientists and engineers who perform the scientific experiments and more technical parts of the missions.

There are also many stringent physical tests that need to be passed, as the journey into space puts a great deal of strain on the body. We wish you all success, but for full details we would have to direct you to the European Space Agency or NASA.

I am 9 years old (nearly 10). Do you think it would be possible for me to become the first girl on Mars when I become an astrophysicist? Will travel to Mars be possible by then?

Sushila (Devon)

There is no reason why not. Of course you will have to go through all the training and all the qualifications. The main trouble about reaching Mars is the radiation, and this is something we have not yet solved. By the time you are grown up we may well have done so.

If you get to Mars and we are still around don't forget to send us an e-mail or text message!

The International Space Station

How big is the International Space Station, and what does it look like inside?

Erin, age 8 (Newport, Wales)

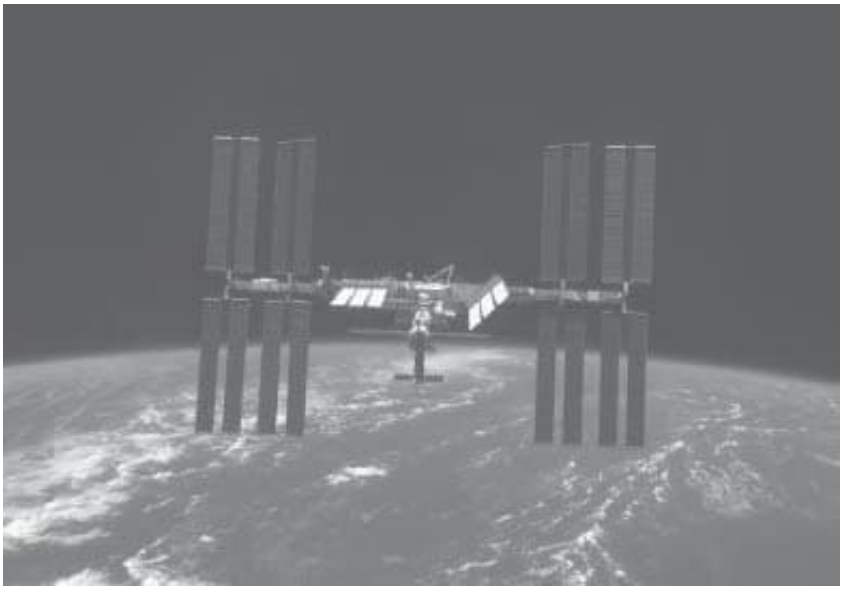
The International Space Station is pretty big, and the habitable volume is around the size of the cabins of two jumbo jets. In fact, it doesn't look too dissimilar, since the main spaces are lined up in a long tube, though there are a number of bits sticking off the sides. The various segments are made by different nations, such as America, Russia and Europe. Each one has its own feel. On *The Sky at Night*, Piers Sellers described the Russian areas as being like a Jules Verne old-world habitat, while the American ones are more futuristic-looking.

As well as the habitable areas, there is a lot of other structure to the Space Station as well. A main truss carries the solar panels and radiators, and a number of robotic arms and docking ports adorn it at various locations.

The European Space Agency's Automated Transfer Vehicle is a stunning piece of hardware. Are there any plans to allow crew members to get to the International Space Station within the ATV? Is burning it up after its mission not a waste of such a valuable and fully functioning vehicle?

Richard Walder (Eastbourne, East Sussex)

The Automated Transfer Vehicle (ATV for short) could be converted into a manned crew vehicle, but there is a significant amount of infrastructure required as well. For a start, the *Ariane 5* rocket that launches it is simply not designed for manned capsules and the vibrations on launch would kill anyone on board. Secondly, manned missions require additional support on the ground or at sea for when the capsule returns to Earth. While the USA deployed its navy to collect the *Apollo* capsules there is no equivalent for Europe, so it would require the commitment of a number of nations' naval resources to fulfil the same purpose.



The International Space Station, photographed against the backdrop of the Earth.

The ATV currently has three main roles. Firstly, it takes tonnes of crucial supplies up to the station, including food and water. Secondly, it provides an equally crucial boost to lift the Space Station into a slightly higher orbit – reserving the fuel on board the station for the manoeuvres required for collision avoidance and so forth. And thirdly, it acts as a rubbish dump. Although packaging is kept to a minimum, there is still a fair amount of waste generated on the Space Station. It would be careless to simply jettison such waste out of an airlock – to do so would only add to the space debris problem – and so the ATV is used for stowage of old equipment and other waste.

The ATV can't remain docked to the Space Station permanently, as the docking port is needed for future missions, so once it has fulfilled these roles there are three possible courses of action. The first would be to move it away, which would leave it susceptible to collision with space debris, and its orbit would eventually decay until it burnt up in the atmosphere, though some parts would probably reach the ground. A second option would be to move it to a higher orbit, where it is away from the majority of junk in orbit, and where it would not experience such severe orbital decay. However, since it would be full of rubbish, it is not clear there would be a future use for it. The third option is to allow it to re-enter the Earth's atmosphere and burn up in a predictable way. When done in a controlled manner, anything that reaches the surface can be made to hit the ocean rather than populated areas.

Of course, if it is ever converted into a manned capsule, the occupants will not be in favour of any of these options, and a controlled re-entry is the only possible option.

I once saw what looked to be a very bright star directly overhead which suddenly blinked out. Could it have been the reflection from the Space Station disappearing as the solar panels moved? Is it possible to track the Space

Station's position?

Rochard Tolbart (Lanvallec, France)

This is quite possible. The International Space Station can be very brilliant, even brighter than Venus when the solar panels are in a favourable position. When visible, the Space Station can be seen to move relatively quickly through the sky, normally from west to east, typically taking a few minutes to complete its journey. It is only a few hundred kilometres up, but this means that it can remain in sunlight for a couple of hours after sunset down on the ground. Although it does change its orientation slightly over time, this would not be sudden, and it probably disappeared because it went into the Earth's shadow. You can track the location of the brightest satellites online, including at the excellent website www.heavens-above.com.

Dangers of Space Travel

How much radiation hits the surface of the Moon compared to the Earth, and how did the spacesuits manage to protect against it? Can they be used to clean up radiation here on Earth?

John Restick (Irvine, Ayrshire)

The radiation received in low-Earth orbit is not too dangerous, equivalent to 2 or 3 chest X-rays per day. This sounds high, but is actually fairly small when compared with the radiation normally received throughout a lifetime. On the Moon the situation is different, and the radiation is more dangerous. In fact, any astronauts on the surface of the Moon during a solar flare would probably be killed.

The spacesuits are designed to protect against some of the radiation, but not all of it. The knowledge transfer is actually the reverse of what is suggested in the question, with the technologies used in the nuclear industry being used to protect astronauts, so in fact spacesuits are being used to help clear up radiation on Earth. At the moment, we have much more experience with nuclear reactors than spaceflight, but perhaps in the future that may change and spaceflight will be used to advise the applications here on Earth.

The Foreseeable Future

Now the Space Shuttle has been retired, what are the prospects for future manned space travel?

Steven (Edinburgh)

At the present moment, we depend upon the Russians and their *Soyuz* capsule, though China, Japan and India will probably have manned vehicles in the foreseeable future. The *Dragon* capsule made by SpaceX, a commercial company in the USA, is a possibility, along with a number of competitors. It is likely that these private companies will be used, along with the Russian vehicles, to take astronauts to the Space Station. We should also remember the possible development of European manned space capsules, based on the Automated Transfer Vehicle that currently acts as a cargo transport, though that is some way off.

NASA are in the process of developing a multi-purpose crew vehicle that could be used to take astronauts to a range of destinations, be that Earth orbit, a nearby asteroid, a satellite in need of repair, or even Mars. The crew vehicle will be launched on a new rocket, but the first routine flights of that are not likely until the end of the decade.

Will so-called 'space tourism' ever become available to the general public, rather than just the very rich?

Gary Holmes (Swadlincote, Derbyshire)

I [CN] would say that there is no reason why not. After all, space tourism is to us what normal airtravel would have been to the Victorians. Although the cost is currently very high, the first aeroplane journeys were similarly expensive. The key development will be the use of low-altitude spaceflight for travelling from one place to another, at which point it will become economical and affordable – at least until the fuel runs out.

When the USA decided to beat the USSR to the Moon, they scrapped the elegant X-15 spaceplane programme for the more expedient Saturn V delivery system. Why haven't current space programmes pursued this approach to manned spaceflight?

Gwyn Roberts (Cramlington, Northumberland)

A number of programmes along these lines are being planned, including one here in the UK called Skylon, though they are at a relatively early stage. With Skylon, for example, the current effort is focused on simply proving that the *concept* is correct. The immediately obvious advantage of a spaceplane is that it can be reused, though

that was never fully achieved with the Space Shuttle. The next major step is to develop an engine that can act like a jet engine in the air, but a rocket engine in space. Both use a combination of hydrogen and oxygen as fuel, but in the lower atmosphere the oxygen can be extracted from the air itself. The major challenge is developing an engine that works at both low and high speeds, and that can keep everything cool enough.

Spaceplanes such as Skylon are likely to be at least a decade away (unless the military unveils a miraculous new design that they've been working on in secret!), so for the moment we're stuck with good old-fashioned rockets.

I remember all the excitement surrounding manned space missions and the first Moon landings when I was a kid in the 1960s. There were predictions of men on Mars by the end of the century and even manned missions to Jupiter. Are you disappointed in the lack of manned exploration beyond Earth orbit for the foreseeable future? I most certainly am!

George Jones (Liverpool)

I [PM] am disappointed, but I suppose I ought to have expected it. For heads of nations to get together and work in harmony is something we have never achieved yet, and until we do we are not going to make progress – and neither do we deserve to. As I've said over and over again, the main problem is radiation. Somehow, we've got to learn how to deal with that before we can set out for Mars.

Are there any plans for manned missions to the outer Solar System?

Kathy Fowler (Stockport, Cheshire)

It is too early to start thinking about the outer Solar System. We must first be quite sure that we can travel safely not only to the Moon but also to Mars. There are also a number of logistical challenges in making such long journeys, not the least of which is being able to take enough food!

Given the enormous success of robotic missions to the planets, and the advances in computing power since the *Apollo* missions, have we seen the last of manned spaceflight beyond biology experiments in low-Earth orbit?

Brendan Alexander (Co Donegal, Ireland), Dan Donnelly (Southampton, Hampshire) and Paul Scott (Plymouth, Devon)

I would say not. Say what you may, but there are things that humans can do that robots simply can't. Some things are only possible with an intelligent and adaptive response to events, and at the moment robots cannot think for themselves with anywhere near the capacity of the human brain. I find it hard to imagine that the human race is not destined to explore the Solar System and become comfortable working in the cold, hard vacuum of space. Eventually, I would hope that manned space exploration will be as routine as reaching low-Earth orbit is today, or conducting experiments over the winter in Antarctica.

Do you think Britain should be more actively involved in manned space

exploration?

Ben Slater (Claverdon, Warwickshire)

Britain has a relatively minor involvement in manned space exploration, but we focus most of our research on unmanned, robotic missions. Manned space missions can serve a purpose, normally where the flexibility and adaptability of a human are key to the mission's success. For example, most of the research being conducted on the International Space Station is in the form of experiments which are run by people.

But manned missions also have a huge potential to inspire people into science. A great many people were inspired by seeing people walk on the Moon, and the impact of that on the fields of physics and astronomy is probably immeasurable. As a child of the Space Shuttle era, I [CN] was brought up with manned space flight being a regular, if not routine, occurrence, though the majority of scientific discoveries over the past 50 years have been from unmanned missions.

These unmanned satellites do not get the publicity of the space telescopes, with many being involved in telecommunication and Earth observation. An example is Envisat, an Earth-observation satellite which has been monitoring our planet's surface and providing key information following natural disasters around the globe. A number of UK-based companies are world leaders in satellite manufacturing, and in the fields of astronomy and space science Britain is incredibly strong on the world stage. For example, the UK led the design, build and operation of the SPIRE instrument onboard the Herschel Space Observatory, and is leading the MIRI instrument on the James Webb Space Telescope, the successor to the Hubble Space Telescope. A field in which the UK is developing a lot of expertise is that of micro-satellites, tiny but functional satellites which are relatively cheap to build and launch. These can be far more efficient when large satellites are not needed, and are probably the way much of the industry will go.

In Britain we haven't had a rocket programme since the Black Arrow project was cancelled in the 1970s, and so these satellites have to be launched on foreign launch systems. This is often the European Space Agency's *Ariane* rocket, but in the future it is possible, some would say probable, that the rockets being designed and built by private industry will become the dominant method of launching satellites and instruments into space.

In my view, manned missions need to justify the additional cost and effort involved with providing support for people onboard. There is a lot of expertise around the world, primarily from the USA and Russia, but lately also from countries such as China. The cost involved in building up our own expertise in this area would be huge, and I would say that we are right to stick to what we're really good at, which is unmanned missions.

There is nothing to stop us being involved in future manned missions, though. For example, there has been a lot of excitement about future manned missions to Mars. In my view (though of course ESA and NASA don't ask me personally!), such a mission needs to justify the presence of people on board. There is no reason the UK can't use its expertise in planetary science to play a key role in this mission, even if it is not in the glamorous role of walking on the red planet.

A Moon Base

What would it take to get the USA, Europe and Russia together to have a manned scientific base on the Moon in the next 30 years, like that in Antarctica?

P Raiswell (Norwich)

It would take all the nations involved to elect sensible leaders, who can serve mankind and not only themselves. This, unfortunately, may be some way ahead of us yet, and at the time of writing there is no sign of it. Until we learn to work together we are not going to get very far – the remedy is in our own hands. (Personally, I [PM] would take all the current world leaders, put them in a spacecraft, and send them on a one-way journey to Alpha Centauri!)

There are of course many other nations with an interest in space research: China, India and Japan to name only three. If there is another space race, I expect it will be between the West and China. I hope there isn't another space race, however, because it puts true cooperation back by many years.

We know that the Moon is a varied and fascinating place. If the next mission to land on the Moon was suddenly back on, where would you want it to land and why?

Julia Wilkinson (Rochdale, Lancashire)

I [PM] am sure it was right to call off the Moon landings after number 17. If we'd gone on, we'd have learnt more about different areas of the Moon, but probably nothing fundamental, and sooner or later something would have gone wrong, with tragic results. If I had to choose a site now for the next mission, I would unquestionably go to Aristarchus, the brightest crater on the entire Moon with an unusual surface, and where a number of transient lunar phenomena (TLP) have been reported. So Aristarchus is my choice. Others may have many different ideas.

I [CN] would go for the south pole of the Moon, as it is the one location where there are peaks in almost permanent sunshine. The crater nearest the south pole is called Shackleton Crater, after the famous explorer to Earth's south polar region. This would provide an excellent place to put solar panels for power, and would have relatively easy access to parts of the Moon not visible from Earth. There have even been proposals for a roving base. While that would allow the ability to move to different locations and examine the Moon in more detail, the primary goal of a mission to the Moon would seem to be to prove that we can set up a base on another astronomical body. For that, I would say a static base is more suitable.

When we have a base on the Moon, what will be the first kinds of experiments to be carried out?

James West (Kenilworth)

I [PM] would say medical research, a physics laboratory and an observatory. A lunar hospital may sound far-fetched now, but it will soon be a reality. There is so much medical research that can be carried out on the Moon that can't be carried out down here on Earth.

There would probably be further investigations into the possibility of growing plants in lunar soil. While it also sounds far-fetched, it may be possible to develop some species that can thrive. Of course, there won't be substantial crops for many years, and lunar residents may have to resort to eating lichens, mosses and dandelions.

Should there be international collaboration to make further Moon landings, or should we set our sights directly on Mars?

Andrew Dean (Oakham, Rutland)

I [PM] would say we've got to conquer the Moon first. I believe the first trip to Mars won't be to Mars at all, but in fact to its tiny satellite Deimos, with the development of an international base there.

The American administration has proposed a journey to visit a near-Earth asteroid. This would provide different challenges to landing on the Moon or Mars, and would allow us to prove that people are able to live and work in deep space, well away from the gravitational pull of planets or satellites. Such experience will be vital if we are to be able to service spacecraft in locations far from Earth.

Could it be possible to one day have automated industry on the Moon to build technology, generate power, and mine the regolith?

Paul Metcalf (Suffolk)

I [PM] see no reason why not, and there is no reason why we shouldn't. There are arguments about destroying the pristine surface of the Moon, but the Moon has never had any life on it to complain. Automated technology is already very well developed here on Earth, and the Moon is an ideal place to deploy it. The manned missions into space should be reserved for activities that require an intelligent, adaptive operator, and the routine tasks left to robots.

Living On Mars

Will people land on Mars in our lifetime?

Dee Parker (Essex), Nick Howes (Cherhill, Wiltshire), William Arinze (Kingston, London) and Trevor Erry (Bromwell, Kent)

If we solve the radiation problem, then yes, but without that, then no. We have the technology to take craft to Mars and are well on the way to developing the ability to return them, but we are at a loss as to how to deal with the solar radiation that would be fatal to any Martian explorers.

What are the logistics involved in a manned mission to Mars, and what would the minimum return journey duration be, including the stay on the planet?

N.J. Anderson (Southsea, Hampshire)

I [PM] would foresee a base on the satellite Deimos before heading down to Mars. It's much easier to land on Deimos – in fact more of a docking operation than a landing. From there, trips down to Mars would be significantly simpler. In terms of a round-trip duration, it would probably be a couple of years. The journey time to Mars is about six months, and a similar duration to return, and the opportunities come up roughly once every two years. So six months out, a year on the planet's surface, and then six months back from Mars.

Of course, leaving Mars is significantly more difficult than leaving the Moon due to the higher gravity, and so more fuel would be required. The easiest way of obtaining the fuel would be to extract the key components from Mars itself, probably from sub-surface water ice. Of course, any explorers would also need to eat, and so the ability to produce food and drink while on Mars would be a key requirement. Water is already recycled on the International Space Station, but growing food is much more complicated. The Martian soil is not without nutrients, but making plants hardy enough to survive will be challenging.

Is a mission to Mars really feasible given the amount of time it would take and the radiation the astronauts would be exposed to?

Jeff Brown (Whitstable, Kent)

We do not currently have all the technology required to visit Mars, but we are on the way to developing much of it. For example, we know we can land probes on Mars and are developing the capability of returning them, and so a return trip is a matter of technological engineering rather than fundamental science. There are other technologies, such as the production of fuel on Mars, for which we know the processes required but which we have yet to demonstrate on a large enough scale.

The development of these technologies will take time, and very likely a number of unmanned probes to the Martian surface and back, before we ever try them with people on board.

Would you support volunteers being sent on one-way missions to Mars?

Paul Connelly (Manchester)

It is very rare for people to sacrifice their lives in the service of science, at least knowingly. It's not clear that we would gain a whole lot from such a venture, and I imagine the public outcry would be rather loud. Besides, there would probably be a distinct shortage of volunteers, and you can certainly count both of us out!

The setting up of a permanent colony on Mars is a long, long way off, but I [PM] believe such a thing will exist at some point in the future. When such a facility is there, then sending people to live their lives on Mars would definitely be possible, and I'm sure there would be more volunteers.

If offered by NASA, would you swap your 700 shows in return for a one-way trip to Mars?

Graham Hall (Barry, Wales)

Quite simply, no, thank you very much!

Having been born after the space race and Moon landings, I feel part of a generation that has given up on manned space exploration. Will the new focus towards Mars reignite a new space race in my lifetime?

Nigel Somerville (Coleraine, Northern Ireland)

I [PM] hope it won't be a space race, but a spirited collaboration. Given the right leadership, it could happen so easily. It is merely a case of choosing the right leaders and having their policies continue for longer than an election period – so far we have been singularly unsuccessful at that!

I have heard that Mars has no magnetic field, and so can't protect its atmosphere from the solar wind. If this is so, how will we be able to terraform the planet if it can't hold its atmosphere?

Peter Ainsworth (Manchester)

If we did decide to terraform Mars, we'd have to replenish the atmosphere, which with technology of the (very far) future could probably be done. A thicker atmosphere will create more of a shield from higher energy particles, which may be enough to protect any explorers or colonists. There are also pockets of magnetic field over the surface of Mars, thought to be due to particular rock formations, and while these are incredibly weak compared to the Earth's magnetic field they may provide some small protection from solar radiation.

Worlds Apart

Do you think it will be possible to live on another planet, and how long do you think it will be before we do so?

Robert Gaughan (Ealing, London) and Mike Haywood (Sittingbourne, Kent)

I'm sure that it will one day be possible for people to live on another planet indefinitely, and even reproduce there. In our Solar System, Mars seems to be the only possible destination, and the first manned missions there are decades off. In terms of full-scale colonies, I would say that we are at least century away, though there can be little doubt that it will eventually happen. It is simply a matter of overcoming the technological challenges.

Is there an easy way to terraform a planet, and how far away from planetary engineering are we?

Terence Gibbons (Durham)

Terraforming is an immense feat of engineering, and we are nowhere near at the moment. The scale of the industry involved is absolutely huge. Planetary atmospheres are also incredibly complicated, and depend on a careful balance of many factors. These can range from the balance between oxygen and carbon dioxide, which on Earth is controlled by plant life, to the absorption of carbon into the oceans. One of the biggest problems with trying to recreate the Earth's atmosphere on another planet is that we don't even know exactly how it works, and we'd be sure to miss something crucial. Some of the largest mass extinctions on Earth are suspected to have been due to sudden climate change, possibly caused by volcanic activity or the sudden release of methane from the oceans. After all, we would look particularly stupid if we allowed an extinction event to take place on a planet we had just terraformed and populated.

For the time being, terraforming lies in the realm of science fiction. Mind you, television itself would have been science fiction a couple of hundred years ago!

The Distant Future

If you could travel to anywhere in the Solar System, where would you like to visit and why?

Colin Ashley (Wokingham, Berkshire), Andrew Halford (London) and Steve Attwood (Birmingham)

Another question I [PM] find very hard to answer. There are so many places I would like to go, provided of course there was a guarantee of a return ticket. All in all, I think I'll go back to Mars. After all, it's less unlike the Earth than any other planet, and although there are no Martians, or little green men, there's still the chance of finding very primitive life forms.

I think I [CN] would like to visit Titan, Saturn's largest moon. It's the only other place in the Solar System we know of that has lakes and rivers, albeit made of hydrocarbons such as ethane and methane rather than water. It would be a truly alien world, with stunning vistas. Of course, the skies wouldn't be very clear due to its thick atmosphere, but on the way there I'd hope to have a wonderful close-up view of the planet Saturn and its magnificent rings!

If you could travel to any part of the Universe instantly and come back alive, where would you like to visit?

Paul Coomber (Gloucester)

I [PM] would find this question easier to answer if I knew more about the Universe, for we have to remember that once we go beyond our tiny Solar System our knowledge is very restricted. Certainly I would like to go to a planet where life might not be intolerable, but as yet I can't name one. I think, Chris, this is more your line…

I [CN] would take advantage of the opportunity of seeing some of nature's most stunning sights. I think a point way out beyond the Galaxy would be an ideal place to get a view of our local part of the Universe, seeing both the Milky Way and the Andromeda galaxy from afar. This would provide an unprecedented view of the far side of the Galaxy and give a sense of scale that simply isn't possible from here on Earth. I'd also take a decent telescope, though, as I'd want to try to get a picture of home – or at least the Sun – from such a great distance.

Do you think it will ever be possible for us to travel to another star system?

Ben Slater (Claverdon, Warwickshire), Brian Rothwell (Manchester), Neil Rathod (Essex), Paul Foster (Clapham, London), Tim Graham (Kingston-upon-Thames, Surrey) and Philip G (Canterbury)

I [PM] am not going to say it's impossible, because nothing is really impossible.

What I will say is that we will never do it by any propulsion method we can visualise at the moment. There must be some fundamental breakthrough and I've no idea what form it would take. Time travel, teleportation, warp travel… all these are science fiction at the moment. We must remember that television was science fiction around a century ago. Of course, other races far in advance of ourselves may have managed this, and have mastered the secrets of interstellar travel. This means that if they so wished they could visit us, and flying saucers and UFOs are not absolutely out of the question. All I can say is, I would like to see one land. If it did, and a little green man came out, what would I say? I would say, 'Good evening, tea or coffee?'

Just as TV films are disassembled, transmitted and reassembled for viewing instantaneously, might it be possible to perform a similar process in the future to transport human bodies to distant planets once a receiving facility has been established?

Arthur Moore (Leeds)

This would be teleportation, which for the moment is firmly in the realm of science fiction. In television, the particles that make up the image are completely different from those of the original, and are not transmitted instantaneously. The signals are transmitted using radio waves, and so travel at the speed of light. While on Earth the time delay is inconsequential, transferring images from Earth even to the nearest star in this way would take more than four years.

It might seem in principle that it could be possible to record the state (i.e. position and velocity) of every atom in the human body, transmit that information, and put another set of atoms into the same state. There are logistical challenges, such as the fact that there are billions of billions of billions of particles in a human body, and one of the most fundamental problems with such a procedure is something called the Heisenberg Uncertainty Principle. This states that it is impossible to know the location and speed of anything with complete accuracy, which means that even recording the exact state of all the atoms in a human body is impossible, and so recreating it accurately enough at the other end would also be impossible.

Space Missions

Space Navigation

How many spacecraft do we still retain contact with, and how much do we know about their locations and journeys?

Carl Kirby (London)

AFTER MORE THAN 60 years of the space age, there are a great many satellites and spacecraft, launched for a very large range of purposes. There have been thousands of launches, but the vast majority of spacecraft do not go beyond Earth orbit. The majority are either Earth observation satellites, normally either for military purposes or environmental monitoring, or communications satellites. One reason for there being so many is that there are more than fifty countries building satellites. Around half of the satellites ever launched have since burned up in the Earth's atmosphere as their orbits have decayed, though there are some which are in orbits too high for this to happen.

A small number of Earth-orbiting satellites are for research, the two most famous probably being the International Space Station and the Hubble Space Telescope, and a fraction of them are dedicated to astronomical research. There are also around 40 operational orbiting observatories, working at different wavelengths. By comparison, there are nearly 50 observatories that are still in orbit but no longer operational, and they are all tracked using ground-based radar and telescopes.

Heading much further out, there are over 20 operational probes scattered through the Solar System, most either orbiting or on the surface of other planets or the Moon, and others travelling through the Solar System. There are nearly three times as many artificial spacecraft that are still somewhere out in space but no longer working. Most of these are not actively tracked, but their locations are fairly accurately known by predicting their orbits and trajectories.

The most distant operational satellite is *Voyager 1*, which is an impressive 17 billion km (nearly 11 billion miles) away from Earth. So how do we track such distant objects?

Well, that's thanks to a network of radio dishes around the world called the Deep Space Network. Roughly equally spaced around the world (in California, Spain and Australia) the three facilities provide full-time communications with spacecraft throughout the Solar System. The network comprises some of the biggest radio telescopes in the world, with the largest being 70 metres in diameter, and they allow the positions and velocities of spacecraft to be measured very accurately. This does, however, rely on knowing the positions fairly precisely, as such large radio telescopes can only observe a tiny part of the sky at any time and a manual search can take a long time. It also relies on the spacecraft working correctly, since they must be emitting radio waves in the direction of the Earth – otherwise it is easy to

'lose' spacecraft, as happened with the *Mars Observer* in 1993!

Once the radio dish has locked onto the spacecraft's position, its velocity is measured by 'Doppler shift' of the transmission, whereby the spacecraft's speed towards or away from Earth changes the exact frequency of the radio waves ever so slightly. At the start of the space age, such as during the *Apollo* era, this was a painstaking process which had to be done manually by telescope operators, though now automated computer processors make it much faster and more efficient.

When the telescope has tuned in to the transmissions, the communications can begin. With most missions, it is often a case of getting data back down to Earth, and the spacecraft beams its signals back towards us. The antennas on spacecraft are much more modest than those on Earth, and the rate of transmission is incredibly small. For example, at the normal rate the information is transmitted back to Earth by the *Voyager* spacecraft, it would take around ten seconds to transmit a single text message. The communication is not always one-way, though, and sometimes the mission operators need to send new instructions during the same session. It is quite rare for operators to talk to their missions in 'real time', so such instructions are normally queued up in advance.

Could you please explain the basic principles of space navigation which enables spacecraft to make amazing rendezvous with planets, comets etc.?

Rob Beeton (nr. Henley-on-Thames, Oxfordshire)

Moving a spacecraft is very different to moving a vehicle on the ground or in the air, for two main reasons. Firstly, there is no air resistance, so when you give something a push with its rockets or thrusters it won't slow down unless you give it another push in the opposite direction. This is why some probes whizz past planets or asteroids without stopping – the only way of slowing down enough to enter orbit would be to carry large quantities of fuel.

Secondly, *everything* is moving, so all speeds have to be measured relative to something else. We're used to talking about the speed of cars or aeroplanes in miles per hour, and this is always relative to the ground. That's entirely fair enough when on the Earth – after all, the ground isn't going anywhere! But in space it's very different because even the Earth is moving, as it travels round the Sun at around 30 km per second – a whopping 67,000 miles per hour!

If we want to send a probe to Mars then that speed is certainly useful, because we need to go much faster to overcome the Sun's gravitational attraction just enough to get us out to Mars' orbital distance, which is around 75 million kilometres further out from the Sun than the Earth. A bit of maths and a good knowledge of the laws of gravity will tell you how much fuel you need, and then you just have to go away and build a big enough rocket. In fact, the equations needed are simply the ones worked out in 1687 by Sir Isaac Newton.

But that's only part of the problem, because at the time your probe gets out to Mars' orbit, you also need Mars to be in the same place, otherwise there's very little point in making the journey. This is actually just a question of timing, and is why missions to Mars only launch roughly every two years – this is how often the Earth and Mars are in the best places in their orbits relative to each other.

But even when it gets there, which will take several months, your trusty space probe will be going so fast relative to Mars that if left to its own devices it would fly right past the planet. It would need to slow down quite considerably to go into orbit,

which requires a bit more fuel – though some probes get a helping hand by flying through the outermost layers of Mars' thin atmosphere and using friction to slow them down. For encounters with much smaller bodies, such as asteroids or comets, it is more normal for spacecraft to fly straight past. An exception is the Japanese *Hayabusa* probe, which touched down on asteroid Itokawa and returned samples to Earth (though the journey back was very eventful, after a string of bad luck befell the probe).

So what if you want to go further? Well, there's only so far you can get with a normal rocket, and we can't build them big enough to send spacecraft right out of the Solar System. Instead, almost all probes use a technique called a gravitational slingshot to give a speed boost. By flying past a planet or moon in the correct way, a spacecraft can either increase or decrease its speed. This was used extensively by the *Voyager* spacecraft in the 1970s and 1980s, enabling *Voyager* 2 to fly past Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus and Neptune over the course of a 12-year interplanetary mission.

The equations involved might have been drawn up more than 400 years ago, but it all gets very complicated when dealing with planets that are moving and a spacecraft whose mass is changing as it burns fuel. Advances in computing have helped enormously, allowing scientists to run detailed simulations to cover all eventualities. Sometimes things sadly go wrong, either due to human error or equipment malfunction. In 1999, the *Mars Climate Orbiter* was sent on an incorrect trajectory after an embarrassing mix-up between metric and imperial units. As a result it dived too deep into the Martian atmosphere and was destroyed. And more recently, the Japanese *Akatsuki* probe to Venus failed to enter orbit because of a problem with the rockets. With *Akatsuki*, however, all is not lost, as there will be another chance to enter orbit when it passes the planet again in 2016.

We have trouble running public transport to time on our planet, but how on earth do scientists manage to send spacecraft out into the Solar System to arrive on time and to land with such accuracy on another world?

Ian Drain (Portsmouth, Hampshire)

Almost all aspects of a spacecraft's mission are programmed in great detail in advance. The launches are carefully timed to ensure the journey will be as straightforward as possible, and the thruster firings are all pre-programmed. The position and speed of the spacecraft are carefully checked after every manoeuvre, with follow-on manoeuvres executed if necessary.

It doesn't always go to plan, however. The main culprit is normally equipment failure, often involving either thrusters or moving parts. This is why spacecraft are designed to be as simple as possible, generally using reliable components such as explosive bolts rather than electric motors. These are less susceptible to damage which might occur during launch, when the probe will experience huge vibrations.

But spaceflight is still a complicated business, and a reasonable proportion of missions don't actually succeed. In the early days, this was often due to a failure of a rocket, either exploding on launch or failing to reach orbit. Nowadays, this happens less often, though there is still the odd accident. In 1996 the first *Ariane 5* rocket self-destructed less than a minute after launch, because of a software bug. Two consecutive *Taurus* rockets failed in 2009 and 2011, when the fairing which protects the payload failed to separate, leaving the rockets much too heavy. And of course the most tragic launch failure, which occurred on 28 January 1986, was when the Space

Shuttle *Challenger* tragically broke apart less than two minutes into its flight, resulting in the loss of all seven crew members.

Missions to other planets are often less successful than one might imagine, too. Of the 38 missions to Mars since the 1960s, only half have been successful. The majority of the failures were in the 1960s and 1970s, and mostly from the USSR, though NASA had its own string of spectacular bad luck in the 1990s when it lost three of its six Mars missions.

The loss of missions is tragic, but we must remember that there are many, many successful missions which have performed far above their design parameters. The *Voyager* spacecraft are still going strong after more than 40 years in space. And the Mars rovers *Spirit* and *Opportunity* have both long outlived their original mission lifetime of 90 days. *Spirit* lasted six years before becoming stuck in a sand trap, and *Opportunity* has travelled more than 30 km over the surface of the red planet. *Cassini* is continuing to discover what weird and wonderful surprises are harboured by Saturn and its many moons, from the methane lakes of Titan to the fountains of Enceladus. This exploration of the ringed planet's system requires a large number of manoeuvres, though wherever possible the mission operators use gravity slingshots from the moons to adjust *Cassini*'s course, saving the precious fuel for when it is required.

After more than 50 years of the space age, mankind's ability to send probes around the Solar System is only increasing, with more and more missions doing us proud.

How is it that spacecraft are able to avoid collisions with unobservable space rocks and other debris that might be randomly traversing their intended path?

Ian Zanardelli (London)

Space is not entirely empty, and there are billions of tiny particles of dust in the Solar System, as well as much larger rocks, asteroids and planets. But space is also really big, and the chances of collisions are very small. The problem is that when they do happen, the collisions can do considerable damage because of the high speeds involved. There is very little that can be done about the collisions, as most of the particles are far, far too small to be seen, let alone tracked. Of the spacecraft that have been lost en route to their destinations, it is possible that some were caused by impacts from space debris, though there is no way of knowing for sure.

To protect against such impacts, most spacecraft have shielding on their leading surfaces, which become pock-marked by impacts of tiny micrometeorites. The biggest problem, though, is not from particles of dust or rock, but from cosmic rays. These are very high-energy particles, normally protons and electrons, which travel close to the speed of light and can wreak havoc with electrical circuits. They have so much energy that if they hit a piece of computer memory they can actually change what is stored. The computers are often designed to mitigate against such circumstances, though this sometimes involves the spacecraft entering 'safe mode'.

Sometimes they do cause serious problems, however, and suspected cosmic rays caused a malfunction in one of the instruments onboard the Herschel Space Observatory in late 2009. The malfunction caused a critical piece of the instrument to be damaged beyond repair, and it was only saved by the presence of a backup system. After the event, software updates ensured that a similar problem could not occur again. Thankfully, such problems are few and far between.

I understand that asteroids on a collision course with Earth are dangerous, and I am glad they are now being investigated; but what about space junk? I imagine it consists of small bits that do no damage when they fall but do they clump together? Are they dangerous to spacecraft or the Earth, and is there any way to collect the debris?

Jessica Allen (Ipswich, Suffolk) and Janet Jubb (Glossop, Derbyshire)

Space junk is a serious concern for spacecraft in orbit, and there are millions of pieces. Most of them are very small, sometimes just frozen particles of unused fuel or flecks of paint. These tiny pieces do not normally penetrate spacecraft, although they can do some damage. Most spacecraft have some form of shielding to protect their vital components, particularly those that might be inhabited by people. Any surfaces which are returned to Earth from orbit, such as the Space Shuttles, are inspected to gather information on these tiny particles. There have been occasions when tiny impact scars have been seen on the Shuttle windows, but none have posed a threat to the integrity of the spacecraft or the safety of its crew.

In 2006, the Space Shuttle *Atlantis* was found to have a small hole, less than 3 mm in diameter but over a centimetre deep, in one of its payload bay doors. If the object that caused that hole had hit an astronaut on a spacewalk, it would have done serious damage. Estimates are that over a six-hour spacewalk an astronaut has a 1-in-31,000 chance of being hit by a small piece of space debris.

Although these pieces are very small they pack a big punch when they hit something. This is because objects in Earth orbit are typically moving at around 27,000 km per hour (17,000 miles per hour). The collisions are not normally head-on, but the average collision speed is still about 36,000 km per hour (22,000 miles per hour).

Anything larger than a marble is big enough to be seen from the ground, using either radar or optical tracking telescopes. Although they can't always be tracked, these can still pose a significant threat to spacecraft, and are too large to shield against. For example, an aluminium sphere 1 cm in diameter, about the size of a standard marble, would have the same impact energy as a cricket ball travelling 2,600 km per hour, or a small car travelling at 60 miles per hour.

Objects larger than a cricket ball are actively monitored and tracked, and satellites (at least those with thrusters) are normally moved out of the way if there is a chance of a collision. And there are much larger pieces, ranging from leftover rocket stages to defunct satellites. In 1996, a French communication satellite was hit by a piece of a rocket that had exploded years beforehand. The piece of debris was around the size of a briefcase and tore off part of a long boom. A decade later, the Chinese caused controversy by deliberately destroying a satellite, creating thousands more pieces of debris. And in 2009 the inevitable happened, when a non-functional Russian satellite collided with a US Iridium satellite, adding further debris to the total.

Most of the pieces of debris have decaying orbits and eventually burn up in the atmosphere after anywhere from a few days to a few years. In fact, some objects are intentionally burned up in the Earth's atmosphere, though where possible they are targeted at the ocean to avoid falling over inhabited areas. It is rare for pieces to make it to the ground, though some can do. The first American space station, *Skylab*, re-entered the Earth's atmosphere in 1979, with some chunks striking Western Australia. The largest man-made object to be re-entered to date is the 135-tonne

Russian space station, *Mir*, which was intentionally brought down over the Pacific Ocean in 2001, after an impressive 15 years of service.

With space becoming more and more crowded, efforts are under way to reduce the amount of space junk. While there is little that can be done about the pieces that are up there, mission controllers are working to reduce the debris created by future missions. There are a number of proposals for doing so, but none of them are really feasible with today's technology.

At its closest point, Mars will receive an electronic signal some three minutes after transmission from Earth. So a signal sent to command a Mars rover will arrive after three minutes, and the results viewed three minutes later. In the meantime, the rover could have come to grief and no one would know. How do scientists cope with this real-time problem?

Brian Crane (Norwich, Norfolk)

Mars orbits slightly further out from the Sun than the Earth, at a distance of around 225 million km (140 million miles), compared with Earth's 150 million km (93 million miles). These might be small distances on astronomical scales, but they're still appreciable, even to radio transmissions which travel at the speed of light – a zippy 300,000 km per second (186,000 miles per second). When Mars is opposite the Sun in the sky (what astronomers call 'opposition'), it is at its closest point to Earth, around 75 million km away, but even then light takes around three minutes to travel to us. At its furthest point from Earth, when it is around the other side of the Sun, it takes more like 15 minutes.

So Brian is absolutely correct: a signal from Earth will take at least three minutes to get to Mars, and at least another three to get back. How do the rovers *Spirit* and *Opportunity* avoid crashing into anything? Well, first of all, like most space missions, the rovers are not driven in 'real time' – that is, there isn't anyone with a joystick driving them (as fun as that would be). All the driving is planned well in advance. And secondly, they travel very slowly, so they don't go very far in six minutes. Of course when they're near the edge of a cliff, such as when the *Opportunity* rover drove to the edge of Victoria Crater, 'not very far' could be far enough to send them over the edge, so the drivers are very careful.

But *Spirit* and *Opportunity* have another trick up their sleeves. As well as sending instructions (such as 'drive forward two metres', 'probe that rock', etc.), the mission operators can also send software updates. Both rovers have some automatic software that allows them to monitor their surroundings using 'HazCams' while driving, and to stop if they see a potential problem. Sadly, this didn't stop *Spirit* from getting stuck in a hidden sand trap, ultimately leading to its demise, but *Opportunity* is still going strong. Driving further and faster than before, *Opportunity* has made the impressive 12 km journey to the rim of Endeavour Crater.

Of course, there are probes much further out than Mars. The most distant probe we're still in contact with is *Voyager 1*. Launched in 1977, it is now more than 17 billion km (10 billion miles) away from Earth. Light takes over 16 hours to travel this distance, making a round trip nearly a day and a half long. It's a good job it doesn't like meaningful conversation!

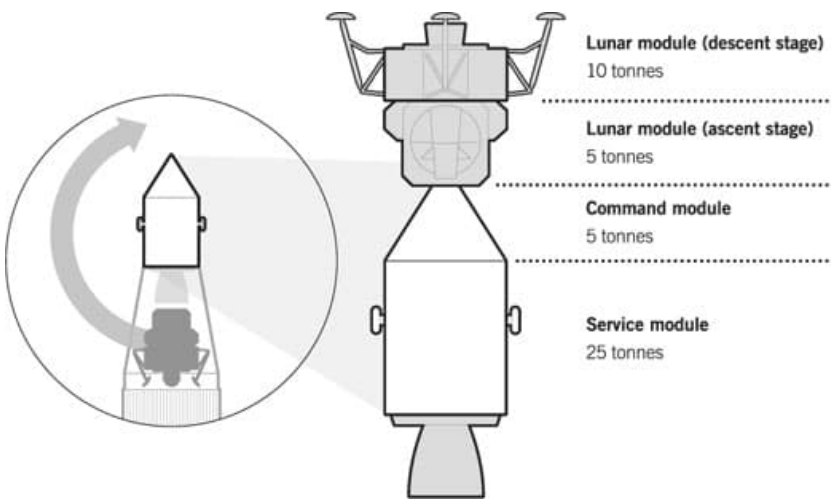
Rockets and Propulsion Systems

It required enormous rocket engines to launch the *Apollo* crew from the Earth, but how did the much smaller rockets on the lunar lander lift the craft from the Moon? The Moon is smaller and has less gravity, but that does not seem enough to explain the discrepancy.

Nick Stone (Bournemouth, Dorset)

Nick is correct that the Moon is smaller, and therefore the gravitational pull at its surface is lower – about one-sixth that on the Earth's surface. But gravity is not the only difference. Let's compare the two cases briefly: the Saturn V rocket that launched from Earth, and the Lunar Module (LM) that returned from the Moon. The Saturn V rocket which launched the *Apollo* astronauts from Earth was composed of three stages, and between them they provided around 500 times as much thrust as the much smaller rocket that lifted the Lunar Module from the Moon. But they were lifting *very* different objects. The Saturn V, which was over 111 metres (363 feet) tall weighed in at around three thousand tonnes at launch. But the vast majority of that was fuel and rocket stages, which were dropped off as their fuel was used.

In fact, the Saturn V was only designed to take about 45 tonnes to the Moon, and around two-thirds of that was the Command and Service Modules, both of which stayed in lunar orbit, while the 15-tonne Lunar Module descended to the Moon. And on lift-off from the Moon, the descent stage remained there, leaving just the ascent stage to return to lunar orbit – and that only weighed about five tonnes.



The entire Lunar Module, which travelled to the Moon tucked behind the Command and

Service Modules, weighed just 15 tonnes, and only the 5-tonne ascent stage needed to lift off from the Moon. Only the 5-tonne Command Module returned to Earth.

So the mass difference is the major factor in why the rockets are such different sizes: one is lifting three thousand tonnes off the Earth's surface, while the other is lifting just five tonnes from the Moon. In principle, there's no limit to the mass of object we can get to the Moon, it's just a case of accelerating it to a high enough speed that it can escape Earth orbit. But the larger the mass, the larger the thrust you need. This is why the Saturn V rockets were built in stages, with the spent stages falling away when their fuel was exhausted. This decreased the mass of the rocket, and meant that the later stages needed less powerful engines.

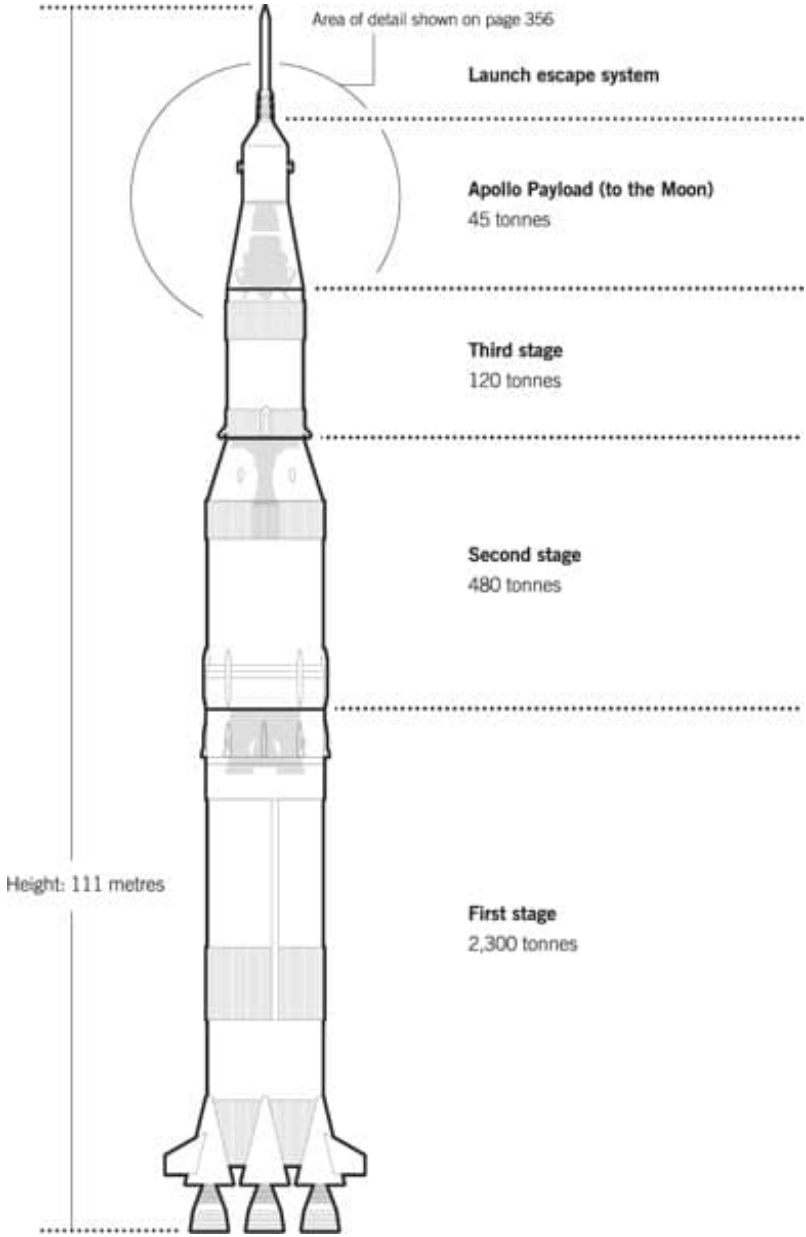
The vast majority of spacecraft and satellites launched today go into low-Earth orbit, which is a few hundred kilometres above the surface. A relatively small number go into Geostationary Orbit (about 36,000 km away) or beyond, requiring an additional rocket stage to be used. For that reason, the Saturn V is still the most powerful launch vehicle ever built. In 1973, a Saturn V launched the American space station *Skylab* into orbit, along with an *Apollo*-style Command and Service Module, which all weighed around 90 tonnes. The mighty Saturn V even managed this without the use of the third rocket stage, yet none of the today's rockets could even begin to match it.

How long is a light year, and how long at current spacecraft speeds would it take to travel one light year?

David (Oswestry, Shropshire)

Light travels pretty quickly, at around 300,000 km (186,000 miles) every second, which equates to around one foot per nanosecond. At the start of the twentieth century, Albert Einstein realised that this speed is the ultimate speed limit in the Universe, and as far as we know nothing can travel faster. Furthermore, because the speed of light (in a vacuum) is constant we can measure huge astronomical distances by the time it takes light to traverse them.

So while 300,000 km is a long way, it's not very far in astronomical terms. In fact, it's only three-quarters of the way to the Moon. So radio transmissions to the *Apollo* astronauts took over a second to get to them, and the reply took just as long to get back. The Sun, at a distance of 150 million km (93 million miles), is eight minutes away in terms of the light-travel time, so from Earth we are actually seeing the Sun as it was eight minutes ago. We can call this distance eight light-minutes.



The mighty Saturn V, the most powerful rocket ever built, weighed in at 3,000 tonnes and stood 111 metres tall, and was designed to send a mere 45 tonnes to the Moon.

Pluto, for example, is around six light-hours away. So if you're ever looking at Pluto through a telescope in the middle of the night, remember that you're seeing it as it was at around teatime! But even this is only a tiny fraction of a light year. Travelling 300,000 km every second, over the course of a year light can cover nearly ten million million km (six million million miles). That's more than 60,000 times the distance from the Earth to the Sun, and over 2,000 times the distance from the Sun to the most distance planet, Neptune.

But even this vast distance is still only on our doorstep. Proxima Centauri, the nearest star to us, is a little over four light years away. The fastest man-made object to leave the Solar System is the *Voyager 1* spacecraft, which gained speed using gravitational slingshots around Jupiter and Saturn. It is now 16 light-hours away, but that is less than a five-hundredth of a light year. Although the Sun's gravity is constantly slowing *Voyager 1* down, the spacecraft is too fast to be stopped. At its current speed of 17 km per second it would take *Voyager 1* 17,000 years to travel one light year. With today's technology, interstellar travel requires a lot of patience.

For man to reach beyond our Solar System would require propulsion not in use today. Can you conceive of an energy form that would propel future manned space exploration? Einstein said that the speed of light could not be surpassed, but could he have been wrong?

Jamie Smith (Pudsey, West Yorkshire)

The rockets in use today to launch spacecraft are all based on chemical reactions, normally the reaction between hydrogen and oxygen. This is how the Saturn V rocket sent *Apollo* astronauts to the Moon in the 1960s and 1970s. The principle of rocket flight is fairly simple, and is based on the conservation of momentum. The momentum of an object is its mass multiplied by its velocity, and without *external* forces the total momentum of something must stay constant. A tiny bit of fuel ignites, and sends material speeding out the back of the rocket. To compensate, and to keep the total momentum constant, the rocket accelerates forwards (which in the case of rockets is usually upwards relative to Earth), but since it is so much more massive than the fuel streaming out the back it only gains a little bit of speed. It therefore takes a lot of little bits of fuel to send the rocket upwards, which is why the Saturn V was 111 metres tall and weighed 3,000 tonnes, all to get the 45 tonnes of *Apollo* spacecraft to the Moon. As discussed previously, the majority of the weight of the Saturn V is the rocket, including the fuel required to get the immense craft off the ground.

The same principle can be used, with a different mechanism for sending the fuel out the back at high speeds. From the early days of rocket development, back in the 1940s and 1950s, US scientists were looking at using nuclear explosions instead of the chemical reaction. While a launch from the ground would cause a lot of nuclear fallout (unfeasible on both environmental and political grounds!), it was considered to be a viable option in space. While there would not be significantly more thrust provided by a nuclear rocket than by the chemical rockets in use today it would be much more fuel efficient, with a relatively small amount of fuel required to get the same thrust.

This 'Project Orion', as it was called, was always controversial, but was finally ended by a nuclear test ban which prohibits nuclear detonations in space. Even

without the political problems, there are a number of serious technical challenges. For example, the rocket has to be able to withstand the detonation of a nuclear bomb behind it, and at a rate of roughly one detonation per second. The technique was suggested for interplanetary or even interstellar travel, with theoretically achievable speeds of around one-tenth the speed of light. This would cut the journey time to Alpha Centauri to decades rather than millennia, but would require far larger structures than we can currently build in space. It was even suggested that the nuclear explosions be replaced with antimatter explosions, though the creation and storage of sufficient quantities of antimatter, which annihilates normal matter when they come into contact, is far beyond our current capabilities.

A technology that is in use on current spacecraft is the ion engine. This works on the same principle, sending tiny quantities of fuel out the back at high speeds, but the fuel in this case is charged particles, or ions. The ions are accelerated to high speed using electric fields, so there are no explosions involved. And while the resulting thrust is very low, making such technology unsuitable for rocket launches, the engine is incredibly efficient. This kind of propulsion is ideal for long voyages, and was used on the *Hayabusa* mission to the asteroid Itokawa, as well as the *Dawn* mission to the asteroid Vesta and the dwarf planet Ceres. While the ion engine provides *Dawn* with a constant but gentle push, it is not powerful enough to launch a rocket, which still requires the chemical reactions we are used to.

But there are methods which do not rely on carrying fuel on board. A solar sail, for example, uses the very slight pressure generated from sunlight hitting a surface to propel craft. The force is incredibly small, and the sail is made of microscopically thin sheets of material spread over large areas. The Japanese *Ikaros* mission uses a sail less than a hundredth of a millimetre thick and around 20 metres across. The sail is also fitted with solar panels to provide power for the communications equipment and scientific instruments, and the reflectivity of the sail can be changed to provide the ability to steer. *Ikaros* travelled to Venus and was a successful technology demonstration, as was NASA's smaller *Nanosail-D*, which performed tests in Earth orbit. The next step planned by JAXA, the Japanese space agency, is to launch a much larger solar sail which could be combined with an ion engine to travel to the planet Jupiter.

These technologies are based on our current technical abilities, but the world of science fiction goes far beyond what we can achieve at present. Propulsion methods such as 'hyperdrives' and 'warp drives' are generally based on the concept of warping space, or travelling in an additional dimension. Others use the idea of using or creating a wormhole, a tear in the fabric of space which links up with another part of space many light years away. While wormholes are mathematically possible in some circumstances, they are not thought to be stable and we certainly have no evidence that they even exist. To make it worse, the experience of entering a wormhole would likely be similar to that of entering a black hole, and we don't know any way of surviving that.

So forgetting fanciful ideas of hyperspace, it's possible that we'll develop or discover a propulsion technology which is more efficient than the ion drive, or more powerful than our chemical rockets. If Robert Bussard was right in the 1960s, we might be able to use electric fields to gather hydrogen from interstellar space and power nuclear fusion engines. It would be a weak thrust, but over the course of a century or so a craft could achieve reasonable fractions of the speed of light, though would never be able to break that speed limit. The interstellar travel time would be reduced to centuries, though on reaching their destination the ship's inhabitants

would be the descendants of the original crew.

We know of no way of accelerating anything to faster than the speed of light. That this limit exists is one of the requirements of Einstein's theory of relativity, and there is not yet any evidence to suggest that the theory is wrong.

So it looks like the speed of light is going to remain the ultimate speed limit for a while. But I [CN] wouldn't want to prejudge what our descendants could achieve. If you're reading this in the year 1,000,000, a part of me is really hoping that you're doing so while lying on the beach on an idyllic planet, bathing under the glow of two suns and speaking in alien tongues to the native inhabitants. But that will have to stay as my dream for a while yet, I suspect.

Solar System Exploration

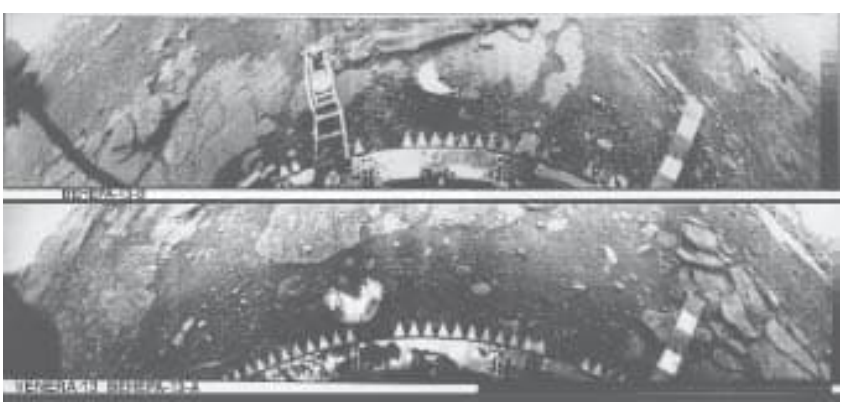
Is it possible to send a person to Venus, land on the surface for 20–30 minutes despite the enormous pressure and heat, collect a rock sample and then leave?

Paul Metcalf (Suffolk)

The first probe to land on another planet was the Soviet *Venera 7* lander in 1970, which returned data from Venus's surface for 23 minutes. In fact, the USSR had a great deal of success with Venus missions. In total, nine Soviet probes landed on the surface and successfully sent back data. The survival record is held by *Venera 13*, which transmitted for just over two hours.

The problem, as Paul correctly states, is the temperature and pressure. On the surface, the temperature soars to 450 Celsius (840 Fahrenheit), and the pressure is nearly 100 times that on Earth. There would be immense challenges involved in keeping someone alive in those conditions. If all the astronaut is doing is collecting a rock sample, then I would say don't bother sending them – just send a robotic lander. It's much cheaper, it's been done before, and the consequences of failure are somewhat smaller!

One feature that hasn't been achieved before is the return to Earth. To make the return rocket a feasible size, it would be sensible to return just a tiny capsule containing the rock. But the rocket and its fuel would also need to be protected from the temperature and pressure. While rockets involve hot, explosive reactions, the hydrogen and oxygen fuel is normally stored in liquid form, relying on very cold temperatures. This doesn't bode very well for a planet with surface temperatures above the melting point of lead.



Venus surface: An image from the surface of Venus, taken by the USSR's *Venera 13* spacecraft. The spacecraft survived the immense temperature and pressure for just over 2 hours.

Do you think that Europa should be the prime candidate for robotic exploration in the Solar System considering its potential for hosting extraterrestrial life?

Ben Slater (Claverdon, Warwickshire)

I [CN] think Europa, Jupiter's icy moon, is an incredibly important place to explore, though I don't expect it to be easy. A liquid ocean is thought to exist below the thick layer of ice, and if there is life there it is expected to be below the surface. The thickness is unknown, but is thought to be hundreds of kilometres thick in places, making it very difficult to penetrate.

To make matters worse, the surface of Europa is covered with fissures, so it is possible the surface will change over time. The problems with finding a landing site are compounded by the fact that there is no atmosphere to make parachutes useful, so the spacecraft will need a sophisticated landing system. Additionally, spacecraft in the Jupiter system are plagued by incredibly high levels of radiation from the giant planet's strong magnetic field, which severely limits their lifetime. So while I sincerely hope we explore Europa some day, it won't be easy and it is likely to be several decades before any significant progress is made.

How likely do you think it is that a *Cassini*-like mission might be sent to Uranus, and what might we expect it to find or explain?

Gareth Wilkes (Oxford)

Missions to the outer planets are very challenging and expensive, and take many years, in fact decades, to develop and come to fruition. Take, for example, the *Cassini* mission to Saturn. The project was originally proposed in the 1980s, based on the success of the *Voyager* missions, which flew past Saturn in the early 1980s, but was not launched until 1997. Missions like *Cassini* have a defined set of questions they would like to answer, and in the case of Saturn there are many questions. Specific questions the team wanted to answer included the relationship between the atmospheric cloud layers and its interior, and the variations seen in the planet's magnificent rings.

Saturn is also graced with a large family of moons, and there was specific interest in Titan, one of the largest moons in the Solar System which is surrounded by a hazy methane-rich atmosphere. To investigate this planet-sized moon, *Cassini* carried on board the *Huygens* lander, which descended through Titan's thick atmosphere and produced amazing images of the surface.

But some of the most amazing results from *Cassini* were not direct answers to those questions. Take, for example, the tiny, icy moon Enceladus, which was suspected to harbour a liquid ocean beneath its surface. What was not expected, however, was the jets of salty water being vented from fissures near the south pole of Enceladus, which not only confirmed the presence of the sub-surface ocean but also revealed details of its composition.

By comparison, Uranus is a very different system. It has a ring system, but nowhere near as extensive as Saturn's, and its family of moons does not contain such interesting cases as Titan or Enceladus. The planet itself is considerably smaller, being an 'ice giant' rather than a gas giant, with a thick atmosphere covering a relatively large solid core, and investigation of this atmosphere is sure to yield

interesting results.

What is possibly most interesting about Uranus is its past. The planet has been knocked on its side, possibly due to an ancient collision. When *Voyager 2* visited Uranus in 1986, the north pole was pointed directly towards the Sun. Two decades later, a quarter of the way round its long orbit, Uranus has just passed its equinox, and in another twenty years the south pole will be continually sunlit with the northern hemisphere in perpetual darkness. The resulting seasonal variation must be very extreme equivalents of those seen at the Earth's poles. The system may harbour clues as to the cause of Uranus's peculiar orientation.

It is also thought that Uranus has moved around considerably throughout the Solar System's history, perhaps even switching places with the outermost planet Neptune. Such planetary motions are predicted by computer simulations of the formation of the Solar System, and are thought to be a common occurrence in other planetary systems that we see. Investigations of Uranus could provide vital clues as to the Solar System's history. In addition, it now appears that planets with masses similar to Uranus and Neptune are among the most common in the Galaxy, so finding out more about them will be important for understanding these alien solar systems.

As with *Cassini*'s investigation of Saturn, it is likely that the most interesting discoveries would be the accidental ones, which were not predicted or looked for. But unfortunately, there is simply not currently the scientific interest in Uranus that there was in Saturn. While there was a proposal to launch a mission there, it was unfortunately not deemed worthy of further development by the European Space Agency. A mission to Uranus would be fascinating, though I [CN] think it is therefore rather unlikely that one will be launched in the foreseeable future. The next large-scale interplanetary missions are likely to be to Jupiter or Saturn, which I'm sure still have a whole host of surprises left in store for us.

With all the effort and time that has gone into the *New Horizons* probe to Pluto, why does it have such a short operational window when it arrives? Is there any possibility of it approaching other Kuiper Belt objects, such as Eris, Sedna or Makemake?

Kevin Cooper (Fife, Scotland)

New Horizons had the fastest launch of any spacecraft, at almost 60,000 km per hour (37,000 miles per hour), which meant that it already had sufficient speed to be able to leave the Solar System despite the gravitational pull of the Sun. Previous probes, such as *Voyager 1* and *Voyager 2*, achieved this escape velocity by flying past the massive planets Jupiter and Saturn, using their gravity to pick up speed. *New Horizons* also passed Jupiter and picked up enough extra speed to shave nearly three years off its journey.

By the time it reaches Pluto in 2015 *New Horizons* will have slowed a little due to the Sun's gravitational pull, but will still be travelling at 50,000 km per hour (31,000 miles per hour). That is far too fast to go into orbit, for which it would need to be travelling at a fraction of the speed, and it doesn't have enough fuel to slow down enough.

New Horizons will be asleep for most of its eight-year journey from Jupiter to Pluto, and will only wake up less than a year before the flyby. It will pass within around 10,000 km (6,000 miles) of Pluto and 27,000 km (17,000 miles) of its large satellite Charon. The detailed measurements will take place for several weeks either

side of the closest approach, but the radio signals will be so weak that it will take another nine months for the spacecraft to transmit all the information back to Earth.

Pluto is located in the Kuiper Belt, a region of the Solar System around five billion kilometres from the Sun, an analogue to the much closer asteroid belt and populated by icy bodies ranging from dwarf planets like Pluto down to little more than rubble. At over 2,000 km across, Pluto is one of the largest Kuiper Belt Objects known, but the region is thought to contain thousands of objects over 100 km in diameter. There's a lot of space at such a large distance from the Sun and these objects are very widely spread out, but mission planners hope that they can direct *New Horizons* towards one or more of these other objects. The other large bodies that we know about, such as Eris, Sedna and Makemake, are unfortunately on the other side of the Solar System. These bodies orbit the Sun very slowly, taking hundreds or thousands of years to complete an orbit, so *New Horizons* can't simply wait for them.

There are currently efforts under way to find any other objects that exist close to *New Horizons*' flight path. Astronomers do this by staring at patches of sky and looking for any moving objects. The job is harder than usual because Pluto, and therefore also *New Horizons*' flight path, is in the direction of the centre of our Galaxy, meaning that the picture is confused by thousands of background stars.

Even without these additional encounters, *New Horizons* will be entering unexplored territory. While the two *Voyager* craft will always be further away, they are both heading in directions away from the main disc of the Solar System. *New Horizons*, by comparison, is travelling in the plane of the planetary disc, and so will be the first spacecraft to explore the Kuiper Belt. This region is very hard to observe from Earth, so having a probe in situ should reveal a great deal about this region of the Solar System, possibly providing clues as to its formation.

Why was the impactor of *Deep Impact* spacecraft made out of copper?

Philip Corneille (Belgium)

The *Deep Impact* mission visited the comet Temple 1, and released an impactor which produced an artificial crater in the nucleus of the comet. The impactor was around the size of a washing machine and weighed around 300 kg. Colliding with the surface at over 20,000 miles per hour, it made a crater around the size of a football field, and sent a large amount of material up into space. The flyby craft observed this ejecta in great detail, in particular the chemical composition.

The impactor was made primarily out of copper in order to minimise the chemical reactions between it and the comet itself, ensuring that the material the flyby craft examined was as pure as possible.

What is the furthest distance man has ever travelled in space?

Khalid Bourne (London)

There are several ways of measuring this. In terms of manned space flight, the furthest man has travelled from Earth is to just beyond the Moon, around 400,000 km (250,000 miles) away. This is peanuts compared to the scale of space, and the vast majority of our exploration has been by robotic missions. In these stakes, the *Voyager* spacecraft hold the record, and will never be caught by any mission launched to date. The *Voyager 1* spacecraft, launched in 1977, is now 17.5 billion km

(10.9 billion miles) from the Earth, which is more than 110 times the Earth-Sun distance. Such spacecraft don't travel in straight lines, and *Voyager 1* swept past Jupiter and Saturn on its way out of the Solar System, travelling a total of 23 billion km (14 billion miles).

What for you, Sir Patrick, was the biggest surprise discovery for a space mission?

Alex Tym (Cheshire)

One of the biggest surprises has been the revelation that Saturn's tiny satellite Enceladus is shooting out fountains of water, which means there must be an underground ocean there. But Enceladus is so small it simply ought not to have anything of the kind, and we have to admit that we are completely puzzled. We may not find out more until we send a manned expedition there, and that's not likely to be for a long time yet.

The *Cassini* probe has actually flown through the plumes and studied what they're made of. The fountains appear to come from markings on the surface which have been named 'Tiger Stripes', now known to be deepish valleys only around a hundred metres across at their deepest. The existence of an ocean of liquid water deep inside Enceladus is a complete enigma!

Which space-exploration mission has had the most 'real world' benefit for mankind?

Earl Robinson (Ledbury, Herefordshire)

Space-exploration missions have two major benefits. The first is the most obvious: the advance in our scientific knowledge of our Solar System and the Universe at large. The second is the development of technology and the economic impact that this provides. Many of the technological developments are apparent in our everyday lives, from cordless power tools to smoke detectors, and from medical thermometers to the aerodynamics of golf balls.

It is not necessarily true to say that these technological developments wouldn't have come to fruition without the space programme – after all, NASA were not the first to think of attaching a battery to a power drill! But the key impact was that NASA *needed* these technologies and so had to develop them, providing some stimulus into the relevant industries.

One could argue that the most beneficial mission was *Sputnik 1*, the first satellite launched in 1957 by the USSR. That proved that space travel was possible, and encouraged rapid development over the following decades. Today, satellites are crucial to many aspects of our lives, from navigation systems to monitoring of large regions following large scale natural disasters.

In terms of space-exploration missions, I [CN] would highlight the fleet of solar observatories, which probe the impact of the Sun on our planet. The Sun has a significant effect on our climate over very long time periods, and in fact the motion and orientation of the Earth and Sun are the dominant influences on our planet's climate over tens of thousands of years. The effect of the Sun on the climate on shorter timescales is much smaller, though is currently undergoing intense study. The knowledge gained will inform us as to whether the Sun is likely to make matters

better or worse over time, on top of the changes caused by our impact on the planet.

In addition to the climate, solar flares and ejections of material can threaten many systems that we rely on in our everyday lives. These are accompanied by high-energy particles, which can damage satellites in orbit, as well as electrical and communication systems down on Earth. Such flares and ejections pose a serious threat to astronauts travelling in space, and is arguably the biggest problem presented As we gradually extend our technological fingers further out into space we make ourselves more susceptible to what is often termed ‘space weather’, and studying it is crucial for the future.

The Bizarre and Unexplained

If what we knew about the Universe was placed into percentages, how much would be theory and how much would be fact?

David Duly (Co Antrim, Northern Ireland)

THERE ARE VERY many ways of thinking about this, but perhaps the best is to consider what fraction of the contents of the Universe we understand. The current cosmological model includes dark energy and dark matter, which are discussed in more detail elsewhere. Dark matter is material that we can only detect through its gravitational effects. The best indications are that there is around five times as much dark matter as 'normal' matter – i.e. that which everything we see, hear and touch is made of. While we know how much there is, we don't really know what it is made of, and it is fully justifiable to call dark matter a theory at the moment.

Dark energy is even more theoretical, in that we only know that *something* seems to be causing the expansion of the Universe to accelerate. What that something is we know not, and so dark energy is certainly theoretical – even Saul Perlmutter, one of the co-discoverers of the apparent effect of dark energy, has said that it is a place holder term for something as yet unknown. The truly astonishing thing is that dark energy seems to account for around 73 per cent – almost three-quarters – of the energy density of the entire Universe.

That leaves 27 per cent for the normal and dark matter, which is split into around 22 per cent for dark matter and 5 per cent for normal matter. So only around a twentieth of all the 'stuff' in the Universe is normal matter, which we believe we understand reasonably well. And if it wasn't bad enough, only around a tenth of that is stars – the rest is gas and dust between the stars.

This sounds like we know almost nothing, but it must be remembered that almost all the discoveries in astronomy have been led by observations, rather than by theories. Edwin Hubble measured the expansion of the Universe in the 1920s, Fritz Zwicky deduced the presence of 'dark matter' in the 1930s, and teams of astronomers studying supernovae in the 1990s discovered that the expansion of the Universe seems to be accelerating. And our knowledge is continuously expanding. The theory of dark energy is only a little over ten years old, so before that we only knew of a quarter of the Universe. Around 60 years before that we had no knowledge of the possible existence of dark matter, meaning that we only knew of a twentieth. Before the advent of radio astronomy we didn't have a true feel for quite how much gas was in the Universe, so we only really knew of the stars – limiting ourselves to less than one per cent of the contents of the Universe. It was only in the 1920s that we had proof of galaxies outside our own, and since we believe there are somewhere in the region of 100 billion galaxies in the visible Universe, we were only surveying a tiny, tiny fraction of it.

Even many of the known facts are contested, some more justifiably than others. The Big Bang and the expansion of the Universe are widely accepted, though there are a small number of scientists who are trying to find plausible alternative theories

to match the observations (so far without success). The presence of dark matter is not completely accepted, with some astronomers (admittedly a minority) investigating the possibility that Einstein's theory of gravity needs to be modified when applied on the largest scales. Dark energy is the most controversial of these, partly because it is a very young idea (15 years is nothing on the normal timescales of fundamental scientific discoveries!) and partly because there is no understanding of what it might actually be, something that makes all scientists rather uneasy. It is simply a name assigned to an observational effect.

Relativity and the Speed of Light

How do we measure the speed of light, and how do we know it is constant?

Rob Hawthorne (Sky at Night cameraman) and Mike Poole (Manningtree, Essex)

The speed of light was first measured using the motion of Jupiter's moons, observing them pass into Jupiter's shadow or cast a shadow on the planet's cloud-tops. It was Ole Rømer who, in 1676, found that the transits of the moons were earlier than predicted when Jupiter was closer to us, and later when it was further away. The reason was that the transits were happening exactly when predicted, but the light took slightly longer to get here when Jupiter was further away, meaning that we observed the transit slightly later. Rømer thus calculated that light travelled at such a speed that it would take 22 minutes to cross the Earth's orbit.

In the 1720s, James Bradley observed that the precise positions of the stars change if you are moving relative to them. This is similar to the reason why the front windscreen of a moving car gets so much wetter than the rear windscreen, though obviously involving much higher speeds! Over the course of a year the Earth does just that, and by observing the star Gamma Draconis, which passed almost directly overhead from Bradley's location, he calculated that light travelled 10,210 times faster than the Earth travelled around its orbit, making the Earth's orbit around 14 light-minutes across.

One of the most precise calculations of the speed of light is to accurately calculate the frequency and the wavelength of a light beam, as the two multiplied together give the speed of light. We now define the speed of light as being 299,792,458 metres per second. In fact, it is exactly that value, as in 1983 the General Conference of Weights and Measures decreed that 'The metre is the length of the path travelled by light in vacuum during a time interval of 1/299 792 458 of a second.'

Thus any further changes to the speed of light are in fact changes to the definition of the length of a metre. This definition is in keeping with that used by Albert Einstein, who treated space and time in a similar way, and used the speed of light to convert from a unit of space to a unit of time.

If the speed of light is variable over significant periods of time then we would need a good deal of rethinking. It appears in some of the most fundamental laws of physics, and so would change the way atoms behaved. Our measurements of the early Universe indicate that atoms have not changed their behaviour, which means that either the speed of light has remained constant, or some other fundamental 'constants' have changed their value to compensate.

Why can nothing travel faster than the speed of light, and what would be the benefits if we could?

Arthur Holden (Woodstock) and Steven Halley (Bridgwater, Somerset)

First of all, it would contravene all of Einstein's theories. Secondly, if you could travel at the speed of light your mass would become infinite and time would stand still, one of which could be considered a disadvantage and the other an advantage. We accelerate particles to within 99.999 per cent of the speed of light in particle accelerators, but we can't actually get any closer due to the immense energies required.

There have been reports from the OPERA experiment, based at CERN in Geneva, that sub-atomic particles called neutrinos have been observed to travel a fraction faster than the speed of light. The experiment relies on precisely timing how long the neutrinos take to travel from a source to a detector 700 kilometres away. It was observed that the neutrinos appeared to arrive around 60 billionths of a second earlier than they should of had they travelled at the speed of light, thus breaking the fundamental speed limit by a tiny amount. Of course, the measurement is incredibly difficult, and relies not only on precise timings, but also on very accurate measurement of the distance they have travelled.

There is much investigation taking place as to the cause of this potentially paradigm-shifting result, though most physicists (including the team who made the measurement) are of the opinion that there are probably additional anomalous effects that have not been taken into account, possibly with the measurements of distances or time. At the same time, different experiments around the world are attempting to reproduce the measurement, though so far none has been successful. Of course, by the time you read this the situation may well have changed (such is the danger with discussing such recent results!), though I [CN] find it very unlikely that Einstein will be proved to be incorrect.

If a spaceship travelling at the speed of light produced a 'headlight' beam, would that beam be travelling at twice the speed of light?

Adrian Alemson (Douglas, Isle of Man)

Well, a spaceship can't travel at the speed of light, so let's imagine one travelling at three-quarters the speed of light. One of the things that Einstein taught us was that the speed of light is a constant and identical for all observers, no matter where they are or how fast they are travelling. So the spaceship would measure the light leaving at the speed of light, and any oncoming vehicles would see it approaching them at the speed of light. This sounds very contradictory, but is just one of many weird effects of travelling at very high speeds.

To a stationary observer, the craft would be approaching very quickly, and so the light would be tremendously 'blueshifted', being shifted up in frequency by a significant factor. At three-quarters the speed of light, that factor is around 50 per cent, so the wavelength of the headlight would appear to be 50 per cent shorter than it would be if the spacecraft were standing still. If the spacecraft had red headlights, then they would appear blue to anyone they were approaching. Similarly, if the spacecraft approached a red traffic light, it would see it as blue – just think of the mayhem on the intergalactic highways!

If the speed of light cannot be exceeded, then what is the relative speed of separation of two objects travelling at more than half the speed of light in opposite directions?

Phil Clarke (Hastings, East Sussex)

One of the odd features of Einstein's theory of relativity is that, when travelling at high speeds, distances and time durations seem to be changed relative to those of someone who is not moving. If two spacecraft left the Earth in opposite directions at half the speed of light, then they would see each other receding at around four-fifths the speed of light. If they increased their speed to four-fifths the speed of light, then to each other they would appear to be travelling away from each other at 97 per cent of the speed of light. No matter how fast a speed they travelled at, they would never observe each other travelling at more than the speed of light.

If a photon travels at the speed of light, it presumably experiences no time passing, so are photons immortal?

Maude Agombar (Salisbury, Wiltshire) and Peter Belcher (Chichester, West Sussex)

The faster an object moves, the shorter the length of time it experiences relative to something that is not moving. Since a photon travels at the speed of light, it experiences no time passing. So while we see a photon take eight minutes to travel from the Sun to the Earth, from its point of view that journey would take no time at all.

So a photon is not really immortal; it simply doesn't experience time at all.

If light travels at 300,000 kilometres (186,000 miles) per second, how fast does 'force' travel? If the Sun were to suddenly 'disappear', how long would it take for the Earth's orbit to be affected?

Andrew Timms (Sussex) and Colin Andrew Price (Northwich, Cheshire)

The force of gravity travels at the speed of light, and so the Sun's loss would be felt just over eight minutes after the Sun disappeared. Of course, anyone still on the Earth would see the Sun disappear at exactly the same time as its gravitational effect stopped, so from our point of view the two things would occur simultaneously.

Does a photon of light have a mass?

Paul (Weymouth, Dorset) and Ken Stephenson (Cockermouth, Cumbria)

A photon has no mass at all. It does have momentum, though, but that is related to the energy of the photon and not to its mass – a photon's momentum is its energy divided by the speed of light. This is the origin of a phenomenon called 'radiation pressure', whereby the momentum of a photon of light can be transferred to an object that absorbs or reflects it, which is how solar sails work.

If you know where the Earth is in relation to other celestial bodies, can you predict where it will be in the future and send a radio signal?

Malcolm Dewey (Bognor Regis, West Sussex)

We can work out fairly accurately where the Earth will be in relation to other

celestial bodies, at least over human timescales. Over longer timescales, say millions of years, small effects from tiny objects in the Solar System can add up to generate a large uncertainty in where the Earth can be. The same is true of most of the other large objects in the Solar System, such as the planets. The smaller objects, such as asteroids and comets, are particularly susceptible to tiny effects, sometimes being observed in a slightly different position from where they were expected to be and their positions can sometimes be hard to predict over as short a time as years or decades.

Radio waves travel at the speed of light, which is not an infinite speed but it is pretty quick. It equates to around one foot (30 centimetres) every billionth of a second. This means that every signal we send is in effect communicating with the future, and every signal we receive originated in the past. We often use the speed of light to measure the vast distances in astronomy, with one light year – the distance light travels in one year – being around 10 million million kilometres (6 million million miles). There are examples which can be used to measure shorter distances. For example, the Moon is around one light-second away, so the *Apollo* astronauts were relaying information with a one-second delay, with ground control hearing about it around a second after it actually happened. (During that intervening second the Moon moves about one kilometre around its orbit, though this is too small a distance to require any compensation in terms of communication equipment.) The Sun is just over eight light-minutes away, so radio waves from the Sun tell us what was happening eight minutes ago. The most distant planet, Neptune, is around four light-hours away.

The speed of light is so fast, however, that actually sending useful messages into the future is not possible. Let's consider the Earth moving around the Sun. In another six months, the Earth will be on the other side of the Sun. If we were to send a radio signal in that direction now, however, it would take only around 16 minutes for the signal to get to that point, whizzing straight past and continuing out through the Solar System. In six months' time, the signal we emitted would have travelled a reasonable fraction of the distance to the next nearest star.

Of course, if you were on a spaceship half a light year away, your radio signals would take six months to reach the Earth and so, by the time they got to the Solar System, the Earth would have moved to the other side of the Sun. The situation is slightly more complicated because the signals you would be picking up from the Earth would have left six months previously, so the position you were measuring would be out by six months as well. This is not a problem yet, however, as all the space probes we have ever launched are at distances measured in light-hours. Even the furthest probe from Earth, *Voyager 1*, is only 17 light-hours away, which pales in significance to most astronomical distances.

Why do we say light travels as a wave, rather than in a straight line?

David Gay (Hull)

The proper term for what is usually called 'light' is an 'electromagnetic wave'. It is a combination of electric and magnetic fields oscillating up and down in a wave-like motion. The distance the light moves between consecutive oscillations is called a 'wavelength', and tells us the colour of the light.

The wave does, however, travel in a straight line. Imagine a string, held tightly between two people, which is plucked to start a little wave. The string wiggles up

and down, making a wave, but that wave travels along the string in a straight line.

Of course, the path of light can be bent, if it is reflected off a mirror, refracted through a lens (or any other material with a different refractive index), or diffracted around a sharp edge. The same is true of many other waves as well. Waves in the ocean travel in straight lines, but at each point the individual bits of water simply move in small wiggles. This is why a boat out at sea does not get pushed along by the waves, but instead bobs up and down. Water waves are also 'refracted' in a sense, as the shallow water near a beach bends their path to cause them to travel directly towards the shore.

As the furthest galaxies are observed to be accelerating, are their clocks running much slower? Is the age of the Universe 13.7 billion years to an observer in the most distant galaxy?

Alan Jones (Finchley, London)

The apparent acceleration of the distant galaxies is due to the expansion of the Universe, and not because they are really moving away from us with a physical velocity in the normal sense. Therefore the normal rules of time dilation do not apply. Of course, we see the most distant galaxies when the Universe was a lot younger, as the light takes such long periods of time to travel through the cosmos. If we could pick up signals from a cosmic alarm clock in the most distant galaxies observed, it would not yet have passed one billion years.

However, anyone living in that galaxy would be in the same situation, seeing the Milky Way as it was billions of years ago, though they would still measure the Universe as being the same age as we do, at 13.7 billion years.

How much slower does time pass near the Sun than it does on Earth due to the gravitational effect?

Paul Foster (Clapham, London)

The gravitational time dilation on the surface of the Sun is a few million times higher than that on the Earth's surface, and yet clocks would appear to tick a tiny amount slower. The difference would mean that clocks on the surface of the Sun would gain a second every ten days or so.

A somewhat smaller effect is the difference between the time experienced in Earth orbit compared with that on the surface, with the difference being measured as a few parts in ten million million. While this sounds negligible, it means that the clocks on global positioning system (GPS) satellites lose around 45 microseconds per day compared with those on the ground, with around 7 microseconds per day gained by the fact that the GPS satellites are moving very quickly. Since the entirety of GPS is based on timing, these offsets are significant, and would create errors amounting to tens of kilometres per day if not compensated for!

Gravity

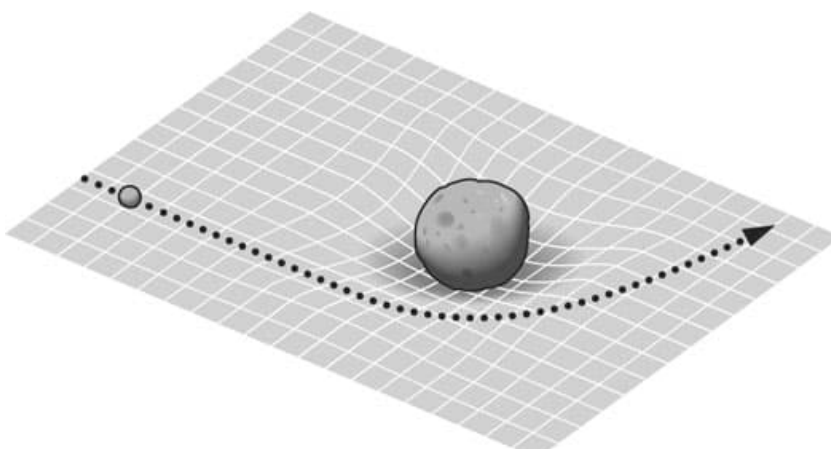
If photons of light are massless, how does gravity bend their path or prevent them from leaving a black hole?

Peter Burgess (Gloucester)

The action of gravity can be interpreted as the warping of space (and time). This means that anything travelling through that region of space – even photons – will travel along a curved path. In fact, the mass of the objects that is travelling through space doesn't even matter.

A frequently discussed physics thought experiment is to drop a bullet at the same time as firing one from a gun sideways. Both bullets actually hit the ground at the same time, since they both experience the same acceleration due to gravity – it's just that the one fired from the gun has travelled a significant distance horizontally as well.

A photon of light experiences the same acceleration due to gravity, and so a laser beam fired sideways would in principle hit the floor at the same time as both bullets. The problem is that the photons are moving so fast that they quickly run out of ground, but if there were enough ground then this is what would happen. The fact there is not enough ground is what limits this to being a 'thought experiment', which is merely imagined rather than actually carried out.



The distortion of space-time by gravity is similar to the distortion of a rubber sheet by a weight. All particles will travel on curved paths, just like a marble rolled across the sheet.

Is gravity really a force, or is it just our perception of the way space is warped

by the presence of matter?

Roy Waghome (Leigh-on-Sea, Essex)

To all intents and purposes, in day-to-day life gravity can be thought of as a force, and is well described by Newton's equations, which he wrote down way back in the seventeenth century. For a full treatment of the effect, however, one must consider Einstein's theories of gravity, where it is better imagined as a distortion of space-time. The way this distortion manifests itself is to give the appearance of an attractive force between two objects.

For the vast majority of purposes, Newtonian gravity is accurate enough, and most space probes do not have to take Einstein's theories into account. The full Einsteinian treatment is only normally required when dealing with incredibly high gravitational fields, such as those near a black hole.

How do we know that gravity has the same strength throughout the whole Universe?

Peter Burr (Brighton)

We don't *know* that it has the same strength, but all the evidence indicates that it has. However far away galaxies are, they appear to experience the same force of gravity as we do, indicating that the action of gravity is the same at the far reaches of the Universe as it is closer to home. For example, the size of a star depends in part on the strength of gravity, and stars in distant galaxies appear to have the same range of sizes as those in the Milky Way.

There are some theories that incorporate changes to the strength of gravity over large distances, though these relate to the force between two in particular circumstances, rather than an intrinsic variation in the strength of gravity throughout the Universe. These theories would mean that the strength of gravity does not decrease with the square of the distance (the well-known 'inverse-square law'), but in some other way. These theories of modified Newtonian gravity are a possible alternative to explaining the observations attributed to dark matter, but they have failed to explain all the observations and are currently ruled out by the majority of cosmologists.

Does gravity have a speed? If so, how is it measured?

Daniel Howard (Beeston, Nottingham)

As far as we can tell, it has the same speed as light. It's hard to be sure, because all observations only travel at the speed of light, so measuring anything faster than that is very hard.

If the technology was available to us, would it be possible to travel to a point in space where we would not be under the influence of gravity?

Steven (Ashton-in-Makerfield, Greater Manchester)

It is very hard to imagine that there is any place where the overall force due to gravity is exactly zero. Gravity reaches an infinite distance, but gets weaker and

weaker. It is possible to imagine a location in the Universe where the gravitational pull of all the galaxies in every direction happen to cancel each other out, but the actual existence of such a location is impossible.

Are gravity waves just a convenient theory to fit our observed facts?

Richard Saddington (Huddersfield, West Yorkshire)

Gravitational waves are a prediction of the theory of gravity, though these were an exercise in theoretical physics rather than an attempt to explain particular facts. While we have never detected gravitational waves, there is considerable effort under way to do so. These measurements rely on detecting tiny variations in the stretching of space due to the passing of a gravitational wave. Just as a sound wave causes the expansion and compression of air (or any other medium), a gravitational wave would cause the expansion and contraction of space-time itself. But the effect is very weak, and even when measuring over lengths of kilometres the stretching predicted is a tiny fraction of the size of a single atom. Such detections also have to be isolated from local effects such as earthquakes, lorries passing by, or even clouds passing overhead!

Although we have not yet detected any gravitational waves, we have good reason to trust in Einstein's theories. A key observation was made in the 1970s, when a very special pulsar was discovered. A pulsar is the remains of a star that was several times more massive than the Sun and which went supernova and left behind a neutron star. This neutron star is emitting beams of radio waves from its magnetic poles, and one of these beams sweeps across the Earth as the neutron star rotates on its axis. Every rotation results in a pulse of radio waves which are detected on Earth, and such objects are called pulsars. The pulsar in question rotates incredibly quickly, spinning on its axis 17 times every second. The rotations of pulsars are one of the most stable and predictable effects we know of, but the timing of this pulsar was seen to not be completely regular. The slight changes in the timing of the pulses led astronomers to deduce that the pulsar was in a binary system with another neutron star and, as it orbited, the radio pulses were taking different times to travel to Earth, sometimes arriving a little earlier than expected and sometimes a little later. This second neutron star is also likely to be emitting similar radio waves from its magnetic poles, but its orientation is suitable to cause the beam to point towards Earth. The two neutron stars, each of which is less than 20 kilometres across, orbit each other in less than eight hours.

The startling discovery, and the one that applies to gravitational radiation, was that the orbits of the pulsars were shrinking. The shrinking is very slow, with the orbital period decreasing by less than a thousandth of a second every year. This decrease in the orbit means that the system is losing energy, and the only way we know that it can do that is through gravitational waves. The loss of energy is in agreement with Einstein's theories, bolstering support for general relativity. The discovery of this binary pulsar, called 'PSR 1913+16', earned Joseph Taylor and Russell Hulse the 1993 Nobel Prize for Physics.

The immense mass of the galaxy cluster Abell 1689 distorts the light from background galaxies, stretching their images into long arcs.

If light is bent by gravity, then surely the light from distant stars and galaxies has no relation to their actual positions in the sky. Does this affect our understanding of the Big Bang and the Universe as a whole?

Sean Tully (Twickenham, London)

The effect of gravity on light over huge scales is there, but it is very small, and we can measure it so well only thanks to the exquisite images from telescopes today. The distortion of the light, called gravitational lensing, is very dependent on the mass of whatever is doing the lensing. Normally this is due to a galaxy or cluster of galaxies, but smaller objects can have the same effect. In 1919, two simultaneous expeditions were mounted to make careful observations of a solar eclipse in an effort to detect the deflection of light from background stars caused by the Sun. The expeditions were largely successful, and Einstein's theories had one of their first pieces of experimental proof.

Today, the studies of gravitational lensing are one of the best methods we have of measuring the distribution of dark matter. In this way, these distortions have a very profound effect on our understanding of the Universe.

Black Holes

What is on the other side of a black hole?

Maude Agombar (Salisbury, Wiltshire), Chirag Bajaria (London)

Frankly, we simply do not know what is on the other side of a black hole – though perhaps one day we will find out. There are theories as to what happens, but none have been proven. For example, it is predicted that the nature of time and space become reversed, which is something we find extremely hard to imagine!

What happens to all the matter being sucked into black holes?

Gordon Parr (Norden, Rochdale)

We do not know what exactly happens when material falls into a black hole, as we simply don't have the physical knowledge to explain it. One thing that is important to note, however, is that black holes do not simply suck everything in like a vacuum cleaner in space. Rather, material can quite happily orbit a black hole as the Earth orbits the Sun. It is only if the material gets too close that it ends up falling in, never to return.

What size would the mass condense to at the centre of a massive black hole, such as the one at the centre of our Galaxy?

John Thorne (Cardiff)

The only size that is important with respect to a black hole is the event horizon, which is the point beyond which not even light can escape. The size of the event horizon depends on the mass of the black hole, and we can look at a few examples. For example, a black hole with the same mass as the Earth would have an event horizon around a centimetre across. A black hole with the same mass as the Sun, which is nearly a million times more massive than the Earth, would have an event horizon a few kilometres across.

Supermassive black holes, such as the one thought to lie in the centre of our Galaxy, have a mass equivalent to a million Suns, and therefore an event horizon millions of kilometres across – several times the size of the Sun.

Would the escape velocity be different in different black holes, and would it be possible for one to expand so much that the Earth would be affected?

Louise Duggan (Co Longford, Ireland)

When discussing the 'edge' of a black hole, we are usually referring to the event

horizon. This is the point at which the escape velocity reaches the speed of light, and so nothing can escape – not even light. There are only three properties of black holes that seem to be able to vary significantly: their mass, how fast they are rotating, and their electrical charge.

The mass of a black hole determines the distance at which the escape velocity reaches the speed of light, which to all intents and purposes can be considered to be their size. Remember that it is perfectly possible for objects to be in orbit around a black hole. If the Sun suddenly turned into a black hole it would shrink to a few kilometres across but would still have the same mass. The Earth would continue to orbit as it does today, though it would get rather dark!

As discussed in the previous question, a black hole as massive as the one in the centre of our Galaxy, which has a mass equivalent to a million Suns, would have an event horizon several million kilometres across. This is a few times the size of our Sun, and so still much smaller than the Earth's orbit. There are odd effects close to the event horizon of a black hole, however. Objects can be in stable orbits around a black hole as close in as a few times the size of its event horizon, though the exact distance that material can safely orbit is dictated by how fast the black hole is rotating. Any closer, and their orbits decay and the material falls in.

Much further out than this and the adverse effects are vanishingly small, with the black hole having the same gravitational effect as a star of the same mass. While black holes have serious effects in their immediate vicinity, there are none nearby that could ever have any adverse effect on the Earth.

What happens to the gravitational field at the event horizon of a black hole?

Colin Spragg (Carmarthen, South Wales)

Nothing particularly special happens at the event horizon of a black hole. The gravitational attraction simply gets strong enough that the escape velocity reaches the speed of light. Since nothing particularly special happens, it would in principle be possible to cross the event horizon without even realising it.

This may sound surprising, but a strong gravitational pull is not necessarily a problem. The real difficulties arise when the gravitational pull at one end of an object is much stronger than the gravitational pull at the other, an effect similar to that which causes tides on the Earth. The important effect is not how strong the gravitational pull is, but rather how rapidly it changes with distance from the centre. This is a cosmic equivalent of the statement that it is not falling that hurts, it's hitting the ground!

In the case of most black holes, such as those that are remnants of dead stars, these tidal forces become very strong well before an object crosses the event horizon. But for a supermassive black hole the event horizon is much larger, and can be so far from the black hole that the tides at that distance are not very strong at all. This would mean that someone flying past a black hole could fly through the event horizon without being ripped apart, or possibly even noticing. Of course, once within the event horizon they would never be able to escape and so eventually the tides would become strong enough to be rip them apart – at which point they would certainly notice!

What would it look like to fall into a black hole?

Ray Finnegan (Shrewsbury, Shropshire)

The best description of what one would experience is ‘spaghettification’, which is simply to say that objects are stretched out until their atoms are pulled apart. If you were falling in feet-first, then the gravitational force near your head would be much less than that at your feet, which would therefore be pulled at a faster rate, stretching you out like a piece of spaghetti. Of course, once you become spaghettified, it is likely that you wouldn’t know much about it for very long at all!

Since matter falling into a black hole experiences time dilation which reaches infinity as it enters the black hole, surely from our point of view no matter should yet have entered the black hole. Where is the error in my physics?

Geoff Puplett (Shropshire)

On the face of it, this would seem to be accurate, though you are right that it seems paradoxical. As a person nears a black hole they would seem to move more and more slowly from the point of view of a distant observer, so should they not appear to stop completely as they passed the event horizon? There is one way of thinking about it that may help. Imagine that the way of monitoring time is to pick up the ticking of someone’s watch. As person ‘A’ falls into a black hole, person ‘B’, who sits at a safe distance, would hear the ticks get further and further apart as the effect of time dilation increases. But after a certain number of ticks, ‘A’ would cross the event horizon, and no more ticks would be able to leave the black hole. So person ‘B’ would eventually hear the last tick from ‘A’. Now replace the ticks with photons of light, and you’ll see that person ‘B’ can only pick up a certain number of photons of light from person ‘A’ before they cross the event horizon.

Time dilation is only one of the effects of a black hole. The huge mass means that light experiences a gravitational redshift as it climbs out of the gravitational well of the black hole. So not only do the ticks get further and further apart, but the signals get weaker and weaker, and are stretched to longer and longer wavelengths. This is why the surface of a black hole does not glow brightly, as all the photons that are leaving it are so incredibly weak that they carry very little energy indeed.

Is ‘black hole’ a cosmological misnomer? Should it be ‘black sphere or globe’, and is there any requirement that all black spheres be spherical or globular?

John Richmond (Surrey)

The name black hole originates from the American physicist John Wheeler and, like many names in astronomy, is particularly misleading. Firstly, they are not holes; a black hole is spherical since it is defined by its gravitational field. And secondly, they are certainly not black. After all, an object that cannot be seen cannot have a colour. If you were to look at a black hole, all you would see is the distorted light from whatever lay behind it. Though it must be admitted that ‘black hole’ sounds rather more catchy than ‘invisible sphere’!

Do black holes eventually swallow up the galaxies that surround them, including the dark matter? If they do, could black holes eventually combine and merge with each other to crush the Universe back down to a singularity?

Simon Hewitt (London)

To discuss this we must look so far into the future that all we can do is speculate. While black holes will eventually swallow up much of the material around them, as each particle's orbit slowly decays, the process will be very slow. So slow, in fact, that a significant fraction of the stars in galaxies will be flung out into intergalactic space before they can be consumed. What happens to them is much more uncertain, and of course they may end up being captured by a different black hole.

In terms of black holes merging, if the latest theories involving dark energy are to be believed, then in trillions upon trillions of years the Universe will have expanded so much that the remaining black holes will be so far apart that they will have very little effect on each other at all.

Does every galaxy have a black hole at its centre?

Jon Gould (Somerset)

So far as we can tell, every large galaxy does harbour a massive black hole at its centre. This is thought to be so even in some of the larger globular clusters, which are much less massive than a typical galaxy but which are still very dense at their centres. An example of this is Omega Centauri.

The best evidence for the black hole at the centre of our Galaxy is the motion of the stars in its immediate vicinity. They orbit so quickly that this can only be explained by an object millions of times more massive than the Sun. Since we can't see anything there, the only thing it can possibly be is a black hole.

We've even seen evidence of two black holes in the cores of merging galaxies. It is expected that these will eventually merge, probably on a relatively short timescale in astronomical terms, so one has to get lucky to see a galactic collision at just the right time.

If all the matter and energy in the Universe were located in one single place, creating a 'mega-massive' black hole, what would be the diameter of the event horizon of such an object?

Tim Sheridan (London)

The answer to this question is somewhat surprising, and also a little non-intuitive. We must first clarify what we mean by an event horizon, which is technically called the Schwarzschild radius after the German physicist Karl Schwarzschild who first derived the relevant equations. For a given mass of object, the Schwarzschild radius is the radius at which the escape velocity reaches the speed of light. If an object is smaller than the Schwarzschild radius, then it is a black hole; if it is larger, it is not. For example, the Schwarzschild radius for something the mass of the Sun is around three kilometres, and since the Sun is much, much larger that this it is not a black hole – which is rather fortunate for us.

The entire visible Universe is incredible massive, and is probably only a small fraction of the entire thing – most of which we can't see because light has not had sufficient time to travel far enough. We can estimate that the visible Universe contains roughly one trillion galaxies (a trillion is one million million), each of which has a mass equivalent to a trillion Suns. Using these numbers, the Schwarzschild

radius would be hundreds of billions of light years, much larger than what we can see today. The interpretation of this is that we are inside the Universe's event horizon, which simply means that we can never leave it!

Such calculations are interesting, but make far more assumptions than are appropriate for such a complex beast as the entire visible Universe. The calculations for the Schwarzschild radius are suitable for a single source that exists in isolation, and which is also relatively small compared to the size scales being studied. When we consider scales comparable to the Schwarzschild radius or smaller, as in the case of the Universe, we should really take into account the complex effects of general relativity – something that there is not space to do here. So while they are interesting and fun to consider, these calculations do not really apply to the Universe as a whole.

Could two black holes collide, and if so what would happen when they did?

Peter Underwood (Harrietsham, Kent), Robert Smith (Durham) and Maude Agombar (Salisbury, Wiltshire)

Yes, they can, just as two planets or stars can collide, though the occurrence is very rare. It only really happens when two black holes are in orbit around each other, most likely the remnant of a binary star system, both components of which have died and become black holes. Such binary black holes will gradually spiral in towards each other, eventually merging to create a more massive black hole. In doing so, they would emit gravitational waves, and the collision of two black holes is one of the signatures that the current gravitational wave detectors are searching for – though none have been found yet.

Every large galaxy we have studied appears to have an extremely massive black hole in its centre, and when two galaxies merge the two black holes would eventually merge together. The black holes themselves aren't visible, but the incredibly hot material surrounding them emits X-rays. In 2011, observations with the Chandra X-ray satellite showed that the galaxy NGC 3393 appears to have two massive black holes in its centre, most likely the result of the merger of two smaller galaxies around a billion years ago.

Unexplained Phenomena

What was the phenomenon that the Three Wise Men followed to Bethlehem?

Brian Mills (Hildenborough, Kent)

When considering the star of Bethlehem we have to admit that we do not have a great deal to guide us, and we are also decidedly unsure about our dates. The one thing about which we can be absolutely certain is that Christ was not born on 25 December AD 1. He cannot have been born in the year 0, because there was no year 0. In our calendar, therefore, the year 1 BC was followed immediately by AD 1, and this has caused confusion in our own time, when it was widely believed that the new millennium would begin on 1 January 2000. Predictably, governments fell into this trap, and declared a public holiday on the last day of 1999. The new millennium actually began on 1 January 2001. In any case, the entire issue is meaningless, and is only relevant to the Christian creed.

So when was Christ actually born? Again, there is no general agreement. The British astronomer and historian David Hughes, who has probably given as much attention to the problem as anyone else, prefers 7 BC. If we take this as being the earliest possible date, and 4 BC as the latest, we have a time span of three years, and this helps us pin down any celestial phenomena. Anything before 7 BC or after 4 BC can probably be ruled out, and this narrows our search a great deal.

But the real problem is the lack of information. The star of Bethlehem is mentioned in the Bible only once, in the Gospel according to Matthew, and nowhere else. So let us begin by quoting Matthew, Chapter 2 verses 1–2 and 7–10:

> 1 In the time of King Herod, after Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea, wise men from the East came to Jerusalem, 2 asking, 'Where is the child who has been born king of the Jews? For we observed his star at its rising, and have come to pay him homage …'
>
> 7 Then Herod secretly called for the wise men and learned from them the exact time when the star had appeared. 8 Then he sent them to Bethlehem, saying, 'Go and search diligently for the child; and when you have found him, bring me word so that I may also go and pay him homage.'
>
> 9 When they had heard the king, they set out; and there, ahead of them, went the star that they had seen at its rising, until it stopped over the place where the child was. 10 When they saw that the star had stopped, they were overwhelmed with joy.

That is absolutely all. The other Gospels are silent, and the star is not mentioned anywhere else, so our information is very limited from the outset. There are also translation issues, particularly in that seeing a star 'at its rising' could equally mean 'in the East'. I wonder how many theories have been put forward to explain the star?

I [PM] believe that there are several possibilities:

1: The whole story is a myth, in which case we can have no idea of its origin.
2: The star was supernatural.
3: The story was invented by Matthew to add colour to his account of the nativity, or was added later by another author.
4: The star was a genuine astronomical phenomenon.
5: The star was a UFO – or, if you like, a flying saucer – dispatched to Earth by some alien civilisation far away in space.

What, then, about the Wise Men? They may have been Zoroastrians, a cult founded in 1000 BC. Zoroaster was a monotheist, a person who believed in only one god, and who believed there was a time when a king would change the realm into one of security and peace. Something which, alas, has not yet happened.

The magi were well respected, and were very influential. Of course they were astrologers as well as stargazers, and this is a very important point, because for them the appearance of the star, assuming it appeared, was primarily of astrological importance. So let us examine the various possibilities. Possibility 1 (the whole story is a myth) can tell us nothing at all. And possibility 2 (the star was supernatural) is frankly beyond the realm of this book. Possibility 3 (that Matthew may have invented the story) is conceivable, but somehow it doesn't seem likely. Leaving 4 for the moment, we come to possibility 5 (the star was a spaceship). We will not say that this is absolutely impossible, for there must be many people in the Universe who are far more advanced than we are, but this doesn't seem very probable. So we come back to number 4: was the star a genuine astronomical phenomenon?

First of all, we can rule out Venus, Jupiter and any other bright star or planet. Remember, the wise men were stargazers primarily, and were very familiar with the sky. If they were fooled by Venus, they would hardly have been very wise.

So we must list a few requirements: (1) the star must have been unusual; (2) it must have been conspicuous; (3) it may have been seen only by the wise men; (4) it must have appeared during the period from 7 to 4 BC; (5) either it cannot have lasted for long, or it must have appeared, vanished, and reappeared at a suitable moment; (6) it must have moved in a way quite unlike any normal star or planet.

Candidly, the only object of the night sky which could fulfil all these requirements is a flying saucer – and this we have discounted. So we must try to find something that satisfies most of the requirements.

It must have been unusual, for otherwise the wise men would have expected it. It must also have been conspicuous, but the likelihood that it was seen only by the wise men is another limitation. Had it appeared over a much larger range, others would have seen it. Moving in a way quite unlike that of another star or planet, really does not fit many of the options, so let us see what we find if we delve deeper. Can the star have been a comet? Halley's Comet came back at least ten years before the dates in question, and anyway it does not fit the other requirements. The possibility of a brilliant supernova has been suggested often enough, but a supernova does not suddenly appear and then vanish. If it had been a supernova, it would have lasted for a long time, and Herod would have seen it. Neither would it have moved in the way the star of Bethlehem was said to have.

A theory favoured by a great many people, though not by me, is that the star was due to a planetary conjunction, i.e. two planets appearing very close to each other.

Just occasionally this can happen, and there was a conjunction of Jupiter and Saturn in 7 BC. However, I feel that this can be ruled out straight away, because it would not have been really spectacular, it would have lasted for some time, and anyone could have seen it. Moreover, the planets were never close enough to merge into one object as seen with the naked eye. The two brightest planets are Venus and Jupiter, and when close together they make a brave showing, as they did, for example, on the 23 February 1999 when they were only 8 minutes of arc apart. Way back in 1818 (3 January), Venus actually occulted (i.e. obscured) Jupiter, but there is no record of this, partly because the planets were close to the Sun at the time, and partly because it would only have been visible from a poorly populated area in the Far East. The next occultation of Jupiter and Venus will be seen at an elongation of 10 degrees from the Sun, on 14 September 2123.

We seem to be disposing of most of our possibilities, but the vital point is that the star of Bethlehem, if it were anything at all, was seen only briefly and by a few people in a restricted area. At this point, I would put forward the only theory I believe can account for what St Matthew says. It is possible that the star of Bethlehem was in fact two brilliant meteors. Meteors may appear from any direction at any moment, and they can be really brilliant. Occasionally, a meteor may outshine the Moon, or even the Sun. Suppose, therefore, that the Wise Men saw a brilliant meteor (a fireball) reaching across the sky and lasting for some seconds before finally vanishing in the direction of Bethlehem. After a few minutes or possibly an hour or two, another meteor appeared, following exactly the same path. This would have been very unusual indeed, but it does fit the facts except for the suggestion that the star stopped over the birthplace of Christ. No meteor can do that.

I feel myself coming back to a statement attributed to Sherlock Holmes: 'If something mysterious is found, eliminate all the impossibilities. When you have done this, the least improbable of the remainder, however far-fetched, must be the truth.' So the suggestion made here is that although two meteors do not by any means answer all the problems raised by the star of Bethlehem, they do so more successfully than any other theory. The chances of us finding any further evidence now, after so long a time, is negligible. This means, that the mystery must remain. Make up your own mind!

Is there any truth in the idea that Planet X, or Nibiru, exists, or that it poses a danger to Earth?

Many, many people, including Rebecca Kitteringham (Halifax, West Yorkshire), David Butler (Larkfield, Kent) and Brendan Malone (Rugby)

This relates to the idea that there is a planet, or smaller object, in the outer Solar System that will eventually collide with the Earth. In short, there is absolutely no proof that a planet of this kind exists, and who suggested the name Nibiru I know not. If a planet like this did exist we would certainly know by now because of its gravitational pull on bodies we can see, but there is absolutely no trace of anything of the kind. There have also been surveys of the regions that have come up empty, apart from finding objects that are roughly the same size as Pluto. All these objects stay well in the outer depths of the Solar System. Certainly there are no planets lurking that could possibly be any danger to Earth.

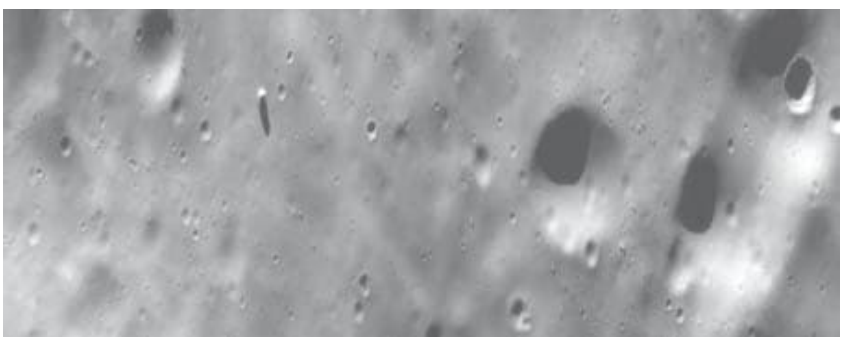
The greatest danger to Earth from anything in the Solar System comes from objects that orbit near Earth, of which there are a reasonable number. These are all

asteroids, and none has been found yet that poses a threat. There's no guarantee we won't find a dangerous near-Earth asteroid, but numerous groups are constantly on the look-out for them, diligently scanning the skies.

A large monolith has been seen on Phobos. Can you explain what it is?

Mike Keating (Tooting, London)

It is a perfectly ordinary piece of rock and there is nothing unusual about it. Phobos is littered with rocks, and some of them look fairly square, especially when combined with shadows. It is so easy to see an ordinary rock, and then try and turn it into something unusual. There are some people who will make up remarkable stories about very ordinary features. The classic case here is the 'face on Mars' photographed from the *Viking* spacecraft, which does from one aspect look very like a face. The appearance was due to a combination of the relatively low resolution of the images and the lighting conditions, and seen from another angle it bears no resemblance at all. Another more recent example was a rock which, from the point of view of *Spirit*, did look an awful lot like a human form sitting on the Martian surface.



What looks like a regular monolith on the surface of Phobos is actually just a trick of the light.

We have to admit that some people will let their imaginations run riot!

Patrick Moore and The Sky at Night

What was the event that inspired you to take up astronomy with such a passion?

Adrian Barnard (Didcot, Oxfordshire)

QUITE SIMPLY, READING a book when I was just seven years old. It was called *The Story of the Solar System*, by GF Chambers, and I read it through and was hooked. It had belonged to my mother, who was mildly interested. In fact it was an adult book, but my reading was all right and I had no problem with it. As I sit here in my study and look at my mantelpiece I can see that little book together with its companion, *The Story of the Stars*. Both were published in 1898!

What was the first thing you saw through a telescope?

Julia Wilkinson (Rochdale, Lancashire)

The Moon! A family friend, Major AE Levin, had his observatory at Selsey, where I now live (I didn't back then), and with his 6-inch telescope showed me lunar craters. I was seven years old, and since that moment the Moon has been my main astronomical interest.

A few of the many books in Patrick's study, including the ones that inspired him to start astronomy.

After years of observing, what aspect of astronomy gives you the most personal satisfaction now?

Lulu Hancock (Dudley, West Midlands)

There are really two answers to this. First and foremost, the joy of using my telescopes to introduce people to the sky – particularly youngsters. Your beginner of today is your researcher of tomorrow, and I know plenty of teenagers and pre-teens who have started off in my observatory, and have since left me far behind. Secondly, the thrill of observing never fades. There is always something new to use and something new to discover.

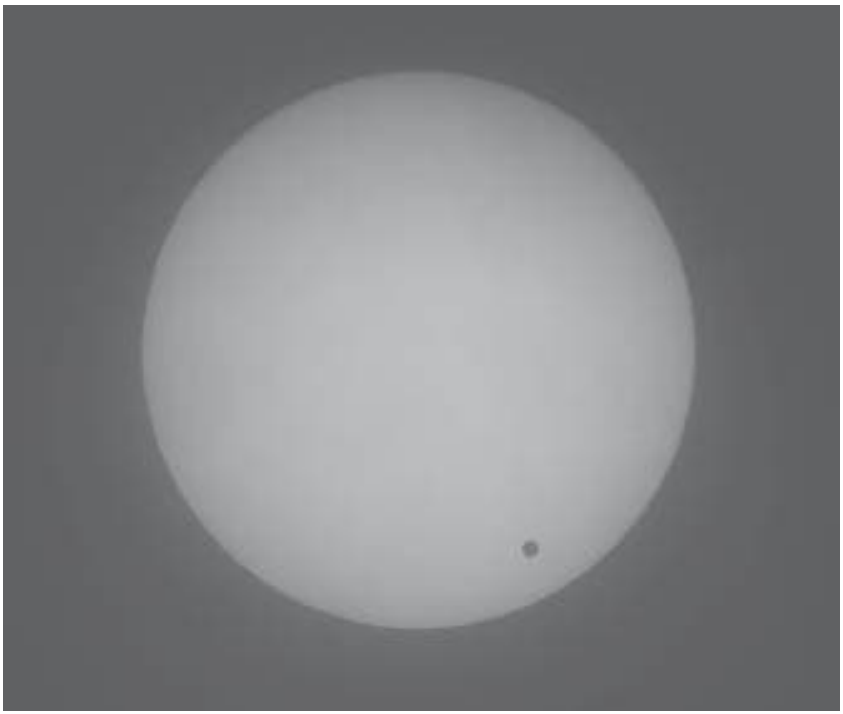
What has been your most exciting observation seen through your own telescopes? If you could see any sight again, what would it be?

Adrian Bright (Littlebury, Essex), Ray Sharman (Hunston, Chichester) and Adam Bootle

(Romford, Essex)

My most exciting observation? I think I've got to say the transit of Venus, in 2004. These transits occur very occasionally. There are two, separated by eight years, and then no more for over a century. The 2004 transit passed right over my Selsey observatory, and we had quite a gathering there – telescopes of all kinds and varieties, and many astronomers. Venus came into view round the tree at the end of my garden, and a minute or two later drew on to the Sun's disc as a black circle. We watched it for the next 2-3 hours as it crossed the disc and moved off the other side.

So the transit of Venus was a great day. I would love to see the last transit of the century, in June 2012, but it's not so well seen from my home in Selsey. Most people are going east, but if I were fit enough I would go to North Norway, where there is a midnight sun. Sadly, I doubt if I'll be fit enough to go, but I'll make it if I can.



Venus passing across the disc of the Sun in 2004 during a transit. It was photographed by Adrian Janetta from Northumberland using a 10" telescope and a solar filter.

After looking up to the skies over the years you must have seen some amazing sights that many of us have yet to see, and viewed celestial objects and their changing states with awe and wonder. With that in mind, what would be the one object in the sky that, if it were gone, you would miss observing the most?

James Fewings (Portsmouth, Hampshire)

The most spectacular thing I've ever seen is a total eclipse of the Sun – there is nothing quite like it. But the object I would miss most? My main subject has always been the Moon, and without the Moon our night sky would seem very barren. I'd also hate to lose Saturn with its rings!

Of all the wonderful observatories and telescopes in the world (professional or amateur) that you have visited, which one has been your personal favourite?

John Pilbeam (Hailsham, East Sussex)

My favourite telescope, not counting my own, is the Lowell Telescope at Flagstaff, Arizona. It is a 24-inch refractor, and Lowell used it to make his observations, which included the 'canals' of Mars. When I had my first view of Mars through Lowell's telescope, I wondered whether I would see canals. I'm delighted to say that I didn't!

I've done a lot of work with the Lowell Telescope, particularly before the first landings on the Moon, and it's definitely my favourite.

My dad thinks the galaxy M81 is better than M82, but I strongly object. M82 has lots of cool dust, but what does M81 have? Which is your favourite of these two, and why?

Sophie, age 11 (Cheltenham)

A very difficult question to answer. M81 is a much more perfect galaxy, and M82 is irregular and ragged. But M82 does contain some unusual and fascinating objects, so that must get my vote. Although both are always worth looking at!

How many episodes of *The Sky at Night* still exist in the BBC archive?

Gary Holmes (Derbyshire) and Robin Flegg (Middlesex)

I think there have been a total of 715 episodes of *The Sky at Night*, though obviously that number is going up by one a month! We've had one episode per month ever since 1957, and there have been several 'specials', so keeping count can be tricky. Not every episode ever broadcast still exists, unfortunately, though the record is complete for the recent past.

The first episodes of *The Sky at Night* were broadcast live and were not recorded. The later ones were recorded, but videotape was expensive, and many tapes were wiped and reused. A few more have been lost in the depths of the BBC archives, sadly, though now and again they crop up. In 2011 a copy of an episode from 1963 was found, which featured an interview with my old friend Arthur C Clarke. I think of all the episodes that could have been found, this would have been one of my favourites.

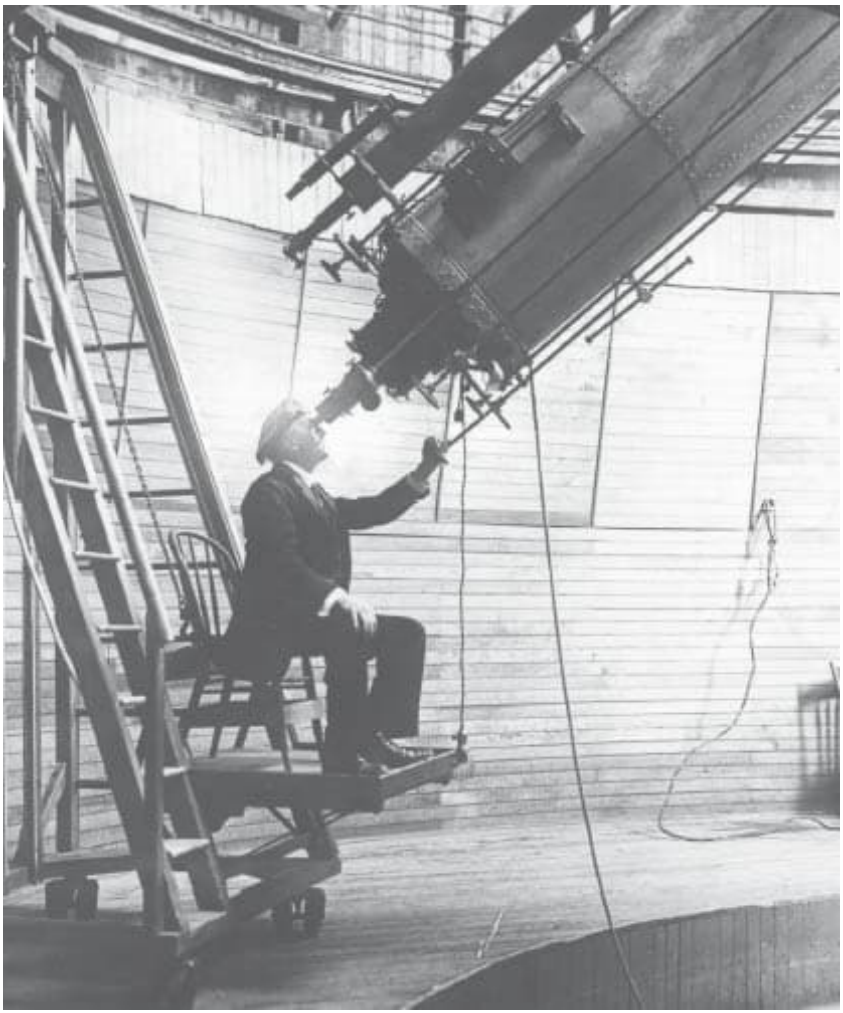
Has Patrick presented every single episode of the programme since 1957? If so, has he never had a holiday?

Terry Fairhall (Chessington, Surrey)

I have never taken a holiday at the time of *The Sky at Night*, and I have missed just

one episode. I ate a goose egg that turned out to be the wrong kind of goose egg. I was rushed into hospital, dangerously ill. That was the only episode I was unable to get to. If I could find that wretched goose, I would wring its neck. Otherwise, I haven't missed any at all.

I had one trip that wasn't actually a holiday, but a round-the-world trip for the 55th *Sky at Night* episode. One of our stops was Hawaii, where there is a range of world-class telescopes. Our producer made a complete hash of the aeroplane bookings, and we had to spend three extra days in Hawaii. Oddly enough, it happened twice!



Patrick using the 24" telescope at Lowell Observatory, near Flagstaff, Arizona.

Of all *the Sky at Night* programmes, do you have a favourite, or a most memorable?

Steve Elliott (Farnborough, Hampshire), Mark Icke (Birchington, Kent), Gordon Rogers (Oxford) and Gary Partington (Spain)

My most memorable *Sky at Night* may seem to you rather an odd choice. I'd been very busy mapping the 'libration areas' of the Moon, right on the edge of the Earth-turned hemisphere, which is very difficult to observe. Under extreme conditions, a little of the far side is turned in our direction and we can see it. We were filming a *Sky at Night* on one of these occasions, and I was actually making a drawing of a crater on the far side of the Moon – that's one programme I'll never forget.

In all of the historic events that you have covered in the show's history, which one single *Sky at Night* episode do you think was the most significant and why?

Robert Bell (Darlington)

I must give my own personal answer to this, I suppose. The very first *Sky at Night* was broadcast in April 1957, and we were ushered in by a comet, Arend-Roland. That was my first view of that comet through my telescope, and was broadcast live. Sadly, we'll never see that comet again, on its way out of the Solar System it was affected by the gravitational pull of Jupiter and thrown into a hyperbolic orbit so that it will never come back. I wonder where it is now? I wish it well!

Could you pick out that one moment in all the televised episodes that you recall with the greatest excitement, and wish you could relive?

Mark Hill (Neilston, East Renfrewshire)

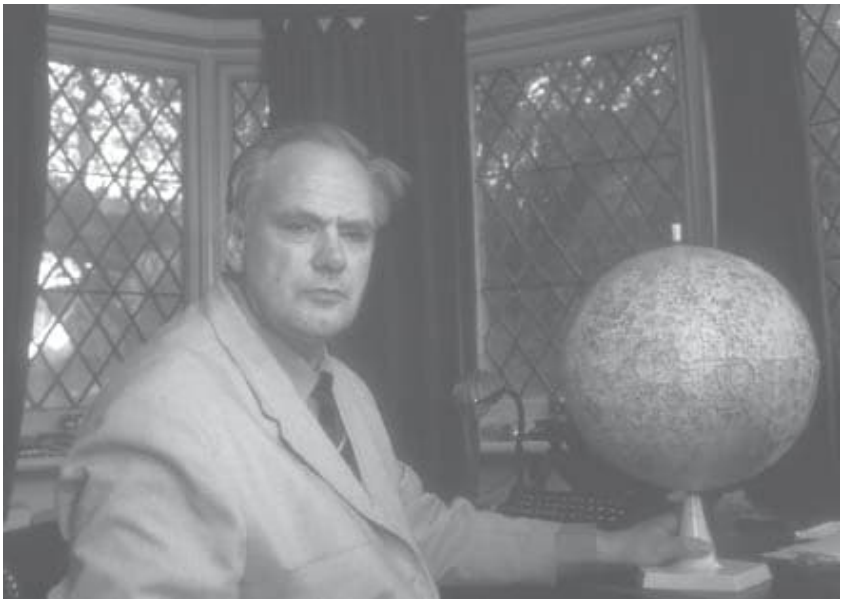
My greatest excitement was during the Moon landings, when I heard Neil Armstrong's voice: 'The Eagle has landed.' We all knew the tremendous risks the astronauts were taking, and there was so much that could have gone wrong. We all felt tremendous relief!

Are there any episodes that contain mistaken predictions or theories that might be best forgotten?

Jamie Richardson (Carlisle)

Like most other people (not counting politicians of course), I've made a great many mistakes in my time. One of these concerned my own favourite subject, the Moon. There was a longstanding argument as to how the Moon's craters got there – were they due to meteoric impact or volcanic action? I was a strong supporter of the volcanic theory. I remember one programme when I put forward a few justifications, which I'm sure were convincing, but I was later proven completely wrong. The craters are all due to impacts.

I remember an episode in the 1980s about Venus. I made a few serious statements about Venus, which were backed up by the best scientific evidence, and every one of which proved to be wrong. We live and learn …



Patrick in his study with one of the globes that are used on the set of *The Sky at Night*.

Over the history of the programme, you must have interviewed some 'greats'. Is there anyone you remember especially well?

Dave Jones (Bognor Regis, West Sussex)

On *The Sky at Night*, I've interviewed many great astronomers. If I had to pick the greatest of them all, I'd pick Sir Bernard Lovell, the great radio astronomer responsible for the Lovell Telescope at Jodrell Bank. I'm pleased to say that he is still with us at the age of 98.

Which event that you have covered gave you most trouble?

Jeff Brown (Whitstable, Kent)

The event that gave me most trouble was a total solar eclipse. It was in 1999, and the zone of totality ran right through Cornwall, where I was. Needless to say, the preceding and following days were brilliantly clear, and the actual eclipse day was cloudy. We made our broadcast as the rain pattered down, and said things like 'dear me', 'tutt tutt' and 'what a pity'.

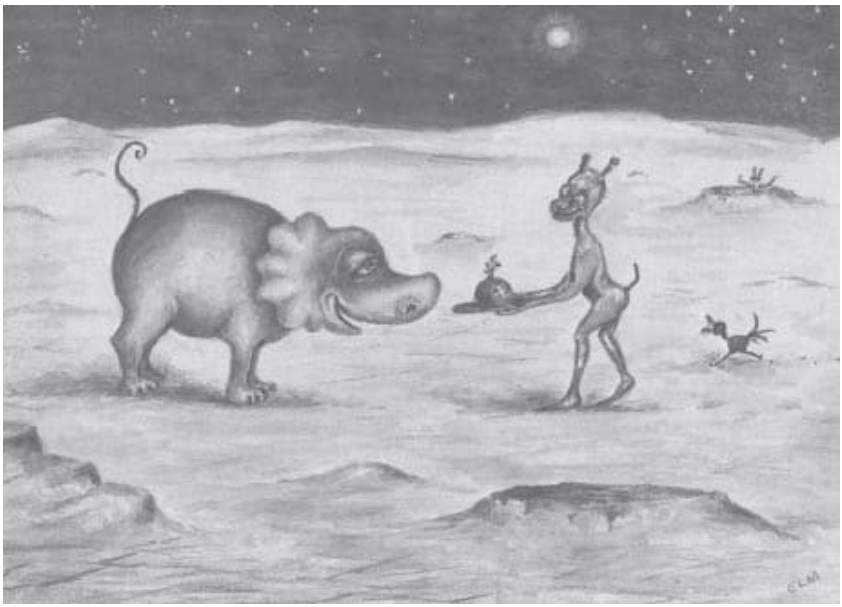
What are the globes that are behind Patrick in his study on *The Sky at Night*?

Gerald Hutt (Okehampton, Devon)

They are globes of the Moon and planets. The Moon globes were sent to me by the Russians at the time when they were sending their probes round the Moon, and had used some of my lunar maps. Some of the early Moon globes sent by the Russians

show blank areas on the far side of the Moon, which hadn't then been mapped. The details were filled in later by orbiting spacecraft, both Russian and American.

Other globes I've acquired in various ways. One, which I can see on my mantelpiece now, I acquired in a very odd way indeed. In 1954, when I was still in an air-force uniform, Oxford University asked me to go down and look at some of the things in their observatory library. I complied and made the trip. As I started to leave, I noticed a little globe in the waste paper basket. I marched back into the observatory and said, 'This is a 1910 Niesten globe of Mars.' 'Yes,' they said, 'we know. We didn't want it.' Thanks very much, I have it now – a proud possession!



One of Patrick's mother's drawings of alien life.

What are the cartoon-like pictures that can sometimes be seen in Patrick's study? They seem to be of very strange creatures. Has the work been published?

Ellen Harteijer (Amsterdam) and Michael Winfield (Derbyshire)

Strange is the right word! They were drawn by my mother, who was a very talented artist, and allowed her imagination to run riot. She must have done over 20 pictures, all of which are hanging round my house. She published one book, *Mrs Moore in Space*, in which all these are reproduced. They are certainly unlike anything else.

My mother had skills at music and at art. I inherited the music, but not the art!

How many cats does Patrick have? Are they named after famous astronomers or celestial bodies?

Lara and Jonathon (Hertfordshire)

I've got a very beloved cat, Ptolemy, who is jet black. I've had him since he was a tiny kitten, and I wouldn't be without him for anything. A friend of ours had a cat and that cat had kittens. I met the kitten, which put his head against my hand and I heard every word that kitten said.

Why Ptolemy? Well, Ptolemy was the greatest of the old Greek astronomers, but that wasn't the reason for the name. My uncle was a barrister, but at one stage he threw out the Law and went on stage as a leading actor in the opera *Amasis*. They were doing one of these operas in London, with a Greek backdrop. They'd just had a black kitten and called it Ptolemy. So when my kitten came along, he also became Ptolemy. I've often told him that story, and I'm sure he understands it – very intelligent cat!

Is Patrick really the only living person to have met the first man to fly, the first man in space, and the first man to land on the Moon? A truly remarkable and astonishing fact if true.

John Roach (Aberdeen)

I can't be sure I'm the only one, but certainly I met Orville Wright, Yuri Gagarin and of course Neil Armstrong. Whether anyone else has met all three, I know not. On the whole, I rather doubt it. Orville died in 1947, so his life did overlap those of Yuri and Neil.

Did you choose the objects in your Caldwell catalogue for any special reason, or were these favourites of yours from your own personal observing in both hemispheres?

Mark Chamberlain (Hereford)

I've got to admit that the Caldwell catalogue began very light-heartedly. I'd been in my observatory observing Jupiter and, when it finally set, I amused myself by looking at various star clusters and nebulae. I thought that since Messier only catalogued just over a hundred of these, there must be many he left out. Either because there was no chance of mistaking them for comets, in which he was mainly interested, or because they were too far south to be seen from France, where he lived. Just for fun, I set about making a catalogue of the same number of objects that can be seen easily with a small telescope. Unlike Messier, I began in the far north and went to the far south. But what to call it? I couldn't call it the Moore catalogue as, like Messier, that begins with 'M'. My name is actually double-barrelled, Caldwell-Moore, so I called it the Caldwell Catalogue.

Frankly, I thought no more about it. I sent a copy to *Sky and Telescope* magazine, and assumed they'd throw it in the waste paper bin. They didn't; they published it, and it caught on. Surprisingly, the catalogue is now rather widely used.

I made one mistake: I called it after my own name. One rather uncharitable gentleman from BAA accused me of trying to publicise my own name, which is not what I intended at all. But it's too late now. People seem to find the catalogue useful, and I'm glad they do.

What has been your greatest achievement over your career?

Michael Murphy (Lisnaskea, Co. Fermanagh)

The only thing I've done, with my books and my programmes, is to try to interest other people and bring them into astronomy. Whether I've succeeded is for others to judge, but at least I've tried. If I've done anything in the scientific world, that's it.

What has been the most surprising or significant discovery in astronomy or cosmology over your lifetime?

Vicki Wallace (Co. Donegal, Ireland), Philip Corneille (Belgium) and Stephen Case (Pembroke Dock, Pembrokeshire)

I would say the discovery of 'microwave background radiation', but I will leave it to my co-author to elaborate, as he is an astrophysicist and I am not. Over to Chris!

The Cosmic Microwave Background (called the 'CMB' for short) was discovered in 1965 by Arno Penzias and Robert Wilson, pretty much by accident. They were trying to detect radio waves from our own Galaxy, the Milky Way, using a large radio telescope at Bell Labs in New Jersey. What they found was that there was radio emission coming from all over the sky, on top of the galactic emissions. They ruled out every possible cause they could think of (including, famously, clearing out bird droppings from inside the radio antenna!), until the only source left was the Universe itself.

Such radiation was predicted to exist by physicists in the 1940s, but the actual detection of it was the first conclusive evidence of the Big Bang theory and, to mark the importance of their discovery, Penzias and Wilson were awarded the 1978 Nobel Prize for Physics.

Research into the Cosmic Microwave Background has been a rich field for decades, and in the 1990s, three decades after the CMB's discovery, the two lead scientists of the COBE satellite, George Smoot and John Mather, were awarded the 2006 prize for their research.

CMB research continues, and the Planck satellite is currently making the most detailed ever map of the CMB over the whole sky, giving cosmologists an excellent view of the early Universe. Combined with measurements from many other experiments, the CMB helps us understand the age and density of the Universe with remarkable accuracy, how it has evolved over billions of years, and even how fast the Earth is moving through space.

What single technological advancement over the last 53 years has facilitated the greatest increase in our knowledge and understanding of the cosmos?

Tony Davies (Shoreham-by-Sea, West Sussex)

I think we've got to say here the development of electronics in astronomy. Old-fashioned photography has gone out, and electronic devices have taken over. They have led to amazing advances, in all branches of science, not just astronomy. Coupled with the advances in electronic computing, they have allowed discoveries astronomers could only dream of even as recently as a decade ago. So I must say the advent of the Electronic Age.

Which future astronomical discovery would you most like realised today?

Andrew Kelly (Manchester)

The discovery I'd like above all others is the reception of an intelligent message from outer space. This would confirm that we are not alone in the Universe, and that life is undoubtedly widespread.

I'm sure it is possible, and I'm sure we are very far from being alone, but saying that is one thing and proving it is quite another. I hope that proof will come in my lifetime, but I admit that I am very far from being confident.

What do you think will be the subject of the 1000th *Sky at Night* programme, or after another 700 episodes?

Geraint Day (Swindon, Wiltshire) and Glyn Harper (Isle of Man)

I would hope that the 1000th *Sky at Night* would come from the surface of Mars or some other world. I would like to be there, but I'm afraid that's hardly likely. I always have the feeling that we might be able to broadcast the programme from another world, but not in the foreseeable future. We've got to conquer the radiation problem first, and so far we've no idea how to do that.

I was a pupil from a school Patrick previously taught at, with an interest in astronomy. I appeared in a BBC trailer with Patrick for *The Sky at Night* on its 10th anniversary, and have kept a keen interest in astronomy since. I now have a son a bit younger than I was then; what would you recommend I do to stimulate his and similar children's interest in astronomy?

Mark Bennett (London)

Dear Mark, I'm not sure how old your son is, but I would do three things. I would buy him a pair of binoculars, I'd make sure he has some books to read, and I would take him to a planetarium. Those are the three things I'd recommend.

If you are anywhere near my hideout in Selsey, bring him in! It would be good to see you again – I'm sure you've changed since our last meeting. Best wishes, Patrick

***The Sky at Night* encouraged me to go to university and study Space Science. What is required, 30 years on, to encourage the next generation to have an interest in this field, both as a hobby and as an academic subject?**

Chris Sidwell-Smith (Leicester)

I would say that the way to interest future generations is the same as it's been for your generation and mine. Make reading matter available, go to the nearest planetarium, join an astronomical society, and equip yourself with some optical equipment – a pair of binoculars is the ideal way to start.

For those interested in astronomy in the form of academic research, then a firm grounding in physics and maths is crucial. But research also requires a keen interest in the subject, so keep gazing at the stars.

Glossary

This glossary makes no attempt at being at all complete. It merely gives one or two of the less familiar terms we use in this book. Readers will be familiar with most of them but possibly not quite all!

Alt-Az mount A telescope mounting which is aligned with the horizon, on which the telescope may be swung freely in any direction.

Altitude In astronomy, the angular height of an object above (or sometimes below) the horizon. The zenith has an altitude of 90 degrees.

Angular momentum The amount of rotation, or spin, that an object has around a given point or axis. It is calculated by multiplying together the mass of the object, the square of its distance from the axis, and the rotational velocity around the point or axis.

Aphelion Furthest distance of a planet or other body from the Sun in its orbit.

Asteroid A small Solar System body. Most of the best-known asteroids move around the Sun between the orbits of Mars and Jupiter.

Aurorae Also known as 'polar lights', specifically Aurora Borealis (Northern Lights) and Aurora Australis (Southern Lights). They occur in the Earth's upper atmosphere, and are caused by charged particles emitted by the Sun.

Automated Transfer Vehicle An unmanned cargo ship built and launched by the European Space Agency to resupply the International Space Station.

Azimuth The bearing of an object in the sky, measured from north (0°) through east (90°), south (180°) and west (270°).

Barycentre The centre of gravity of a group of objects, such as the Earth and Moon, or the Sun and planets. In the case of the Earth-Moon system, because the Earth is 81 times as massive as the Moon, the barycentre lies well inside the Earth's globe.

Binary star A stellar system made up of two stars, genuinely associated, and moving around their common centre of gravity. The revolution periods range from millions of years for very widely separated visual pairs down to less than half an hour for pairs in which the components are almost in contact with each other.

With very close pairs, the components cannot be seen separately, but may be detected by spectroscopic methods.

Black hole An object with such a high mass in such a small space that nothing can escape, not even light.

Brown dwarf A small star with a mass less than around a twelfth that of the Sun, but more than 13 times the mass of Jupiter. A brown dwarf cannot sustain the fusion of hydrogen in its core, but can burn deuterium.

Celestial Sphere A sphere onto which the locations of stars, planets and galaxies are projected. Positions are normally given in right ascension and declination. The equator and poles of the celestial sphere are aligned with the Earth's, but it does not rotate.

Cepheid variable A type of short-period variable star, very regular in behaviour, the name of which comes from the prototype star, Delta Cephei. Cepheids are astronomically important because there is a relationship between variation periods with their real luminosities, so that their distances may be obtained by sheer observation.

Cluster, globular A group of many thousands of stars that formed together and which are bound together by gravity.

Cluster, open A group of stars that formed together but which will eventually disperse.

Comet A small icy body in orbit around the Sun, left over from the creation of the planets. When comets come close to the Sun they can lose material, creating the characteristic tail.

Constellation A pattern of stars in the sky. The stars in any constellation are not really related to each other, because they are at very different distances from the Earth.

Corona The outermost part of the Sun's atmosphere, made up of very tenuous gas. It is visible with the naked eye only during a total solar eclipse.

Cosmic Microwave Background (CMB) Microwave radiation from around 400,000 years after the Big Bang, released when the Universe cooled enough to become transparent. Tiny fluctuations in the CMB show us the temperature and density of the early Universe.

Cosmic rays High-velocity particles reaching the Earth from outer space. The heavier cosmic-ray particles are broken up when they enter the upper atmosphere.

Cosmology The study of the Universe considered as a whole.

Dark energy The name given to a form of energy that makes up more than two-thirds of the energy density of the Universe, and which seems to cause it to expand at an ever-increasing rate.

Dark matter Matter that does not emit, absorb or scatter light, and which can only be observed through its gravitational effect on other objects.

Day, solar The mean interval between successive meridian passages of the Sun, i.e. the points at which the Sun is due south. The length of a solar day varies through the year, but on average it is 24 hours long.

Day, sidereal The interval between successive meridian passages, or culminations, of the same star: 23 hours 56 minutes and 4.091 seconds. This is the true rotation rate of the Earth.

Declination The angular distance of an object above the celestial equator, analogous to latitude measured on Earth.

Deuterium An isotope, or variation, of the hydrogen element, but with one proton and one neutron in the nucleus.

Doppler effect The apparent change in wavelength of the light from a luminous body which is in motion relative to the observer.

Dwarf planet A member of the Solar System moving round the Sun in the same manner as a planet, but much smaller. The best-known dwarf planet is Pluto.

Eclipse, lunar The passage of the Moon through the shadow cast by the Earth. Lunar eclipses may be either total or partial. At some eclipses, totality may last for approximately 1.75 hours, though most are shorter.

Eclipse, solar The blotting-out of the Sun when the Moon is directly between the Earth and the Sun. Total eclipses can last for over 7 minutes under exceptionally favourable circumstances. In a partial eclipse, the Sun is incompletely covered. In an annular eclipse, exact alignment occurs when the Moon is in the far part of its orbit, and so appears smaller than the Sun; a ring of sunlight is left showing round the dark body of the Moon. Strictly speaking, a solar 'eclipse' is the occultation of the Sun by the Moon.

Ecliptic The apparent yearly path of the Sun among the stars. It is more accurately defined as the projection of the Earth's orbit onto the celestial sphere. The planets move through the sky close to the ecliptic plane.

Electron Part of an atom; a fundamental particle carrying a negative electric charge.

Element An atom containing a specific number of protons, neutrons and electrons.

Equator, celestial The projection of the Earth's Equator onto the celestial sphere.

Equatorial A mounting in which the telescope is set up on an axis which is parallel with the axis of the Earth. This means that one movement only (east to west) will suffice to keep an object in the field of view.

Equinox The equinoxes are the two points at which the ecliptic cuts the celestial equator. At an equinox, day and night are of the same length.

Escape velocity The minimum velocity which an object must have in order to escape from the surface of a planet, or other celestial body, without being given any extra impetus.

European Space Agency (ESA) A treaty organisation that provides for cooperation among European states in space research and technology.

Event horizon The 'boundary' of a black hole. No light can escape from inside the event horizon.

Exoplanet, extra-solar planet A planet orbiting a star other than the Sun.

Filter In astronomy, a device that only lets through specific wavelengths of light. Filters can be 'broadband', e.g. letting through red light, or 'narrowband', letting through only a narrow range of wavelengths, usually a range emitted by a particular element.

Finder A small, wide-field telescope attached to a larger one, used for sighting purposes.

Fraunhofer lines The dark absorption lines in the spectrum of the Sun, or any other star. The lines are caused by the absorption of light by particular elements and can be used to deduce a star's composition.

Galaxy A system made up of stars, nebula and interstellar matter. Many, though by no means all, are spiral in form.

Galaxy cluster A group of galaxies that are bound together by gravity.

Gamma rays Radiation of extremely short wavelength and of very high energy.

Gravitational wave A type of radiation distinct from electromagnetic radiation, and which is caused by the movement of masses. Gravitational waves are manifested as distortions in space.

Halo, galactic The spherical-shaped cloud of stars round the main part of a galaxy, made primarily of dark matter but also containing relatively small numbers of stars.

Infrared radiation Radiation with a wavelength longer than that of visible light, ranging from approximately 7,500 Angstroms to 300 microns.

International Space Station A space station in orbit around Earth, built by an international collaboration including the USA, Russia, Europe, Japan and Canada. Construction began in 1998 and was completed in 2011.

Interstellar medium The material between the stars in a galaxy, made of gas and dust.

Ion An atom which has lost or gained one or more electrons, and so has respectively a positive or negative charge.

Ionisation The addition or removal of an electron from an atom, often caused by the emission or absorption of radiation.

Kuiper Belt A belt of small bodies moving round the Sun near the orbit of Neptune.

Libration Relating to the Moon, the wobble of the Moon as it spins, allowing us to see narrow regions that would normally be considered to be on the far side.

Light year The distance travelled by light in one year.

Local group A collection of galaxies, of which our Galaxy is a member.

Luminosity The intrinsic brightness that an object has, irrespective of its distance.

Magnitude, absolute The apparent magnitude that the star would have if it could be observed from a standard distance of 32.6 light years.

Magnitude, apparent The brightness of an object in the sky. Lower numbers correspond to brighter objects. The brightest star in the sky, Sirius, is of magnitude -1, while the faintest stars visible to the naked eye from a dark sight are of magnitude 6. The Sun has an apparent magnitude of -27.

Meteor A piece of cometary debris. When it dashes into the Earth's atmosphere, it burns away to produce a shooting star.

Meteorite A solid body from space landing on the Earth. Most meteorites come from the asteroid belt.

Nebula A cloud of gas and dust in space, inside which new stars are being formed.

Neutrino A fundamental particle similar to the electron but with no electric charge and a very small mass. Neutrinos are hard to measure as they do not interact strongly with matter.

Neutron A fundamental particle with no electric charge, found in the nucleus of an atom.

Neutron star The remnant of a massive star that has exploded in a supernova. A neutron star has a mass similar to the Sun but is only 10–20 km across.

Oort cloud An assumed spherical shell of comets surrounding the Sun, at a range of about one light year.

Parsec The distance at which a star would have a parallax of one second of arc: 3.26 light years, 206,265 astronomical units, or 30.857 million million kilometres.

Perihelion The position in the orbit of a planet or other body which is closest to the sun.

Period, orbital The period that a planet or other object takes to orbit the Sun, or that a satellite takes to orbit its primary planet.

Period, sidereal The period of revolution of a planet on its axis.

Photon A particle of light, which carries energy but has no mass.

Photosphere The visible surface of the Sun or another star.

Planet An object orbiting the Sun or another star that has a sufficiently high mass to have become spherical and to have cleared its own orbit of other material.

Plasma Ionised gas, normally at very high temperatures. The surface of the Sun is made of plasma, as was the very early Universe.

Precession The movement of the axis of rotation of a spinning body such as a planet.

Proton A fundamental particle with a positive electric charge, found in the nucleus of an atom. The nucleus of the hydrogen atom is made up of a single proton.

Pulsar A neutron star with a strong magnetic field and jets of radio waves that sweep across the Earth as it spins on its axis.

Quasar The core of a very powerful, remote active galaxy. The term QSO (quasi-stellar object) is also used.

Red giant A star nearing the final stages of its life, which has swelled up to tens or hundreds of times its original size.

Redshift The stretching of the wavelength of light, either due to the source moving

away from the observer, due to it having left a gravitational field, or due to the expansion of the Universe.

Relativity A theory formulated by Albert Einstein, which describes the behaviour of an object travelling at high speed or with a high mass.

Right Ascension A coordinate used to give positions on the celestial sphere, similar to longitude used on the Earth.

Satellite A natural or artificial object that is orbiting another astronomical body such as a planet.

Solar wind A flow of atomic particles streaming out constantly from the Sun in all directions.

Solstices The times when the Sun is at its maximum declination of approximately 23.5 degrees; around 22 June (summer solstice, with the Sun in the northern hemisphere of the sky), and 22 December (winter solstice, Sun in the southern hemisphere).

Spectroscopy The study of the spectrum of light, usually allowing the composition of an object to be studied.

Spectrum The range of wavelengths, or colours, of light that an object emits. The spectrum of an object can be used to deduce its composition.

Sunspot A dark area on the surface of the Sun that is slightly cooler than its surroundings.

Supernova A colossal stellar outburst, involving either (1) the total destruction of the white dwarf member of a binary system, or (2) the collapse of a very massive star.

Terraforming The process of making another planet or astronomical body inhabitable by adjusting its climate.

Transit The passage of one object in front of a larger one, blocking some or all of the light.

Variable stars Stars which change in brilliancy over short periods. They are of various types.

White dwarf A very small, very dense star which has used up its nuclear fuel, and is in a very late stage of its evolution.

Zenith The observer's overhead point (altitude 90°).

Zodiac A belt stretching round the sky, to either side of the ecliptic, in which the Sun, Moon and principal planets are to be found at any time. (As such, they will always be observed against one of 13 constellations.)

Zodiacal light A cone of light rising from the horizon and stretching along the ecliptic; visible only when the Sun is a little way below the horizon and thus will often be obscured. It is due to thinly spread interplanetary material near the main plane of the Solar System reflecting sunlight.

References

Academic papers are often cited in the following style, with the journal in italics and the volume in bold: <Author> (<Year>) <Journal> <**Volume**> (<Issue>), <page>: "<Title>"

Observing

(Gavin Hall): Large Binocular Telescope Observatory website: www.lbto.org
(John Royle & Aiden Stone): British Astronomical Society webpage: http://www.britastro.org/dark-skies/bestukastrolocationmap1.html
(Ian Downing & Mick Scutt): Antikythera Mechanism Research Project website: http://www.antikytheramechanism.gr/

Further reading

British Astronomical Association website: http://britastro.org
Ian Ridpath (ed.), *Norton's Star Atlas and Reference Handbook* (20th edn., Addison Wesley, 2003)
Stellarium, freely downloadable planetarium software available from www.stellarium.org

The Moon

(Peter Barton): Hartung (1976) *Meteoritics* **11** (3), 187: 'Was the formation of a 20-km diameter impact crater on the Moon observed on June 18, 1178?'
(Andy Cook): Jutzi and Asphaug (2011) *Nature* **476**, 69: 'Forming the lunar farside highlands by accretion of a companion moon'

Further reading

Lunar Reconnaissance Orbiter website: http://www.nasa.gov/lro
Patrick Moore, *Patrick Moore on the Moon* (Cassell Illustrated, 2006)

The Solar System

(John A Tomkins): McDonaugh (2001) *International Geophysics* **76**, 3: 'Chapter 1. The composition of the Earth'

(John A Tomkins): Professor Alan Fitzsimmons, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(David Gay): Professor Alan Fitzsimmons, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Paul Smith): Professor Alan Fitzsimmons, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Bart van der Putten): Dr Lucie Green, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(John Moore): Dr Lucie Green, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Alison Barrett): Dr Lucie Green, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Alex Mackie): Edberg et al. (2010) *Geophysical Research Letters* **37**, L03107: 'Pumping out the atmosphere of Mars through solar wind pressure pulses'
(Alex Andrews): Professor Alan Fitzsimmons, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Jon Culshaw): Professor Alan Fitzsimmons, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Derryck Morton): NASA Planetary Data System Standards Reference, Chapter 2: Cartographic Standards: http://pds.nasa.gov/tools/standardsreference.shtml
(Rob Johnson): Sheppard and Jewitt (2003) *Highlights of Astronomy* **13**, 898: 'The Abundant Irregular Satellites of the Giant Planets'
(Carl Harris): Kerr (2008) *Science* **319**, 21: 'Saturn's Rings Look Ancient Again'
(Carl Harris): Poulet et al. (2003) *Astronomy and Astrophysics* 412, 305: 'Compositions of Saturn's rings A, B, and C from high resolution near-infrared spectroscopic observations'
(Anne Edwards): Porco et al. (2005) *Science* **307**, 1226: 'Cassini Imaging Science: Initial Results on Saturn's Rings and Small Satellites'
(Nigel Asher): Planetary Society blog post: http://planetary.org/blog/article/00002471/
(Ben Slater): Soderbolm et al. (2010) *Icarus* **208**, 905: 'Geology of the Selkcrater region on Titan from Cassini VIMS observations'
(Ben Slater): Cornet et al. (2011) *LPI Science Conference Abstracts* **42**, 2581: 'Geology of Ontario Lacus on Titan: Comparison with a Terrestrial Analog, the Etosha Pans (Namibia)'
(Edward Ignasiak): Professor Alan Fitzsimmons, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Gerard Gilligan): Professor Alan Fitzsimmons, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Chris Stinson): Morbidelli (2005) 'Origin and Dynamical Evolution of Comets and their Reservoirs' http://arxiv.org/abs/astro-ph/0512256
(Roy Jackson): USNO website: http://aa.usno.navy.mil/faq/docs/minorplanets.php
(Roy Jackson): IAU Resolution B5 (2006) 'Definition of a planet in our Solar System'
(Roy Jackson): IAU Resolution B6 (2006) 'Pluto'
(Rebecca Taylor): Sedna: http://www.gps.caltech.edu/~mbrown/sedna/
(Rebecca Taylor): Sagan and Khare (1979) *Nature* **207**, 102: 'Tholins: organic chemistry of interstellar grains and gas'
(Rebecca Taylor): Barucci et al. (2005) *Astronomy and Astrophysics* **439**, L1: 'Is Sedna another Triton?'
(Alan Davis): Universe Today article: http://www.universetoday.com/14486/2012-no-planet-x/
(Mark Bullard): Q61 Genda and Ikoma (2008) *Icarus* **194**, 42: 'Origin of the ocean on the Earth: Early evolution of water D/H in a hydrogen-rich atmosphere'
(Mark Bullard): Callahan et al. (2011) *PNAS* **108** (34), 13995: 'Carbonaceous meteorites contain a wide range of extraterrestrial nucleobases'
(Mark Bullard): http://www.nasa.gov/topics/solarsystem/features/dna-meteorites.html
(Mark Bullard): Hartogh et al. (2011) *Nature* **478**, 218-220: 'Ocean-like water in the Jupiter-family comet 103P/Hartley 2'
(Dave Annear): Drouart et al. (1999) *Icarus* **140**, 129: 'Structure and Transport in the

Solar Nebula from Constraints on Deuterium Enrichment and Giant Planets Formation'
(Gerald Hutt): Sekanina (1968) *Bulletin of the Astronomical Institutes of Czechoslovakia* **19**, 343: 'A dynamic investigation of Comet Arend-Roland 1957 III'
(Gerald Hutt): Marsden (1970) *Astronomical Journal* **75** (1), 75: 'Comets and nongravitational forces III'
(Gillian Ann Jackson): Mainzer et al. (2011) *Astrophysical Journal* **743** (2), 156: 'NEOWISE Observations of Near-Earth Objects: Preliminary Results'
(Ingrid van Dam): USGS website: http://pubs.usgs.gov/gip/geotime/age.html
(Duncan Borrington-Chance): JPL small-body database browser: http://ssd.jpl.nasa.gov/sbdb.cgi
(Les Stringer): NASA Science website: http://science.nasa.gov/science-news/science-at-nasa/2003/29dec_magneticfield/
(Ron Sexton): W. McDonough 'The composition of the Earth', Chapter 1 in Earthquake Thermodynamics and Phase Transformation in the Earth's Interior, Volume 76 (2000), available online: quake.mit.edu/hilstgroup/CoreMantle/EarthCompo.pdf
(Rosemary Davis): Thommes, Duncan and Levison (2003) *Icarus* **161**, 431: 'Oligarchic growth of giant planets'
(Rosemary Davis): Thommes, Duncan and Levison (1999) *Nature* **402**, 635: 'The formation of Uranus and Neptune in the Jupiter ± Saturn region of the Solar System'
(Rosemary Davis): Scientific American Blog: http://blogs.scientificamerican.com/basicspace/2011/07/26/jupiter-sneaked-up-on-asteroid-belt-then-ranaway/
(Ronald Mallier): Schroeder and Smith (2008) *MNRAS* **386**, 155: 'Distant future of the Sun and Earth revisited'
(Ronal Mallier): Villaver and Livio (2007) *Astrophysical Journal* **661**, 1192: 'Can planets survive stellar evolution?'
(Baz Pearce): Professor Alan Fitzsimmons, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700

Further reading

Cassini Solstice Mission website: http://saturn.jpl.nasa.gov
Patrick Moore, *Mission to the Planets: The Illustrated Story of Man's Exploration of the Solar System* (Cassell Illustrated, 1995)
Solar Dynamics Observatory website: http://sdo.gsfc.nasa.gov
Voyager website: http://voyager.jpl.nasa.gov

Stars and Galaxies

(Alec Bordacs): Galaxy Map: http://galaxymap.org
(Russell Aspinwell): Herschel Space Observatory: http://herscheltelescope.org.uk and http://www.esa.int/herschel
(Andrew Brydges etc.): Lord Martin Rees, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Kevin Cooper): Lintott et al. (2009) *MNRAS* **399**, 129: 'Galaxy Zoo: "Hanny's Voorwerp", a quasar light echo?'

Further reading

John Bally and Bo Reipurth, *The Birth of Stars and Planets* (Cambridge University

Press, 2006)
ESA's Hubble website: http://spacetelescope.org
Galaxy Zoo: http://www.galaxyzoo.org
Patrick Moore and Robin Rees, *Patrick Moore's Data Book of Astronomy* (2nd edn., Cambridge University Press, 2011)

Cosmology

(Lynton McLain): Lord Martin Rees, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Dolores Myatt): Kogut et al. (1993) *Astrophysical Journa*l **419**, 1: 'Dipole Anisotropy in the COBE Differential Microwave Radiometers First-Year Sky Maps'
(Martin Fletcher): John A. Peacock, *Cosmological Physics* (Cambridge University Press, 1998)
(Martin Fletcher): John A. Peacock (2008) 'A diatribe on expanding space' http://arxiv.org/abs/0809.4573
(Martin Fletcher): Francis et al. (2007) PASA **24** (2), 95: 'Expanding Space: the Root of all Evil?'
(Peter Eggleston): Cooperstock, Faraoni and Vollick (1998) *Astrophysical Journal* **503**, 61: 'The Influence of the Cosmological Expansion on Local Systems'
(Ross E Platt): Reiss et al. (1998) *Astronomical Journal* **116**, 100: 'Observational Evidence from Supernovae for an Accelerating Universe and a Cosmological Constant'
(Ross E Platt): Perlmutter et al. (1999) *Astrophysical Journal* **517**, 565: 'Measurements of Omega and Lambda from 42 High-Redshift Supernovae'
(Robert): Ned Wright's Cosmology Calculator: http://www.astro.ucla.edu/~wright/CosmoCalc.html
(Paul): National Solar Observatory webpage: http://www.cs.umass.edu/~immerman/stanford/universe.html
(Hywel Clatworthy): Penzias and Wilson (1965) *Astrophysical Journal* **142**, 419: 'A Measurement of Excess Antenna Temperature at 4080 Mc/s'
(Thomas Work etc.): Lord Martin Rees, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Andi Ye): Steven Weinberg, *The First Three Minutes: A Modern View of the Origin of the Universe* (Basic Books, 1993)
(Paul Foster etc.): Lord Martin Rees, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Chris Geraghty and Rik Whittaker): Rubin, Ford and Thonnard (1980) *Astrophysical Journal* **238**, 471: 'Rotational properties of 21 SC galaxies with a large range of luminosities and radii, from NGC 4605 (R = 4kpc) to UGC 2885 (R = 122 kpc)'
(Chris Geraghty and Rik Whittaker): Zwicky (1937) *Astrophysical Journal* **86**, 217: 'On the Masses of Nebulae and of Clusters of Nebulae'
(Simon Foster and Craig Shail): Clowe et al. (2006) *Astrophysical Journal* **648**, 109: 'A Direct Empirical Proof of the Existence of Dark Matter'
(Simon Foster and Craig Shail): Markevitch et al. (2004) *Astrophysical Journal* **606**, 819: 'Direct Constraints on the Dark Matter Self-Interaction Cross Section from the Merging Galaxy Cluster 1E 0657-56'
(Ken Askew): LHC: CERN Brochure 'LHC: The Guide' http://cdsweb.cern.ch/record/1092437/files/
(Ken Askew): Professor Brian Cox, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Spencer Taylor): Square Kilometre Array website: http://www.skatelescope.org

(Bruce Goodman etc.): Adams and Laughlin (1997) *Reviews of Modern Physics* **69** (2), 337: 'A dying universe: the long-term fate and evolution of astrophysical objects'

Further reading

Professor Peter Coles's blog 'In the Dark': http://telescoper.wordpress.org
John Gribbin, In search of Schrodinger's Cat: Quantum Physics and Reality (revised edn., Black Swan, 2012)
Steven Weinberg, *The First Three Minutes: A Modern View of the Origin of the Universe* (Basic Books, 1993)
WMAP website: http://wmap.gsfc.nasa.gov

Other Worlds

(David Cockayne): Direct Imaging: Marois et al. (2008) *Science* **322**, 1348: 'Direct Imaging of Multiple Planets Orbiting the Star HR 8799'
(Martin Hickes): Dr Lewis Dartnell, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Martin Hickes): Borucki et al. (2011): 'Kepler-22b: A 2.4 Earth-radius Planet in the Habitable Zone of a Sun-like Star': http://arxiv.org/abs/1112.1640
(Martin Hickes): Fressin et a. (2011) 'Two Earth-sized planets orbiting Kepler-20': http://arxiv.org/abs/1112.4550
(Kevin Somerville): Dr Lewis Dartnell, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Karl): Vogt et al. (2010) *Astrophysical Journal* **723**, 954: 'The Lick-Carnegie Exoplanet Survey: A 3.1 M_Earth Planet in the Habitable Zone of the Nearby M3V Star Gliese 581'
(Karl): Anglada-Escudé and Dawson (2010) arXiv pre-print: 'Aliases of the first eccentric harmonic: Is GJ 581g a genuine planet candidate?': http://arxiv.org/abs/1011.0186
(Barry Holland): Habitable Planet: Kaltenegger, Udry and Pepe (2011) 'A Habitable Planet around HD 85512': http://adsabs.harvard.edu/abs/2011arXiv1108.3561K

Further reading

The Extrasolar Planets Encyclopaedia: http://exoplanet.eu
NASA Kepler website: http://kepler.nasa.gov
Fabienne Casoli and Thérèse Encrenaz, *The New Worlds: Extrasolar Planets* (Springer, 2007)

Manned Spaceflight

(Kevin Taylor): Astronaut biographies http://www11.jsc.nasa.gov/Bios/
(Christopher Harper): Piers Sellers, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Ama Boateng): Piers Sellers, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Sam): NASA Astronaut Selection and Training http://spaceflight.nasa.gov/shuttle/reference/factsheets/asseltrn.html
(Erin): Piers Sellers, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Richard Walder): ESA's ATV website: http://www.esa.int/atv

(John Restick): Piers Sellers, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Peter Ainsworth): Professor David Southwood, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700

Further reading

NASA International Space Station website: http://www.nasa.gov/station
NASA Orbital Debris website: http://orbitaldebris.jsc.nasa.gov

Space Missions

(Carl Kirby): National Goegraphic 'Fifty Years of Exploration': http://books.nationalgeographic.com/map/map-day/2009/10/29
(Iain Drain): Professor David Southwood, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Jamie Smith): JAXA Ikaros website: http://www.jspec.jaxa.jp/e/activity/ikaros.html
(Jamie Smith): NASA Dawn website: http://dawn.jpl.nasa.gov
(Paul Metcalf): Venera 13 webpage: http://nssdc.gsfc.nasa.gov/nmc/masterCatalog.do?sc=1981-106D
(Kevin Cooper): New Horizons website: http://www.nasa.gov/newhorizons/
(Philip Corneille): Deep Impact webpage: http://www.nasa.gov/deepimpact
(Earl Robinson): Benefits of the Space Program: http://techtran.msfc.nasa.gov/at_home.html

Further reading

Patrick Moore, *Mission to the Planets: The Illustrated Story of Man's Exploration of the Solar System* (Cassell Illustrated, 1995)
NASA's Voyager website: http://voyager.jpl.nasa.gov

Bizarre and Unexplained

(David Duly): NASA WMAP website: http://wmap.gsfc.nasa.gov
(Rob Hawthorne and Mike Poole): Romer and Cohen (1940) *Isis* **31**, 328: 'Roemer and the First Determination of the Velocity of Light (1676)'
(Rob Hawthorne and Mike Poole): Bradley (1729) *Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society of London* **35**, 637: 'Account of a new discovered Motion of the Fix'd Stars'
(Rob Hawthorne and Mike Poole): Resolution 1 of the 17th meeting of the CGPM http://www.bipm.org/en/CGPM/db/17/1/
(Peter Burgess): Professor Brian Cox and Lord Martin Rees, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700
(Richard Saddington): Hulse and Taylor (1975) *Astrophysical Journal* **195**, L51: 'Discovery of a pulsar in a binary system'
(Richard Saddington): Taylor, Fowler and McCullock (1979) *Nature* **277**, 437: 'Measurements of general relativistic effects in the binary pulsar PSR1913+16'
(Richard Saddington): Nobel Prize website: http://www.nobelprize.org/nobel_prizes/physics/laureates/1993/press.html
(Simon Hewitt): Lord Martin Rees, BBC *Sky at Night*, episode 700

(Jon Gould): Fabbiano et al. (2011) *Nature* **477**, 431: 'A close nuclear black-hole pair in the spiral galaxy NGC3393'
(Brian Mills): The Bible, New Revised Standard Version (1989)
(Brian Mills): Patrick Moore, *The Star of Bethlehem* (Canopus Publishing Limited, 2001)

Further reading

Jim Al-Khalili, Black Holes, *Wormholes and Time Machines* (2nd edn., Taylor & Francis, 2012)
Russell Stannard, *The Time and Space of Uncle Albert* (Faber and Faber, 2005)

Patrick Moore and *The Sky at Night*

(Ellen Harteijer & Michael Winfield): Gertrude L. Moore, *Mrs Moore in Space* (Creative Monochrome, 2002)
(Vicki Wallace etc.): Nobel Prize website: http://www.nobelprize.org

Further reading

Patrick Moore, *80 Not out: The Autobiography* (Contender Books, 2003)

Picture Credits

BBC Books would like to thank the following individuals and organizations for providing photographs and for permission to reproduce copyright material. While every effort has been made to trace and acknowledge copyright holders, we would like to apologize should there be any errors or omissions.

Pg 13 – Patrick with his 15" reflector/Patrick Moore
Pg 16 – The Plough/Richard Palmer Graphics
Pg 22 – International Space Station/Ralf Vandenbergh
Pg 27 – Reflecting and refracting telescopes/Richard Palmer Graphics
Pg 32 – Large Binocular Telescope/Photo courtesy of Aaron Ceranski and the Large Binocular Telescope Observatory (The LBT is an international collaboration among institutions in the United States, Italy and Germany)
Pg 33 – Sketch of Saturn/Patrick Moore
Pg 34 – Patrick with his 12 1/2" reflecting telescope/Patrick Moore
Pg 39 – Photograph of star trails/Stewart Watt
Pg 46 – Jupiter/Anthony Wesley
Pg 58 – Full Moon/Jamie Cooper
Pg 61 – Gravitational pull of the Moon/Richard Palmer Graphics
Pg 65 – Phases of the Moon/Richard Palmer Graphics
Pg 71 – Total solar eclipse/Alan Clitherow
Pg 79 – Mare Ibrium/Julian Cooper
Pg 86 – Solar System/Richard Palmer Graphics
Pg 93 – Cloud tops of Venus/NASA/NSSDC Photo Gallery
Pg 100 – Solar prominence/NASA
Pg 120 – Rings of Saturn/NASA/JPL/Space Science Institute
Pg 125 – Hyperion/NASA/JPL/Space Science Institute
Pg 129 – Voyager 2's image of Triton/NASA/JPL
Pg 153 – Motion of nearby stars/Richard Palmer Graphics
Pg 160 – Map of our own Galaxy in the infrared/NASA/JPL-Caltech
Pg 199 – Galaxy redshift sample/M. Blanton and the Sloan Digital Sky Survey (SDSS) Collaboration, www.sdss.org
Pg 204 – Spacing of galaxies/Richard Palmer Graphics
Pg 214 – Distribution of galaxies/Smithsonian Astrophysical Observatory/Gellar & Huchra (1989)
Pg 216 – The Universe as an expanding balloon/Richard Palmer Graphics
Pg 240 – Curvature of Earth/Richard Palmer Graphics
Pg 317 – Photograph of the Earth from Space/NASA (Image ID number AS17–148–22727)
Pg 321 – International Space Station against Earth/STS-119 Shuttle Crew/NASA
Pg 356 – The Lunar Module/Richard Palmer Graphics

Pg 358 – Saturn V/Richard Palmer Graphics
Pg 365 – Surface of Venus/NASA (Image ID number: YG06847)
Pg 386 – The distortion of space-time by gravity/Richard Palmer Graphics
Pg 403 – Galaxy cluster Abell 1689/NASA, N. Benitez (JHU), T. Broadhurst (The Hebrew University), H. Ford (JHU), M. Clampin (STScI), G. Hartig (STScI), G. Illingworth (UCO/Lick Observatory), the ACS Science Team and ESA
Pg 407 – Monolith on the surface of Phobos/NASA/Mars Global Surveyor
Pg 410 – A few of the many books in Patrick's study/BBC Books
Pg 412 – Venus passing across the disc of the Sun in 2004/Adrian Janetta
Pg 415 – Patrick using the 24" telescope at Lowell Observatory/Patrick Moore
Pg 418 – Patrick in his study/Patrick Moore
Pg 420 – One of Patrick's mother's drawings of alien life/Patrick Moore.

Index

The page references in this index correspond to the printed edition from which this ebook was created. To find a specific word or phrase from the index, please use the search feature of your ebook reader.

SAN indicates *The Sky at Night*. PM indicates Patrick Moore.

Abell 1689 (galaxy cluster) 390
AC + 79 3888 (star) 132
Akatsuki probe 347
Albireo (Beta Cygni) 37
Aldrin, Buzz 313
aliens *see* extra-terrestrial life
Alpha Centauri 20, 157–8, 331, 361
amateur scientist 45–7
amino acids, presence on meteorites 136, 170–1, 297, 308
ancient cultures, astronomy and 48–50
Andromeda Galaxy 33, 153, 156, 161, 162, 189–90, 191, 194, 196, 207–8, 211, 217, 220, 226, 227, 277, 341
angular momentum 62–3, 201–2, 220–1, 427
Antennae Galaxies 191
anthropic principle 236–7
antimatter 244–5, 247, 259, 266, 361
aphelion 103, 104, 427
Apollo missions 312–13, 316–17, *317*, 321, 328, 345, 355–9, *356*, *358*, 381
Arches Cluster 187
Arcturus *16*, 17
Arend-Roland (C/1956) (comet) 137–8, 416
Ariane rockets 321, 329, 348
Aristarchus 82, 332
Arkel, Hanny van 197
Armstrong, Neil 313, 417, 421
asteroids 87–8, 134–42, 428
  age of 142
  asteroid belt 37, 85, 91, 121, 124, 134, 147, 369
  binary systems 59
  burning up in Earth's atmosphere 139
  chemistry of 136
  classification of 137–8
  detection and response methods 140
  effects upon Earth of 138–9

finding on Earth 141–2
5261 Eureka 68
54509 YORP 67
Itokawa 346, 361
Jupiter impacts 45, 46
Mars impacts 68, 115
Moon impacts 78
near-Earth 47, 138–9, 140, 333, 350, 406
1998 UP1 67
observing 45
orbit 91
size and distance from Sun 85, 87–8
sunlight moves 140–1
3753 Cruithne 67–8
tracking 106, 140
2709 37–8
Venus impacts 114, 115
Vesta 361
water on 136
see also comets *and* meteors
astronaut:
becoming a 318–19
dangers of space travel and 324, 335, 351, 372, 417
do they have a nice time in space? 318
flown furthest into space 312–13
images of Earth and Moon taken by 316, 317, *317*
most interesting PM has met 313
viewing the Great Wall of China from Space 314–15
astronomical societies 17, 426
astrophotography 36, 38, *39*
Automated Transfer Vehicle (ATV) 320–3, 325, 428
averted vision 29, 30

Barnard's Loop 275
barycentre 56, 59, 60, 64, 95, 286, 428
baryonic acoustic oscillations 198–9, 201
baryonic matter 200–1
baryons 246, 247
Beehive Cluster 31
Bell Labs 235, 423
Bessel 152
Betelgeuse in Orion 181, 182, 183–4, 275
Bethlehem, star of 401–5
Big Bang 194, 198, 199
cause of 238
CMB and *see* Cosmic Microwave Background
creation of heavy elements in 182, 272–3
debris from 206–7
energy without matter 249–50

how scientists know with certainty the events that took place a fraction of a second after the 251–3
inflation 237, 238, 245, 250–3
introduces age to the Universe 18
Milky Way distance from the origin of 206–7
other Big Bangs in different locations 280
other theories of origin of Universe and 282–3
'pure energy' and 249
recipe for a Universe 244–8
rotation of matter in Universe and 220–1
speed of Solar System and 162–3
was there a sound during? 253–4
what existed before? 244
widely accepted theory of 374
Big Crunch 236, 278
binary systems 59–60, 165–6, 178, 389, 399, 438
binary pulsar 389
binary stars 165–6, 178, 191, 292, 428
binoculars 17, 21, 22, 25, 30–1, *32*, 425, 426
bizarre and unexplained 373–400
Black Arrow project 329
black holes 163, 177, 179, 180, 181, 186, 187, 362, 385, 387, 429
collision of 399–400
could they eventually combine to crush the Universe back down to a singularity? 397
does every galaxy have at its centre? 397–8
edge of 393
end of Universe and 277
escape velocity 393–4
gravitational field at event horizon of 394–5
gravity and 271, 394–5
if all matter and energy in the Universe were located in one single place, creating a 'Mega–Massive' black hole, what would be the diameter of the event horizon? 398–9
mass 392–3
misnomer 396–7
missing mass in Universe and 269–71
other side of 392
rotation of 393
stellar-mass 270
super-massive 192, 393
time dilation of matter falling into 395–6
what happens to matter sucked into? 392
what size would the mass condense to as the centre of? 392–3
what would it look like to fall into? 395
Blinking Nebula, viewing 30
blueshift 210, 212, 379
Boötes the Herdsman *16*, 17
Bowell, E 37
Bradley, James 376

Brahe, Tycho 50
branes 281
Britain: involvement in manned spaceflight 328–30
British Astronomical Association 17
brown dwarf 88, 98, 133, 174–5, 270, 271, 277, 278, 429
Bruno, Giordano 77, 97
Bullet Clusters 263
Bussard, Robert 362

C/1980 E1 (comet) 138
Caldwell Catalogue 422
Callisto 87, 124
Cancer the Crab 31
Cannon, Annie Jump 98
Cassini probe 106, 117, 119, *120*, 122, 124, 306, 308, 317, 349, 366, 371
Cassiopeia *16*, 157, 159, 315
Castor in Gemini 165
Cepheid variables 152–4, 218, 226, 227, 230, 429
Ceres 130, 134, 138, 361
Chandra X-ray satellite 400
Chandrasekhar limit 178
Charon 59, 368
Cherenkov, Pavel 267
Clarke, Arthur C 414
closer to home 305–10
Coma cluster 217, 255
comets 51, 134–42, 429
  age of 142
  burning up in Earth's atmosphere 139
  chemistry of 136
  classification of 137–8
  detection and response methods 140
  finding on Earth 141–2
  how many comets were needed to hit Earth and fill its oceans with water? 135–6
  movement of 134–5
  near-Earth 138–9, 140, 333, 406
  signs of life on 308–9, 333
  sunlight moving 140–1
  that enters our Solar System and goes farthest out into space 137–8
  water in 135–7
co-moving coordinates 211, 230
contamination of space with Earth matter 307–8
constellations 15, *16*, 17, 19, 21, 31, 48, 51, 52, 89, 152, 157, 159, 161, 163, 167, 208, 217, 255, 275, 285, 287, 315, 430, 439 *see also under individual constellation name*
Copernicus, Nicolaus 50
CoRoT-3b (planet) 287
Cosmic Background Explorer (COBE) 237
Cosmic Microwave Background (CMB) 163, 199–200, 208, 222, 228, 231, 232, 235–

6, 237, 241, 252, 253, 258–9, 262, 268, 423–4, 430
Cosmic Neutrino Background 268
cosmic rays 164, 350, 430
cosmology 203–83
  Big Bang and the early Universe 244–54
  dark matter and dark energy 255–71
  end of it all 277–9
  expansion of the Universe 203–44, 374
  multiverse and extra dimensions 280–3
  origin of the elements 272–6
Cruithne 67–8
cryovolcanism 127, *129*
Cygnus the Swan 152, 159, 176, 287

Danjon 69
dark matter and dark energy 18, 200–1, 219, 224, 225, 226, 237, 238, 248, 373–4, 375, 430
  anti-dark matter 259
  black holes and 269–71
  collapsing under gravity 260–1
  existence of, proving 255–7, 262–5
  identification of 282
  latest information about 258–9
  LHC and 265–6
  neutrinos and 267–9
  what is it? 255–7
Darwin, GH 73
Davies, DR 74
Dawn mission 361
Deep Impact 370
Deep Space Network 344
Deimos 57, 58, 87, 333, 334
Deneb 176
deuterium 136, 174, 273, 429, 431
Dicke, Robert 235
Dollfus, Audouin 82
Doppler shift 163, 209–10, 212, 344, 431
Double Cluster 31
Draconis, Gamma 376
Dragon capsule 325
Drake's equation 291–4
dwarf galaxy 166–8, 179
dwarf planet 86, 87, 91, 129, 130–1, 361, 369, 431
Dyson, Freeman 309

Eagle Nebula 51
Earth 103–9
  age and formation of elements 145–6
  atmosphere 111, 193–4

circumference 162
comets as provider of water in oceans 135–6
differentiated 146
earthquakes 59, 66, 101, 253, 388
end of life on 148
future location of 381–2
location in Universe 157–64
lowest known temperature 106–7
magnetic field 111, 114, 143, 144
maps of/view of 104–5
Moon and *see* Moon, the orbit and rotation 49, 71, 90, 91, 94, 103, 105
removal of idea of being at centre of Universe 50
sister planet 105–6
size and distance from Sun 85, 86, 103
speed of through space 162–3
spherical shape 88–9
Sun's death and 107–10, 148, 149, 296
tides 56, 57–63, 92, 94, 104, 149, 202
tilt 91, 195, 289
transits of, observing from Mars 109
two moons, effect of 57–8, 80
volcanoes 113
Earth-like planets 38, 114–15, 288, 292, 293, 296, 302, 306
earthquakes 59, 66, 101, 253, 388
eclipse:
lunar 48, 49, 57, 59, 69–70, 72, 91, 314, 431
solar 17, 48, 49, 64, 69, 70–2, *71*, 91, 390, 412, 419, 430, 431
Einstein, Albert 209, 222, 234, 236, 238, 249, 257, 258, 262, 263, 264, 265, 357, 362, 377, 378, 379, 386, 387, 389, 390, 437
elements, origins of the 145–6, 182, 272–6
Enceladus 128, 306, 308, 349, 366, 367, 371
end of it all 277–9
equator:
celestial 47, 49, 432
observing sky at 19–20, 432
rotation of Earth and 162
Eris 86, 368, 369
Europa 124, 128, 305–6, 307, 365–6
European Southern Observatory 298
European Space Agency (ESA) 49, 152, 237, 242, 319, 320–3, 329, 330, 368, 432
exchange particles 245
exoplanets 285–90, 292, 298, 299, 301, 305, 309–10, 433 *see also under individual planet name*
expansion of the Universe 154, 189–90, 250–1, 257, 258, 264, 269, 273, 278, 373, 374–5, 383, 437
age and size of Universe and 234–8
Big Bang debris and 206–7
CMB and 228
distance of Milky Way from Big Bang 206–7
Earth as centre of Universe and 203–6

Great Attractor and 216–18
how do we know it is still expanding? 223–4
infinite nature of Universe and 242
inflation 237, 238, 245, 250–3
inflating balloon comparisons *216*, 243
mass of Universe and 233-4, 238–9
measuring distance of far away galaxies and 228–30
observing already extinct objects 219–20
receding galaxies and 203–6, 209–12
rotation/spinning Universe and 220–3
shape of Universe and 239–42
speed Milky Way is moving through Universe 207–9
speed of 231
standard candle and 226–8
very distant galaxies 218–19
what is expanding? 213–15
what is the Universe expanding into? 242
why is it getting faster? 224–6
will everything be out of sight one day? 234
see also Universe
extra-terrestrial life 9, 133, 157–8, 291–310, 340, 363, 365–6, 403, *420*, 424
calling all life forms 300–4
comets and signs of 308–9
contamination of other bodies with Earth material and 307–8
Drake's equation 291–4
elsewhere 291–9
elsewhere in our Solar System 305–7
extra-solar planets and 285–90, 309–10
importance of life to Universe and 294–5
LOFAR and 303–4
millions of years ago 295–6
odds of 297–8
outside our Solar System 292, 299, 301, 305
signals sent from Earth and 300–2

Falkland Islands 46–7
fireball 23, 24, 141–2, 405
Fisher, O 73–4
5261 Eureka (asteroid) 68
54509 YORP (asteroid) 67
55 Cancri (star) 301
Fomalhaut in Pisces 285
Fraunhofer lines 97, 433

Gagarin, Yuri 311, 313, 421
Galactic Centre 187
Galactic Halo 271, 434
galaxies 187–202
acceleration of farthest 383–4

active galactic nuclei 196
centre of a 187–9
clusters 161, 203, 213–15, 278
collision of 161, 189–92, 196, 207–9, 220, 277
distance from the origin of the Big Bang 206–7
distribution of *214*
expansion of very distant 218–19
filaments 198–201, *199*
mass of 256
measuring distance of galaxies in light years 228–30
more galaxies beyond ours 232
moving away from each other 203–6, 209–12
moving towards each other 161, 189–92, 196, 207–9, 220, 277
receding from us 203–6
rotation of 188–9, 201–2, 222, 256
shedding stars 192–3
speed of 207–9
spiral arms 144, 159, 161, 187–9
superclusters 161–2, 163, 203, 217–18
super-hot gas surrounds clusters of 198
surveys of 197, 199, 200
very distant galaxies, expansion of 218–19
see also under individual galaxy and group of galaxies name
Galaxy Zoo Project 197
Galileo 118–19
gamma rays 182, 187, 191, 433
Ganymede 87, 124
gas giants 89, 119
large number of moons 124–5
life outside our Solar System on 292, 299, 301, 305
rock planets and, age of 146–7
Sun's death and 150
Gegenschein/Counteglow 42
Gemini telescope 131, 285
Geostationary Orbit 357
Gervase of Canterbury 76–7
Giant Impact theory 74, 75
Gilmore, Professor Gerry 189
Gliese 581g 298
gluons 245, 246
Goldilocks zone 148, 149, 298, 300–1, 302
GRAIL mission 80
Grand Design Spirals 189
gravity:
as a force 386–7
bending of light 385–6, 390–1, *390*
Einstein's theories of 257, 258, 262, 263, 264, 265, 386, 387, 388, 389, 390
formation of stars and 169
how scientists find out a planet's 286–7
Newtonian theories of 264, 346, 386, 387

same strength throughout Universe 387
shape of planets and 88–9
space-time, bends 386
speed of 387
waves 388–9
weakest point of in Universe 388
Great Andromeda Nebula 226
Great Attractor 208–9, 216–18
Great Bear 15, 17, 20, 51
Great Wall of China, visibility from space 314–15
Green, Dr Lucie 97
Greenwich Meridian 105, 116
Gregory, Professor 53
Guth, Alan 237

Haise, Jim 313
Hale-Bopp (comet) 51, 91
Halley's Comet 404
HARPS 298
Hartmann, W 74
Hartley 2 (comet) 136
Hartung, J 76, 77
Haumea 86
Hawking, Stephen 278, 281
Hayabusa probe 346, 361
HD85512 (star) 301–2
Heavy Bombardment 74, 78, 135
Hercules 31
Hercules Globular Cluster 167
Herschel Space Observatory 119, 173, 329, 350
Hipparchus 49, 50
Hipparcos 49, 152
Horsehead Nebula 171
Hoyle, Fred 235
Hubble Flow 207, 208
Hubble Space Telescope 37, 197, 218, 285, 316, 329, 343
Hubble, Edwin 152, 154, 207, 209, 218, 226, 227, 234, 265, 374
Hubble's Law 218–19
Hughes, David 401
Hulse, Russell 389
Huygens probe 306, 366
Hydra 163
Hyperion 73, *125*, 126

IC 2497 (galaxy) 197–8
IC434 nebula 171
Ikaros mission 361–2
inflation 237, 238, 245, 250–3
infrared astronomy 119, 133, *160*, 173, 175

infrared radiation 434
International Astronomical Union (IAU) 129–30, 174
International Space Station 21–2, *22*, 312, 315, 316, 320–3, *321*, 320–3, 325, 328, 335, 343, 434
interstellar space 132, 137, 194, 362
interstellar wind 132, 163, 164
Io 57, 124
Ion engine 361, 362
IRAS infrared satellite 133
Iridium satellites 23, 352
Itokawa (asteroid) 361

James Webb Space Telescope 329
Japan 346, 347, 361–2
JAXA 362
Jupiter 116–19
  as star of Bethlehem 403, 404, 405
  asteroid belt and 134
  atmosphere 117–18
  changing nature of 51
  clouds 45
  effect on Sun's orbit 90, 95
  electrical storms 117–18
  failed star 116
  gravity 286
  human habitation on 150
  life on 305
  mapping 116–17
  mass of 286
  moons 26, 31, 57, 58, 87, 118–19, 124, 305–6, 376
  new dark spot on 45, 46
  orbit 95, 121
  past locations of 94
  size and distance from Sun 85, 86, 87
  slingshots around 359
  Sun's demise and 149
  tilt 195

kaons 249
Kapteyn's Star 168
Keck telescope 131, 285, 298
Kepler, Johannes 50, 90, 182
Kepler 287–8, 299
Kirchhoff, Gustav 97
knowing our place 157–64
Krikalev, Sergei 312
Kuiper Belt 75, 91, 124, 126, 128–9, 136, 149, 368–9, 434

Lagrange Point 106
Large Binocular Telescope 31, 32
Large Hadron Collider at CERN 164, 238, 249–50, 252, 257, 259, 265–6, 377–8
Large Magellanic Cloud 173, 182, 221–2, 268, 271
LCROSS 76
leptons 244
Levin, Major AE 409
life:
  calling all life forms 300–4
  comets and signs of 308–9
  contamination of space with Earth matter 307–8
  elsewhere 291–9
  extra-solar planets and Dyson spheres 309–10
  likelihood of discovering in our Solar System 305–7
light pollution 40–2, 83
light, speed of 18, 155–6, 231, 250–1, 357, 359, 362, 376–83, 434, 436
Lintott, Chris 10
lithium 273, 274
Little Bear 15
Local Group of galaxies 161, 162, 163, 190, 216–17, 435
longitude 47, 105, 116–17
Lovell Telescope, Jodrell Bank 418
Lovell, Jim 313
Lovell, Sir Bernard 418
Low Earth Orbit 357
Low Frequency Array (LOFAR) 303–4
Lowell Observatory 37, 413, *415*
LSST 133
luminosity 153–5, 226–7, 230, 435
Lunar Module (LM) 355, 356
Lunar Reconnaissance Orbiter 82

magnetic fields 89, 101, 111–17, 132, 143–4, 163, 164, 191–2, 195, 215, 245, 247, 248, 337, 365–6, 382, 389, 437
magnitude 20–1, 37, 67, 185, 435
Makemake 86, 368, 369
manned space exploration 311–42
  appearance of space from orbit 317–18
  appearance of Sun from orbit 316
  astronaut who has flown furthest 312–13
  becoming an astronaut 318–19
  Britain's involvement in 328–30
  conditions for astronauts in space 318
  dangers of 324, 335, 351, 372, 417
  first girl on Mars 319
  future of 311–12, 325–30, 340–2
  Great Wall of China, visibility from space 314–15
  greatest achievement of 311–12
  International Space Station 21–2, *22*, 312, 315, 316, 320–3, *321*, 320–3, 325, 328,

335, 343, 434
living on other planets and 331–9
Mars, living on 334–7
Moon base 331–3
Moon landings 81, 312–13, 327, 331–2, 333, 355–6, 359, 360, 381
most interesting astronaut PM has met 313
outer Solar System 327
size of Earth, appearance of from orbit 316–17, *317*
Skylon 326–7
Space Shuttle 22, 312, 325, 326, 329, 348, 351
space tourism 326
terraforming planets 337, 338–9, 438
the story so far 311–13
to another star system 341
transporting human bodies 342
view from above 314–19
why don't we see stars in space images 314, 315
worlds apart 338–9
X-15 spaceplane 326–7
see also under individual mission name
Mars:
asteroids sharing orbit 68
atmosphere 113–14, 337
'canals' 413
colour of 37
Endeavour Crater 353
face on 407
impacts 115
life on 305, 306, 307
living on 334–7
magnetic field 143, 337
mass 114
missions to/establishing life on 312, 325, 333, 334–7, 338, 346, 348–9, 352–3
moons 57, 58, 87, 289
Olympus Mons 89, 113
orbit 109, 121
previous locations of 115
size and distance from Sun 85, 86
size and possible Earth-like nature of 114–15
Sun's death and 149
terraforming 337
Tharsis region 113
tilt 289
Victoria crater 353
volcanoes on 113
Mars Climate Orbiter 347
Mars Express 114
Mars Observer 344
Mars rover *Opportunity* 57, 348–9, 353
Mars rover *Spirit* 348–9, 353, 407

Massive Compact Halo Objects
(MACHOs) 256, 270, 271
Mather, John 423
M81/M82 galaxies 33, 413
Mercury:
as a remnant core of 'hot Jupiter' planet 110
atmosphere 89
core 143
devoid of life 307
magnetic field 143
moons 87
orbit 109, 264, 301
size and distance from Sun 85, 86
transit of 109
Messenger probe 110
Messier 13 31, 167
Messier 101 178
Messier objects, viewing 29
Messier, Charles 29, 422
meteors/meteorites 435
age of 142
amino acids, presence on 136, 170–1, 297, 308
as star of Bethlehem 405
Earth impacts 135–7, 139, 141–2
effect on orbit/rotation of planet/ satellite 63, 66
micro 350
Moon strikes 63, 66, 74, 75–6, 78, 417
observing 23
water on 135–7
Mice, The 191
microlensing 271
Milky Way 26, *160*
Andromeda Galaxy, collision course with 162, 189–92, 196, 207–8, 277
as the centre of the Universe 203–6
disc alignment with Solar System 159
distance from the origin of the Big Bang 206–7
elements in 275
end of 277
galaxies moving towards 162, 189–92, 196, 207–9, 277
galaxies receding from 203–6
Great Attractor 208–9
magnetic field 163
shedding of stars 192–3
Solar System interaction with particles emitted from centre of 163–4
speed moving through the Universe 207–9
spiral arms of 161–2, 187–9
star exploding in affecting Earth 181–2
where is the Solar System in? 159, 161–2
Mir 312, 352
Moon, The 53–83

appears unusually large 53–4
atmosphere 79
automated industry on 333
base on 311, 331–3
binary planet system with Earth 59–60
birth of 63, 66, 73–4, 289
blue 54–5
craters, creation of 76–8, 417
crust 79–80
dark side 55–6
day on 56
devoid of life 307
differentiated 73, 74
eclipses 48, 49, 57, 59, 69–72, 431
evolution of life on Earth and 289–90
formation and impacts 73–80
full 54–5, *58*
Heavy Bombardment and 74, 135
Hermite Crater 106
horns 77
interior of 79
landings 81–2, 312–13, 327, 331–2, 333, 355–6, 359, 360, 381, 417
libration areas 416
lowest temperature on 106–7
lunar swirls 81
magnetic field 81
Mare Imbrium 78, 79
meteor strikes 63, 66, 73–80, 135, 417
'Moon illusion' 53, 54
mysteries 81–3
New 55
observations 53–6
orbit 57–68, 71–2, 75, 92, 94, 202, 289–90
past position of 63–4
phases 26, 55, *65*
receding from Earth 62–3
seas 78, *79*
second moon impact on 80
Shackleton Crater 332
shape of 73–4
South Pole 332
Sun, appears same size/in same place as 57, 64
Synodic period 54
telescope on far side of 83
tidal friction 56, 60–2, *61*, 63–4, 92
tilt 91
transient lunar phenomena (TLP) 82, 332
two moons, effect on Earth of 57–8
viewing detail 17, 26, 31
Moore, Patrick:

advice on encouraging others interest in astronomy 425–6
Caldwell catalogue 422
cartoon-like pictures in study 420–1, *420*
cats 421
electronics and 424
event that caused most trouble during *SAN* 419
favourite episode of *SAN* 416
favourite telescope/observatory 413, *415*
first man to fly, first man in space, first man in space, meets 421
first thing seen through telescope 409
galaxies M81 and M82 and 413
globes in study *418*, 419
greatest achievement 422–3
greatest excitement during *SAN* 417
inspiration for taking up astronomy 409, *410*
message from outer space, wish for 424
missed *SAN* programmes 414
mistaken predictions or theories 417
most exciting observation 411
most memorable person met 418
most significant discovery in astronomy/cosmology during career 423–4
most significant event during *SAN* 416
1000th episode of *SAN* 425
SAN and 409–26
SAN episodes in BBC archive 413–14
what object would you miss the most if gone? 412
which aspect of astronomy gives the most personal satisfaction? 411
multiverse and extra dimensions 280–3
muons 266

naked-eye observing 15–24
Nanosail-D 362
NASA 237, 319, 325, 330, 336, 348, 362, 371, 372
nebulae 26, 29, 30, 33, 51, 52, 74, 136, 137, 150, 170, 171, 173–4, 194, 226, 275, 422, 435 *see also under individual nebula name*
Neptune:
formation of 147
mass 301, 367
moons 58, 75, 118, 119, 124, 127–8, *128*
orbit 193, 434
past locations of 94
rotation of 94
size and distance from Sun 86, 87, 193, 359, 367, 382
Uranus and 367
neutrinos 244, 246, 249, 266, 267–9, 377–8, 435
neutron stars 144, 163, 166, 177, 180, 181, 186, 270, 277, 278, 389, 436, 437
New Horizons 368–9
Newton, Sir Isaac 10, 28, 264, 346, 386, 387
NGC 3393 (galaxy) 400

1998 UP1 (asteroid) 67
Norma supercluster 163, 208
North Pole 15, 19
Northern Hemisphere 19, 103, 104
Northern Lights 50, 111, 428
nuclear fusion 88, 116, 149, 169, 172, 174–5, 178–9, 180, 185, 246, 247, 248, 249, 270, 272–3, 274, 362
observing 15–52
  amateur scientist 45–7
  astrophotography 36, 38, *39*
  beginners 15–17
  light pollution 40–2
  naked-eye 15–24
  past and future skies 48–52
  radio astronomy 43–4
  telescopes 25–37
Occam's Razor 309
Olbers, Heinrich 18
'Olbers' Paradox' 18
Omega Centauri 167, 168, 397
Oort cloud 91, 96, 126, 133, 436
OPERA 377–8
orbits and rotation:
  angular momentum 62–3, 201–2, 220–1, 427
  axial rotation 63
  Big Bang and 220–1, 393
  captured or synchronous rotation 56
  do any planets spin the wrong way? 92–4
  earthquakes, volcanoes, meteors, nuclear explosions, rocket launches and 66
  elliptical 90–1
  fixed orbits 94–5
  flatness of Solar System and 90–1
  galaxies, rotation of 188–9, 190, 201–2, 222, 256
  meteorites effect on 63, 66
  planets 90–6
  planets drifting away or towards the Sun 94–5
  retrograde rotation 92–4, 112
  Saros cycle and 49
  Universe, rotation of 222–3
  what caused planets to rotate? 92
  why does everything rotate? 201–2
  see also Universe *and under individual galaxy, planet or star name*
Orion 17, 19–20, 21, 159, 275, 313
Orion Nebula 33, 170, 171, 173–4
Orion Spur 159
Orion's Belt 51, 171
other worlds 285–90
outer Solar System 127–33

Pandora 122
Pan-STARRS 133, 140
Parallax 151–2
past and future skies 48–52
Pegasus 285
Penzias, Arno 235, 423
perihelion 103, 104, 436
Perlmutter, Saul 219, 373
Perseus 31
Phobos 57, 58, 72, 406–7, *407*
photons 179, 238, 239, 246, 247, 249, 250, 268, 380–1, 385, 396, 436
Piazzi, Guiseppe 130
Pickering, Edward 97
Pioneer Venus Orbiter *93*
pions 249
Planck satellite 107, 237, 242, 252–3, 424
Planet X 133, 406
planisphere 25, 41
plasma 165, 199, 245, 252, 265, 436
Pleiades (Seven Sisters) 31, 167
Plough (Ursa Major) 15, *16*, 51, 174
Pluto 59, 126, 149, 219–20
  binary system 59
  declassification of/dwarf planet 87, 129–31, 431
  discovery of 67
  distance from Earth 219–20, 359
  low temperatures on 106
  mankind on 149
  missions to 368–9
  moons 59
  orbit 91, 128
  size and distance from Sun 86, 87
  tilt 91
Polaris 15, *16*, 19
Pole Star 23
positrons 179, 246, 247
Prime Meridian 105
Procyon, in Canis Minor 157
'Project Orion' 360
Prometheus 122
Proxima Centauri 151, 157, 359
PSR 1913 + 16 (binary pulsar) 389
Ptolemy 53, 54, 421
Pulsar 389, 437
pure energy 249

quantum physics 225–6, 265, 281–2
quark stars 180–1
quark-gluon plasma 265–6

quarks 244, 245, 246, 249, 265–6
quasars 9, 200, 437

radiation:
  Cherenkov 267
  CMB *see* Cosmic Microwave Background
  galaxies emit 196, 197, 198
  infrared 434
  pressure 381
  solar *see* Sun
  space travel and 319, 324, 334, 335, 337, 365–6, 425
  supernova and 182, 191
radio astronomy 43–4, 83, 235, 255, 374, 418
radioactive dating 142
red dwarf 133, 157, 172, 175–6, 186, 298
red giant 52, 63, 92, 148, 149, 178, 191, 277, 296, 437
redshift 154, 207, 208, 209–12, 218, 223, 229, 230, 396, 437
Rees, Martin 10, 216
Reiss, Adam 219
relativity, theories of 209, 222, 234, 265, 270, 362, 376–84, 389, 399, 437
Rhea 124
Rigel in Orion 52, 157
ring world 309
rocky planets 89, 110, 146–8, 150, 171, 288, 292
Rømer, Ole 376
R136a1 (star) 172–3
rotation *see* orbits and rotation
Rubin, Vera 256

Sagan, Carl 37–8, 131
Sagittarius 159
Sagittarius Dwarf Elliptical Galaxy 167
Saros cycle 49
satellites 437
  collision of 351–2
  destroying 351–2
  first 372
  GPS 384
  Iridium 23
  Low Earth Orbit 357
  number of 343–5
  observing 21–2, 23–4, 323
  planetary *see under planet name*
  re-entering the Earth's atmosphere 23–4
  unmanned 328–30
  see also under individual satellite name
Saturn 120–6
  as star of Bethlehem 404
  changing nature of 51

clouds on 45
colour of 37
effect on Sun orbit 90
gravity 123–4
hexagonal feature near North Pole 123
human habitation on 150
life on 305, 305, 308
moons 58, 118, 119, 122–3, 124, *125*, 128
orbit of 95
rings of 26, 31, 120–2, *120*, 123–4, *125*, 126, 367, 412
size and distance from Sun 86, 87
sketching *36*
slingshots around 359
Saturn V rocket 355–9, *356*, *358*, 360
Schmidt, Brian 219
Schmidt-Cassegrain telescope 28
Schwarzschild radius 398–9
Scorpius 159
SDSS 175
Sedna 131, 368, 369
Sellers, Piers 314, 318, 320
Selsey Observatory 409, 411
SETI research 303–4Shapley
Concentration 217
Shapley, Harlow 217
shepherd moons 122
Sheppard, Scott 119
sidereal period/day 105, 431, 436
Sigma Orionis 171
Sirius in the Great Dog 20, 21, 132
sizes and distances of planets from Sun 85–7, *86*
61 Cygni (star) 152
sketching 36–7, *36*
skies, past and future 48–52
Sky at Night, The
50th anniversary 10
55th anniversary 10
55th programme 414
700th programme 10, 11, 97
first programme 9, 11, 138, 414, 416
PM and 409–26 *see also* Moore, Patrick
world's longest running programme with the same presenter 9
Skylab 352, 357
Skylon 326–7
Sloan Digital Sky Survey 197, *199*, 200
Small Magellanic Cloud 221–2, 271
SMART-1 76
Smoot, George 423
software, astronomical 41
Solar Dynamics Observatory *100*

solar sail 361–2, 381
Solar System, the 85–150
alignment with disc of Milky Way 159
asteroids and comets 134–42 *see also* asteroids; comets
Earth, Planet 103–9 *see also* Earth
finding life in 305
flatness of 90–1
from beginning to end 145–50
interaction with particles emitted from centre of galaxy 163–4
Jupiter 116–19 *see also* Jupiter
knowing our place 157–64
location of in Milky Way 159
magnetic fields 143–4 *see also* magnetic fields
Mercury, Venus and Mars 110–15 *see also* Mercury; Venus; Mars
orbits and rotation 90–6
outer Solar System 127–33
planet as large as Sun 88
Saturn 120–6 *see also* Saturn
sizes and distances of planets from Sun 85–7, *86*
small-sized planets 87–8
speed of 162–3
spherical shape of planets 88–9
Sun 97–102 *see also* Sun
why are the planets so different from each other? 89
South Downs Astronomical Society 17
South Downs Planetarium 17
South Pole: observing sky at 19
Southern Cross 20
Southern Hemisphere 19, 104, 159
Southern sky 47
Soyuz 325
space missions 343–72
arriving on time and landing with accuracy 347–9
basic principles of space navigation 345–7
benefits for mankind 371–2
biggest surprise discovery 371
Deep Impact 370
Europa 365–6
furthest distance man has travelled in space 370
future source of energy for 359–63
how many spacecraft do we still retain contact with? 343–5
New Horizons 368–9
rockets and propulsion systems 355–63
sending signals to Mars rover 352–4
Solar System exploration 364–72
space junk 349–52
space navigation 343–54
Uranus 366–8
Venus 364–5, *365*
see also under individual mission name

Space Shuttle 22, 312, 325, 326, 329, 348, 351
Spaceguard project 140
SpaceX 325
spectroscopy 46, 97, 428, 438
SPIRE 329
Spitzer Space Telescope 160
Sputnik 1 372
standard candle 153–4, 226–8
star map, elementary 15
stars 151–86
  binary 165–6, 178, 428
  birth, life and death 169–77
  black holes and 163, 176–7, 179, 186, 187
  brightness of 20–1
  brown dwarfs as *see* brown dwarfs
  changing position of 155–6
  classification of 98
  clusters 17, 26, 31, 165–8, 166–8
  colour of 17, 154, 158
  distances 151–6
  double 17
  elements, creation of and 274
  globular clusters 166–7, 429
  hypervelocity 192
  knowing our place 157–64
  life span 176
  luminosity 153–5, 226–7, 230, 435
  main sequence 154–5
  measuring distance to 151–4
  'monster' 173
  multiple-star systems 157, 165–6
  neutron 163, 166, 177, 180, 181, 186
  quark 180–1
  red dwarf 175–6, 186
  size of 172–3, 176
  Sun's sibling 173–4
  supernovae 178–86 *see also* supernova
  tidal tails 192–3
  triggered star formation 173
  triple-star system 157
  X-ray binary 166
  see also under individual star and group of stars name
Steady State Universe 235
Stellarium 41
STEREO spacecraft 1–6
Story of the Solar System (Chambers) 409, *410*
strong nuclear force 245, 247
Sun 97–102
  age of 145, 296
  ancient observation of 49, 50

becomes a red giant 63, 92, 149, 277, 296
birth of 89
brightness of 18, 21
corona 70, 99–101, *100*, 144, 430
death of 63, 92, 148, 149, 150, 277, 296
diameter 193
distance to Earth 382
eclipse 48, 69, 70–2, *71*, 412, 419, 431
effects of other planets on 90, 95, 96
equinoxes 49
four million tonnes lighter every second 98, 149
heliopause 132, 164
helioseismology 101
heliosheath 132
heliosphere 132, 164
interior 101
magnetic field 99
observing the movement of in Northern and Southern hemispheres 19
orbit of 90–1, 95, 96
solar flares 101, 106, 372
solar observatories 372
solar prominences 70, 72, 98–9, *100*
solar tides 62, 104
solar wind 111, 113–14, 132, 144, 149, 150, 164, 195, 337, 437
solstices 49, 437
sound 101–2
star, as just another 97–8
time passing near 384
vibration of 101
weather 195–6
'wobble' effect 95, 158
super Earth 301
supernova 178–86, 196, 437
Betelgeuse and 182, 183–4
creation of heavy elements in 182, 274
emits radiation at all wavelengths 182
Kepler's 182
neutron stars and 180, 181
1987a 182, 184–5
pair-instability 179
quark stars and 180–1
several new stars formed from the dust produced by one 186
stars explode into 52, 170, 176, 177
super-supernova 185
Type 1a 154, 178, 218–19, 223, 226, 227, 230
Type 1b 179
Type 2 178, 179
types of 178–9
visible to the naked eye 181
Surface of Last Scattering 252

Swigert, John 313

'T Tauri' phase 89
Tarter, Jill 174
Taurus 89, 167
Taurus 348
Taylor, Joseph 389
telescopes 25–37
  adaptive optics 38
  asteroid 2709, viewing 37
  best for beginners 25–9, *27*
  binoculars and 30–1, *32*
  black and white and colour images 37
  Blinking Nebula 30
  extra-solar planets and 285–6
  filters 40
  focal length 33
  infrared 119
  lens/eyepieces 31, 33, 35
  Messier objects and 29
  motor drive 35, 38
  Newtonian 28
  on far side of Moon 83
  radio 43–4, 83
  reflectors and refractors 25–9, *27*
  sketching and 36–7, *36*
temperature, lowest known 106–7
Temple 1 (comet) 370
theoretical nature of our knowledge of Universe 373–5
tholins 131
Tinetti, Dr Giovanni 302
Titan 58, 62, 87, 114, 123–4, 127–8, 306, 308, 340, 349, 366, 367
Tombaugh, Clyde 67–8, 128
tourism, space 326
transient lunar phenomena (TLP) 82, 332
Triangulum galaxy 161, 211, 217
Triton 75, 127, 128, *129*
2MASS 175

UFOs 9, 341, 403
unexplained phenomena 401–7
Universe:
  age of 232, 234–8
  Big Bang and rotation of material in 220–2
  CMB and *see* Cosmic Microwave Background
  comparing to inflating balloon *216*, 243
  debris of Big Bang 206–7
  density of 236
  distance of Milky Way from origin of Big Bang 206–7

early *see* Big Bang
Earth as centre of 203–6
edge of 232
end of 277–9
existence of observed objects 219–20
expansion of *see* expansion of the Universe
flatness problem 236–7, 241–2
Great Attractor 216–18
infinite nature of 242
inflation 237, 238, 245, 250–3
spinning 222–3
mass of 233–4, 238–9
shape of 239–42, *240*
size 234–8
standard candle proved as inaccurate, effect upon understanding of 226–8
unchanging 18
what lies outside? 242
Uranus:
core 147
missions to 366–8
moons 58, 118, 119, 124
past locations of 94
rotation of 91, 94
size and distance from Sun 86, 87
tilt 91, 94, 195
Urey, HC 74

Venera 7 364
Venera 13 364, *365*
Venus:
ancient observation of 48
as star of Bethlehem 403, 404, 405
atmosphere 92–4, *93*, 111–12, 114
brightness of 20–1
causes tides on Earth 104
impacts 115
magnetic field 143
mass 114
missions to 364–5
past position of 115
phases 26
PM's mistaken statements concerning 417
rotation/tilt of 91, 192–4, 109, 112
size and distance from Sun 85, 86
transit of, 2004 411, *412*
Venus Express satellite 112
Viking 407
Virgo Cluster 161, 163, 208, 216, 217
Virgo Supercluster 161–2

volatile compounds 120–1
volcanoes 66, 69, 89, 112, 113, *129*
Voyager 1 106, 117, 118, 131–3, 305, 317, 344, 345, 346, 348, 353–4, 359, 368, 369, 382
Voyager 2 127–8, *129*, 131–3, 305, 344, 345, 346, 348, 367, 368, 369

Waldron, Duncan 67
weak nuclear force 246, 246, 247, 238
Weakly Impacting Massive Particles (WIMPs) 256
weather:
  galaxies and Universe 195–6
  Moon and Earth's 55
  'space' 372
  Sun and Earth's 107–8
Wesley, Anthony 45, 46
Whirlpool Galaxy 29, 189
white dwarf 150, 166, 175, 178, 185, 191, 227, 270, 277, 278, 296, 438, 439
Wilkinson Microwave Anisotropy Probe (WMAP) 237
Wilson, Robert 235, 423
WISE mission 119, 133, 175
wobble effect 95, 158, 286, 287, 299, 309, 434
Wright, Orville 421

X-15 spaceplane 326–7
X-rays 166, 187, 198, 217, 300, 324, 400

Yurievich, Kaleri 312

zodiacal Light 41–2, 439
Zwicky, Fritz 255, 256, 374

Acknowledgements

Any book of this kind is surprisingly challenging, for careless mistakes can easily creep in. In this book, so far as we can tell, they haven't, and this is due to the care taken by the editorial and design team that put it together. The book originates from the 700th episode of *The Sky at Night*, which was a great success thanks to the efforts of the whole team. Special thanks to Jane Segar (nee Fletcher) for her hard work on the programme, as well as the book itself. Without her, we rather doubt whether this book would ever have seen the light of day.

For the programme itself Sir Patrick is regularly joined on screen by Dr Chris Lintott, Paul Abel, Pete Lawrence and Dr Chris North. But the key to the programme is the guests that come to tell us about their work, both their professional research and amateur astronomy activities. For the 700th programme we were lucky to be joined by Dr Lewis Dartnell, Prof. Alan Fitzsimmons, Dr Lucie Green, Dr Brian May, Astronomer Royal Lord Rees and Prof. David Whitehouse, not forgetting our question master Jon Culshaw.

The Sky at Night has a very small team and even smaller budget, which 'beams' in the people it needs to make it happen. Behind the scenes, it relies on the hard work of Executive Producer Bill Lyons and the production team from BBC Birmingham: Linda Flavell, Tracey Bagley, Leena Marwaha, Gemma Wooton, Stella Stylianos, Natalie Breeden, Keaton Stone and Tom Prentice. Not forgetting, of course, the camera, lighting and sound crew – Rob Hawthorn, Rob Lacey, Martin Huntley and Andy Davis – who every month transform Patrick's study into a studio. Then there are the incredibly skilled editors, in particular Matthew Jinks, Stephen Killick, Martin Dowell, and Simon Prentice, all of whom have pieced together the programmes over recent months and edited out our fluffs and mistakes!

For this book we are grateful to the readers who so kindly agreed to help check its factual accuracy, particularly Paul Abel, Alan Fitzsimmons, Edward Gomez, Will Grainger, Pete Lawrence, Chris Lintott, Stuart Lowe, Derry North and Gabi North.

Special thanks to all those who have provided splendid photographs and illustrations, which they have so kindly allowed us to use. Without them, it is certain that neither *The Sky at Night* nor this book would be the success that we hope they are.

This ebook is copyright material and must not be copied, reproduced, transferred, distributed, leased, licensed or publicly performed or used in any way except as specifically permitted in writing by the publishers, as allowed under the terms and conditions under which it was purchased or as strictly permitted by applicable copyright law. Any unauthorised distribution or use of this text may be a direct infringement of the author's and publisher's rights and those responsible may be liable in law accordingly.

Version 1.0

Epub ISBN 9781446416761

www.randomhouse.co.uk

This book is published to accompany the BBC series entitled
The Sky at Night, first broadcast in 1957.

Series Producer: Jane Fletcher
Executive Producer: Bill Lyons

1 3 5 7 9 10 8 6 4 2

First published in 2012 by BBC Books, an imprint of Ebury Publishing.
A Random House Group Company

Copyright © Sir Patrick Moore and Dr Chris North 2012

The right of Sir Patrick Moore and Dr Chris North to be identified as the authors of this work has been asserted in accordance with Sections 77 and 78 of the Copyright, Designs and Patents Act 1988.

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording or otherwise, without the prior permission of the copyright owner.

The Random House Group Limited Reg. No. 954009
Addresses for companies within the Random House Group can be found at
www.randomhouse.co.uk

A CIP catalogue record for this book is available from the British Library.

ISBN 978 1 849 90346 2

Commissioning editor: Albert DePetrillo
Project editor: Nicholas Payne
Copy-editor: Steve Tribe
Designer: O'Leary & Cooper
Illustrations: Richard Palmer Graphics
Proofreader: Kari Speers
Indexer: Ben Murphy

Production: Phil Spencer

To buy books by your favourite authors and register for offers, visit
www.randomhouse.co.uk